This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

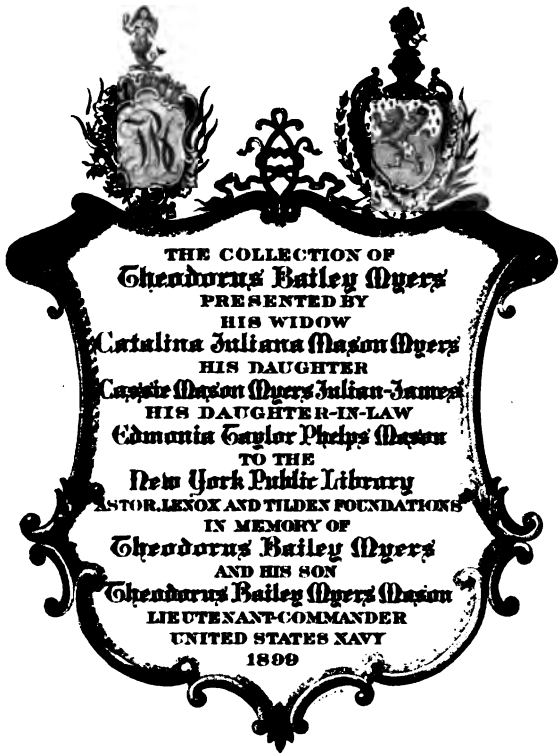
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

253

Robert Snow.


THE COLLECTION OF
Theodorus Bailey Myers
PRESENTED BY
HIS WIDOW
Catalina Juliana Mason Myers
HIS DAUGHTER
Cassie Mason Myers Julian-James
HIS DAUGHTER-IN-LAW
Edmonia Taylor Phelps Mason
TO THE
New York Public Library
ASTOR, LENOX AND TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
IN MEMORY OF
Theodorus Bailey Myers
AND HIS SON
Theodorus Bailey Myers Mason
LIEUTENANT-COMMANDER
UNITED STATES NAVY
1899

AN ABRIDGEMENT OF THE HISTORY of *ENGLAND*.

BEING A

SUMMARY of Mr. RAPIN's Hiſtory

AND

Mr. TINDAL's Continuation,

From the Landing of *JULIUS CÆSAR*, to the Death of King *GEORGE* I.

WITH

The CHARACTERS of the Kings at large, the State of the Public Revenues, Exchequer, and Coins, at and after the CONQUEST;

AND ALSO

LISTS of the Peers created in each Reign, Knights of the Garter and Bath, Baronets, Biſhops, Chancellors, Chief-Juſtices, Judges, and Admirals, to the Preſent Times.

ILLUSTRATED

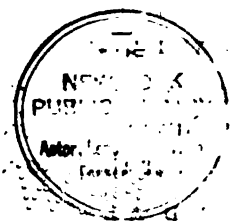
With the HEADS and MONUMENTS of the KINGS, QUEENS, &c.

On Seventy COPPER PLATES.

VOL. II.

LONDON:

Printed for JOHN and PAUL KNAPTON, at the *Crown* in *Ludgate-Street*. MDCCXLVII.



28864

NEW YORK
PUBLIC
LIBRARY

K. EDWARD IV.
G. Vertue Sculp

A SUMMARY OF THE History of *ENGLAND*, FROM THE Invaſion of *JULIUS CÆSAR*, to the Death of King *GEORGE* I.

BOOK XIII.

The Reigns of the three Kings of the Houſe of York, EDWARD IV, EDWARD V, *and* RICHARD III. *Containing the ſpace of 24 years and a half.*

16. EDWARD IV.

KING *Edward* IV. begins his Reign, being about 18 years of age. *Ann. C.* 1461.

Queen *Margaret* having raiſed, in the North, an army of 60,000 men, King *Edward* puts himſelf at the head of his army, and marches from *London* in queſt of the Queen, with a reſolution to fight her. *Mar.* 4. *Reg.* 1. *Mar.* 12.

He detaches Sir *John Ratcliffe* to ſecure the paſs of *Ferribridge* upon the *Are*, but Sir *John* is beat from thence by the Lord *Clifford*, and ſlain.

Richard Nevil, Earl of *Warwick*, is alarmed at this accident, but the King ſhowing great ſteadineſs and reſoluti-

Ann. C. on, detaches *William Nevil* Lord *Fauconbridge* to recover that paſſage, which he accordingly does; the Lord *Clifford*, and others, being ſlain. Whereupon King *Edward* paſſes his army over the *Are*, and immediately marches in queſt of the enemy.

Mar. 29. The two armies meet between *Saxton* and *Towton*, *Henry*'s conſiſting of 60,000 men, and King *Edward*'s of 48,660; and, there coming to an engagement, King *Henry*'s is defeated, with the loſs on both ſides of 36,776 perſons: And, among the reſt, *Henry Percy* Earl of *Northumberland*, *John Nevil* Earl of *Weſtmoreland*, &c.

Thomas Courtney, Earl of *Devonſhire*, being taken, is beheaded.

King *Edward* having cauſed his Father's head, and the Earl of *Salisbury*'s, to be taken down from the walls of *York*, and put others in their room, returns to *London*, *June* 8.

He endeavours to raiſe commotions in *Scotland*, in order to prevent King *Henry*'s getting any aſſiſtance from thence: And, on the other hand, propoſes to conclude a truce with that Kingdom; but Queen *Margaret* breaks his meaſures,

Apr. 25. by ſurrendering *Berwick* to the *Scots*, and concluding a marriage between Prince *Edward* her ſon, and *Margaret*, ſiſter of King *James*.

June 29. King *Edward* is crowned at *Weſtminſter*.

July 22. *Charles* VII, King of *France*, dies, and is ſucceeded by *Lewis* XI.

Queen *Margaret*, leaving the late King her huſband, and the Prince her ſon, in *Scotland*, goes to *France*, to deſire ſuccours.

Nov. 4. A Parliament meets at *Weſtminſter*, in which the late King *Henry* VI, Queen *Margaret*, and their chief Adherents, to the number of 140, are attainted.

John de Vere, Earl of *Oxford*, and *Aubrey* his ſon are beheaded.

1462. King *Edward* makes a treaty with the Earl of *Roſs*, in

Reg. 2. order to raiſe diſturbances in *Scotland*.

William Nevil Lord *Fauconbridge*, is made High-Admiral of *England*.

Henry Beaufort, Duke of *Somerſet*, and *Ralph Percy*, come and ſubmit to King *Edward*, and are pardoned.

King *Edward* grants the Clergy this remarkable privilege, That for the future all Eccleſiaſtical perſons, indicted for any crime, ſhould be tried in the Eccleſiaſtical Courts, without the interpoſition of the King's Judges; and alſo, that

that they ſhould not be liable to the penalties of the ſtatutes of Proviſors and Præmunire. *Ann. C.*

The truce of commerce between *England* and the Duke of *Burgundy*'s Dominions, is prolonged for one year. *Decemb.*

Queen *Margaret* having obtained of King *Lewis* an aid of five hundred men, comes to *Scotland*, and from thence attempts to land near *Newcaſtle*; but ſhe is forced to retire with precipitation, and a tempeſt ariſing, ſhe narrowly eſcapes to *Berwick*: Her fleet and army being driven on the coaſt near *Bamburgh* Caſtle, they burn their ſhips, and eſcape to *Lindisfarn* Iſland; where being aſſaulted by the Baſtard *Ogle*, many are ſlain, and about 400 taken priſoners. 1463. *Reg.* 3.

Soon after, Queen *Margaret*, with her huſband King *Henry*, enters *England*, with a body of *Scots*, and having taken and garriſoned *Bamburgh* Caſtle, advances into the Biſhopric of *Durham*, where ſhe is joined by the Duke of *Somerſet*, Sir *Ralph Percy*, &c.

King *Edward* hearing of this invaſion, prepares both by ſea and land to oppoſe his enemies, and then comes to *York*. *April.*

He diſpatches the Lord *Montacute* into *Northumberland* to raiſe the Militia; and, after his coming to *York*, ſends a great part of his army to the ſaid Lord; who meeting, on *Hegeley-more*, a detachment commanded by the Lords *Hungerford* and *Roos*, and Sir *Ralph Percy*, put them to rout, and *Percy* is ſlain. *May.* *May* 15.

Incouraged with this ſucceſs, *Montacute* advances to *Lyvel*'s plain in *Hexhamſhire*, where *Henry*'s army lay intrenched, and attacking them in their lines, obtains a compleat victory: *Henry Beaufort* Duke of *Somerſet*, the Lords *Roos*, *Hungerford*, and *Molyns* are taken priſoners; but *Henry*, *Margaret*, and Prince *Edward* eſcape into *Scotland*.

The Duke of *Somerſet* is beheaded at *Hexham*; the other Lords and Knights are executed at *Durham*; and 25 others at *York*.

King *Edward*, who was advanced as far as *Durham*, returns back to *York*; having ſent *Richard* Earl of *Warwick*, and the Lord *Montacute*, to recover *Alnwick*, *Dunſtanburgh*, and *Bamburgh*, which they do with eaſe.

Information being given to King *Edward*, that preparations were making in *France*, to ſupport the intereſts of *Henry* and *Margaret*, he ſends for the Earl of *Warwick*, and leaves the Marquiſs of *Montacute* in the North, as Governor of the northern marches.

A Parliament meets at *Weſtminſter*, which grants the *April* 29.

Ann. C. King 37,000 *l.* to be levied in the Counties, Cities, and Towns. This Parliament is prorogued to *November* 4.

King *Edward* makes truces with *France*, with the Duke of *Burgundy*, and with *Scotland*.

Henry not being allowed to remain in *Scotland* after the truce, and fancying he could be concealed in *England*, comes to *Lancaſhire*; but he is apprehended at *Waddington-Hall*, by Sir *James Harrington*, and being brought to *London*, is committed to the *Tower*.

Queen *Margaret* retires to *France*, with the Prince her ſon: And *Edmund* Duke of *Somerſet*, and the Duke of *Exeter* withdraw into the *Low-Countries*, where they lived in a moſt wretched and poor condition.

1464. *Reg.* 4. King *Edward* iſſues out a proclamation, offering a pardon to all the *Lancaſtrians*, that would come and ſubmit to him: And of ſuch as refuſed to ſubmit he confiſcates the eſtates, beſtowing them upon thoſe that had ſerved him. He alſo makes himſelf very popular.

The Earl of *Warwick* is ſent Ambaſſador to *France*, to demand in marriage for King *Edward*, *Bona* of *Savoy*, ſiſter to the Queen of *France*; and the marriage is accordingly concluded.

But King *Edward* renders all theſe Negotiations ineffectual, by falling in love with *Elizabeth*, daughter of Sir *Richard Widville*, Baron *Rivers*, and widow of Sir *John Grey* of *Groby*, whom he marries privately at *Graſton*.

May 1. *June* 3. *Oct.* 27. *Nov.* 1. King *Edward* concludes a ſea-truce with *France*, from *May* 20, till *October* 1; one with *Scotland* for 15 years; and one with the Duke of *Bretagne* for one year.

1465. Honours and favours are heaped upon the *Widville* family, at which the reſt of the Nobility are highly diſguſted. The Earl of *Warwick*, in particular, returns to *England*, with a heart full of hatred and revenge, but however conceals his ſentiments, till a proper opportunity.

Jan. 26. *Reg.* 5. The Parliament, after ſeveral prorogations, meets again at *Weſtminſter*; and grants the King, for life, tunnage and poundage; of every *Engliſh* Merchant, for every ſack of wool, 1 *l.* 13 *s.* 4 *d*; of every 240 wool-fells, the ſame; and of every laſt of hides, 3 *l.* 6 *s.* 8 *d.* And of Merchant-Strangers, for every ſack of wool, and every 240 wool-fells, 3 *l.* 6 *s.* 8 *d*; and of every laſt of hides, 3 *l.* 13 *s.* 4 *d.*

The league of the Public Good is formed in *France* againſt *Lewis* XI.

The truce between *England* and *Scotland* is prolonged till *October* 31, 1519.

Queen *Elizabeth* is crowned at *Weſtminſter*. *Ann. C.*

The Duke of *Bretagne* and Earl of *Charolois* endeavour to conclude an Alliance with King *Edward*. *May* 26.

Elizabeth, the King's eldeſt daughter, is born. 1466.

King *Edward* keeps fair with the King of *France*, and the Dukes of *Berry* and *Bretagne*; and concludes a ſhort truce with *Bretagne*, and another with *France*: As alſo an Alliance with the King of *Denmark*. *Feb.* 11. *Reg.* 6. *Apr.* 30. *June* 7.

A marriage is ſet on foot between the Earl of *Charolois* and *Margaret* King *Edward*'s ſiſter; and a treaty of perſonal Alliance and Friendſhip is ſigned between the ſaid Earl and King *Edward*: *Oct.* 23.

Who alſo makes an Alliance with the King of *Caſtile*.

King *Edward* being courted by the King of *France*, and the Duke of *Burgundy*, has ſeveral Negotiations with thoſe two Princes. 1467. *Feb.* &c. *Reg.* 7.

A Parliament meets at *Weſtminſter*, wherein the King reſumes all the grants he had made during his Reign. *June* 3.

Philip the Good, Duke of *Burgundy*, dies, and is ſucceeded by his ſon *Charles* Earl of *Charolois*, who ratifies his Alliance with King *Edward*. *July* 15.

The Queen's relations are loaded with honours and preferments, whilſt the Earl of *Warwick* and his Friends are neglected. *Richard*, Earl *Rivers*, the Queen's father, being made Lord-Treaſurer, and High-Conſtable, the Earl of *Warwick* withdraws from Court, full of reſentment; and going to *France* ſecures King *Lewis*'s protection, and concerts meaſures with him.

The Parliament meeting again, according to its adjournment, at *Weſtminſter*, grants the King two tenths, and two fifteenths. 1468. *Reg.* 8. *May* 12.

After ſeveral Negotiations, the marriage between the Princeſs *Margaret* and the Duke of *Burgundy* is concluded, and ſhe is conducted to *Bruges*, where the marriage was ſoon after ſolemnized. *June*. *July* 9.

The truce of commerce between *England* and the Duke of *Burgundy*'s Dominions is prolonged for 30 years.

King *Edward* concludes a treaty with the Duke of *Bretagne* (who was hard preſſed by the King of *France*) whereby he engages to ſend him an aid of 3000 archers. And they depart, not long after, under the command of *Anthony Widville*, Lord *Scales*. *Auguſt*. *October*.

Lewis XI, having concluded a treaty with the Duke of *Burgundy*, goes and confers with him; but the Duke diſcovering his inſincerity, makes him priſoner; and *Lewis* is

Ann. C. forced to ſubmit to hard terms, in order to regain his liberty.

Oct. 20. King *Edward* renews the ancient Alliance between *England* and *Arragon*; and gives a licence for tranſporting ſome *Coteſwold* ſheep to *Spain*, which proves prejudicial to the *Engliſh* wool-trade.

1469. *Richard Nevil*, Earl of *Warwick*, having formed the
Rg. 9. deſign of endeavouring to dethrone King *Edward*, draws into his plot his brothers, *John*, Marquiſs of *Montacute*, and *George*, Archbiſhop of *York*; as alſo *George*, Duke of *Clarence*, the King's brother, to whom he gives his eldeſt daughter, *Iſabella*, in marriage.

The Earl and Duke go to *Calais*, where the marriage is ſolemnized.

Aug. 17. King *Edward*, ignorant of the Earl of *Warwick*'s deſigns, makes him Juſticiary and Chamberlain of *South-Wales*, &c.

By the ſecret practices of the Marquiſs of *Montacute* and Archbiſhop of *York*, an inſurrection happens in *Yorkſhire*; but it is ſuppreſſed by the Marquiſs of *Montacute*, who cauſes their leader, *Robert Huldern*, to be beheaded.

The Malecontents, not diſcouraged at this, take up arms again, under the command of *Henry*, ſon of the Lord *Fitz-Hugh*, Sir *Henry Nevil*, the Lord *Latimer*'s ſon, and Sir *John Coniers*, and not being able to make themſelves maſters of *York*, march towards *London*.

King *Edward*, upon the receipt of this news, orders *William Herbert*, Earl of *Pembroke*, to raiſe an army in *Wales*; who having drawn together about 7000 men, and being joined by the Lord *Strafford* with 800 archers, they go in queſt of the enemy.

The Lord *Stafford* and Sir *Richard Herbert* go with a detachment of 2000 horſe to view the enemy, and falling upon their rear, are defeated.

After this ſmall advantage, the ſeditious, afraid of the King's increaſing forces, reſolve to retire to *Warwick*, and to wait for aſſiſtance from the Earl, who was lately come over from *Calais*, and was raiſing forces; but being met by the
July 26. Earl of *Pembroke*, near *Banbury*, both armies come to an engagement, wherein the Earl of *Pembroke* is defeated; and being taken priſoner, is beheaded with his brothers, in revenge for the death of Sir *Henry Nevil*, who was ſlain the day before.

Some ſeditious in *Northamptonſhire* aſſemble in great numbers, and chuſing one *Robert Hilliard*, or *Robin* of *Riddiſdale*, for their leader, go and ſeize *Richard*, Earl of *Rivers*,

Rivers, and his ſon, Sir *John Widville*, at *Grafton*, and be- *Ann. C.*
head them, without any form of law.

The Lord *Stafford* having deſerted the Earl of *Pembroke* the night before the battle of *Banbury*, on account of a quarrel between them about a ſtrumpet, the King orders him to be beheaded. *Aug.* 17.

Lewis XI. ſends Ambaſſadors to *England*, under pretence of renewing the truce. 1470. *Reg.* 10.

John Tiptoft, Earl of *Worceſter*, is made High-Conſtable of *England*, in the Earl of *Rivers*'s room; and, ſoon after, Lieutenant of *Ireland*. *Mar.* 14.

The Earl of *Warwick* and Duke of *Clarence* declare for the Rebels, and levy troops; the King, on his part, raiſes alſo forces, and advances againſt his enemies, who ſtood ready for battle, at *Wolney* in *Warwickſhire*. *March.*

In the mean time, an accommodation being ſet on foot, the King, who was extremely deſirous of it, and did not doubt of the ſucceſs, neglects to ſecure his camp; of which the Earl of *Warwick* being informed, he attacks the King, unawares, in the night, and taking him priſoner, cauſes him to be conducted to *Warwick*, and then to *Middleham* Caſtle, where he is put under the cuſtody of *George Nevil*, Archbiſhop of *York*. After which the Malecontents diſband moſt of their forces.

The King having obtained leave from the Archbiſhop to hunt now and then in *Middleham-Park* with a ſmall guard, finds means to eſcape; and repairing to *York*, where he ſtays but two days, he takes a compaſs through *Lancaſhire*, and ſo comes to *London*.

The Earl of *Warwick* re-aſſembles his diſperſed troops, and the King does the ſame.

Through the perſuaſions of ſome peaceable Lords, a Conference is held at *Weſtminſter*, between the King and the Chiefs of the oppoſite party; but nothing being done, the King retires to *Canterbury*, and the Malecontents to *Warwick*.

Sir *Robert Wells* having levied troops in *Lincolnſhire* for the Earl of *Warwick*, the King ſends for his father, *Richard*, Lord *Wells*, to Court, and commands him, upon pain of death, to order his ſon to diſmiſs his troops; but the ſon refuſing, the King orders the Lord *Wells* (with Sir *Thomas Dimock*) to be beheaded.

Incenſed at this, Sir *Robert Wells* waits, near *Stamford*, for the King's coming, when he might have eaſily retired; and the two armies coming there to an engagement, the *May.*

Ann. C. King obtains a compleat victory, 10,000 of the enemies being ſlain. *Wells* is taken, and beheaded. This was called the *Battle of Loſe-Coat-Field.*

This defeat breaking all the meaſures of the Duke of *Clarence*, and Earl of *Warwick*, they embark at *Dartmouth*, and attempt to land at *Calais*; but being repulſed by the Lieutenant-Governor, they go and land at *Dieppe*, and thence repair to *Lewis* XI, at *Amboiſe*, who promiſes them aſſiſtance.

Queen *Margaret* comes to them there, and, being reconciled to them, concerts proper meaſures with them.

The Duke of *Burgundy* warns King *Edward* of what was contriving againſt him, but he remains unconcerned.

King *Edward* gains his brother, the Duke of *Clarence*, by means of one of his Ducheſs's women; and he promiſes to declare for him, when he could do it with ſafety.

Sept. 13. The Earl of *Warwick* returns to *England*, landing at *Dartmouth*, with money and troops, furniſhed him by *Lewis* XI; whilſt King *Edward* remains in an ill-grounded ſecurity.

But the Earl of *Warwick*'s army ſoon increaſing to 60,000 men, and he cauſing *Henry* VI. to be proclaimed, King *Edward* raiſes forces, and advances towards *Nottingham*; but hearing, by the way, that the Marquiſs of *Montacute* who commanded in the North, had declared againſt him, he comes and incamps near *Lynn*, in *Norfolk*.

The enemies approaching, and the name of King *Henry*
Oct. 3. being reſounded every where, and even in King *Edward*'s army, he embarks, with about 500 men, on board three ſmall veſſels: In his paſſage, he is purſued by ſome Eaſterling Pirates, but he eſcapes into *Alcmar* Road, and is delivered by the Lord *Gruthuyſe*, Governor of *Holland*.

October. The Queen, in the mean time, takes ſanctuary in *Weſtminſter-Abbey*, with ſeveral others, and is there delivered of
Nov. 4. Prince *Edward*.

October. The Duke of *Clarence* and Earl of *Warwick* enter *London*
— 12. in triumph; and going to the *Tower*, releaſe King *Henry*, who had been priſoner 6 years.

Mean while, the populace of *Kent* flock to *London* in great numbers, with deſign to plunder that City, but they are diſperſed by the Earl of *Warwick*.

— 25. King *Henry* VI. rides in proceſſion from the *Tower* to *St. Paul*'s, and reſumes the Royal Dignity: Being thus reſtored to the Throne by *Richard Nevil*, Earl of *Warwick*, who was thence ſirnamed *The King-Maker*.

HEN-

THE Marquiſs of *Montacute* is reſtored to his Government of the northern Counties, which King *Edward* had taken from him, and given to his brother, *Richard*, Duke of *York*. *Ann. C.*

A Parliament meets at *Weſtminſter*, which adjudges King *Edward* to be a Traitor, and an Uſurper of the Realm; confiſcates all his paternal eſtates; revokes the Statutes made in his Reign; and ſettles the Crown upon King *Henry* VI. and his heirs male, and in default of ſuch heirs, upon *George* Duke of *Clarence*, and his heirs male. *Nov.* 26.

King *Edward*'s Adherents are alſo declared Traitors and Rebels; and it is enacted, That ſuch as ſhould be apprehended, or were in captivity upon his account, ſhould be extremely puniſhed.

Accordingly *John Tiptoft* Earl of *Worceſter*, Governor of *Ireland*, and High-Conſtable of *England*, being found hid in a hollow-tree, is brought to *London*, and beheaded.

Jaſper Tudor, Earl of *Pembroke*, and *John de Vere*, Earl of *Oxford*, who were attainted under King *Edward*, are reſtored to their honours and rights.

The Duke of *Clarence* and Earl of *Warwick* are appointed Governors of the Realm.

In the mean time, the Duke of *Burgundy* was in great perplexity about King *Edward*'s coming into his Dominions; being afraid, if he protected him, of exaſperating the Earl of *Warwick*, and engaging him to join *Lewis* XI. who had declared war againſt the ſaid Duke. However, reſolving at laſt to aſſiſt him privately, he hires for him 14 ſhips of the *Eaſterlings*, and furniſhes him with 50,000 florins.

Jaſper Earl of *Pembroke* brings his nephew *Henry* (afterwards King *Henry* VII.) to Court, out of *Wales*, where he was privately educated.

News being received in *England*, of King *Edward*'s preparations in the *Low-Countries*, the Earl of *Warwick* is made High-Admiral, and the Duke of *Clarence* commiſſioned to raiſe an army. 1471. *Jan.* 2.

A ten years truce is concluded between *England* and *France*. *Feb.* 16.

George Duke of *Clarence* is conſtituted Governor of *Ireland*; and ſeveral grants are made to him, as alſo to the Marquiſs of *Montacute*, and the Earl of *Pembroke*.

King *Edward* having got all things ready, embarks at *Flushing*, with 2000 men, and attempts to land at *Cromer* in *Reg.* 11. *Mar.* 11.

Ann. C. — 12. — 14. in *Norfolk*; but thoſe parts being too well guarded by the Earl of *Oxford*, he ſails northwards, and lands, two days after, at *Ravenſpur*, and places adjoining, in *Yorkſhire*.

Not being received with ſuch acclamations as he expected, he pretends, That he came only to recover the Duchy of *York*, which was his inheritance.

Whereupon ſeveral repairing to him, he marches towards *York*, giving *Henry* the title of King, and ſtiling himſelf only Duke.

The Court having notice of *Edward*'s being landed, the Duke of *Clarence* and Earl of *Warwick* depart from *London* to levy forces. At the ſame time, the Magiſtrates of that City are ordered to ſhut their gates upon the enemy; and the Marquiſs of *Montacute*, who was at *Pontefract* with 4000 men, receives orders to fight *Edward*, or to ſtop him; but he remains in his poſt, without making any motion.

Mar. 18. King *Edward*, upon his approach to *York*, is deſired by the Magiſtrates to march another way; but he anſwering, That he was not come to take the Crown from the King, but to recover his paternal Eſtate, his Adherents, and the People in that City, oblige the Magiſtrates to admit him; whereupon, Deputies being ſent to him, he ſwears, To be faithful and obedient to King *Henry*: And, borrowing money of the Citizens, and leaving a garriſon, he ſets out for *London*.

The Duke of *Clarence*, and Earl of *Warwick*, go and aſſemble their forces, intending to join them into one body, and to ſet at their head *Edward*, ſon of *Henry* VI, who was expected from *France*.

But being diſappointed in their meaſures, by the Marquiſs of *Montacute*'s ſuffering King *Edward* to paſs without oppoſition, the Earl of *Warwick* orders them to come and join him, and reſolves to incamp near *Coventry*, and there expect *Edward*.

The Marquiſs begins his march, and the Duke of *Clarence* likewiſe advances, keeping within diſtance, as if he intended to join *Warwick*.

Mar. 29. King *Edward* coming before *Coventry*, in which the Earl of *Warwick* was ſhut up, with about 7000 men, endeavours to provoke him to come out and fight, but the Earl keeps himſelf ſhut up.

The King therefore advances to *Warwick*, where the Duke of *Clarence* comes, and was reconciled with him. He endeavours

endeavours to make peace between King *Edward* and the Earl of *Warwick*, but the Earl rejects his mediation. *Ann. C.*

King *Edward* marches towards *London*, and is received with great acclamations by the Citizens, notwithſtanding all the endeavours of the Duke of *Somerſet*, and the Archbiſhop of *York*. *Apr.* 6. — 11.

King *Henry* being delivered to *Edward*, by the Archbiſhop of *York*, who had made his peace with him, is again impriſoned in the *Tower*, from whence he had been taken ſeven months before, to remount the Throne.

Continuation of the Reign of EDWARD IV.

KING *Edward* departs from *London*, to put himſelf at the head of his army, hearing the Earl of *Warwick* was advanced to *St. Albans*. *Apr.* 13.

The two armies meeting at *Barnet*, a terrible battle is fought there, wherein the Earl of *Warwick* and the Marquiſs of *Montacute* are defeated and ſlain, with the loſs of about 10,000 men on both ſides. *Apr.* 14.

Such was the end of the famous *Richard Nevil* Earl of *Warwick*, and of his brother *John* Marquiſs of *Montacute*. They were both buried in *Biſham* Abbey.

John Earl of *Oxford*, and *Edmund* Duke of *Somerſet* eſcape into *Wales*, to the Earl of *Pembroke*, who was levying troops for the Earl of *Warwick*. And *Henry* Duke of *Exeter*, being left for dead among the ſlain, is carried to *London*, and takes ſanctuary in *Weſtminſter-Abbey*.

King *Edward*, having thus obtained a compleat victory, returns to *London* the ſame day: And, not long after, grants a pardon to the Archbiſhop of *York*.

In the mean while, Queen *Margaret*, and the Prince her ſon, embarking on *March* 24, land at *Weymouth*, *April* 14, and receiving, two days after, the ſorrowful news of the defeat and death of the Earl of *Warwick*, the Queen ſwoons, and She and the Prince her ſon take ſanctuary in *Beaulieu* Abbey.

The Duke of *Somerſet*, the Earls of *Pembroke*, and *Devonſhire*, &c. repair to her there, and exhort her to try her fortune once more: She propoſes the ſending her ſon into *France*, in order to put him out of danger, but the Duke of *Somerſet* prevails upon her not to do it; and her friends ſpeedily raiſe an army, out of the Counties of *Somerſet*, *Dorſet*, *Wilts*, *Devon*, and *Cornwal*.

King

Ann. C. King *Edward* ſets out from *London*, in order to put him-
Apr. 19. ſelf at the head of his army, and go in queſt of the enemy's forces: He comes up with them about the beginning of *May*.

Apr. 27. In his march, he puts out a Proclamation, wherein he declared Queen *Margaret*, and her Adherents, Traitors and Rebels.

He uſes the utmoſt expedition, in order to come up with the enemies, and give them battle, before they were joined by the Earl of *Pembroke*, and the *Welſhmen*.

The Queen, hearing of his approach, removes from *Bath* to *Briſtol*, intending to paſs the *Severn* at *Glouceſter*, and ſo retire into *Wales*; but finding it unſafe to venture through *Glouceſter*, ſhe goes to *Tewksbury*, and would fain have paſſed the *Severn* there, and fled into *Wales*, but the Duke of *Somerſet* ſtrenuouſly oppoſes it, and intrenches himſelf in a Park near that Town.

King *Edward* reſolves to force thoſe entrenchments, be-
May 4. fore the Earl of *Pembroke*'s arrival; and accordingly attacking them, he draws the enemy out of their lines, by a ſham retreat, and totally defeats them, with the loſs of 3000 men: Among which, was *Thomas Courtney*, Earl of *Devonſhire*.

Such was the iſſue of the battle of *Tewksbury*, being the twelfth that was fought between the Houſes of *Lancaſter* and *York*.

Queen *Margaret* is taken, and conducted to the *Tower*, where ſhe remained a priſoner till 1475, when ſhe was ranſomed by her Father.

Prince *Edward* is alſo taken, and brought to the King, by whom being asked, How he durſt ſo preſumptuouſly enter his Realm? And replying, That he was come to recover his Father's Kingdom, to him lineally devolved: The King ſtrikes him on the face with his gauntlet, and he is murdered in cold blood. His body was buried at the *Black-Friers* in *Tewksbury*.

May 6. *Edmund Beaufort* Duke of *Somerſet*, and others that were made priſoners, are beheaded in the market-place at *Tewkſbury*.

Some people raiſe an inſurrection in the North, but it is ſoon appeaſed.

Thomas Nevil, baſtard ſon of *Thomas* Lord *Fauconbridge*,
May 12. who had been appointed by the Earl of *Warwick* Vice-Ad-
— 14. miral, lands in *Kent*; and being joined by ſeveral *Kentiſh* and *Eſſex* men, to the number of 17,000, marches towards *London*,

London, with a design to plunder that City, though pretending, that he came only to deliver King *Henry* VI. out of captivity. He makes himself master of *Southwark*, and attacks *London*; but being repulsed by the Citizens, he retires, and fortifies himself at *Sandwich*; where being followed by King *Edward*, he submits, is pardoned, knighted, and made again Vice-Admiral: But soon after he is beheaded. 1439. — 21.

King *Edward* arrives at *London*, and grants a pardon to *William* of *Wainfleet*, Bishop of *Winchester*, founder of *Magdalen* College, *Oxon*: And also, to the Bishops of *London*, *Lichfield* and *Coventry*, *Hereford*, *St. Asaph*, *Landaff*, and *Bath* and *Wells*.

King *Henry* VI. is murdered in the *Tower* (by *Richard* Duke of *York*, as was reported) and buried in *Chertsey* Monastery, in *Surrey*; but afterwards removed into the Collegiate Church of *Windsor*.—He founded, in 1440, *Eaton*-College, and *King*'s College in *Cambridge*. *May* 28.

Jasper Tudor, Earl of *Pembroke*, hearing of the *Lancastrians* defeat at *Tewksbury*, dismisses the troops he had raised, and keeps in *Wales* with his nephew *Henry* Earl of *Richmond*. — King *Edward* sends one *Roger Vaughan* to seize or kill them; but the Earl of *Pembroke*, discovering his intentions, cuts his head off, and then imbarks at *Tenby*, with his nephew, for *France*: But being unhappily driven by a storm on the coast of *Bretagne*, they are detained by the Duke.

Prince *Edward* is created Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Lancaster*, and Earl of *Cornwal*; and the King, assembling the Lords Spiritual and Temporal at *Westminster*, causes them to take the oath to the said Prince. *July* 1. — 3.

A truce is concluded between *England* and *France*, from *September* 1, to *May* 1 following. *Sept.* 5.

A Congress is held at *Alnwick* between the Commissioners of *England* and *Scotland*. *Sept.* 24.

The 30 years truce with *Bretagne* is confirmed. *Sept.* 30.

A Parliament meets at *Westminster*, wherein the Lords Spiritual and Temporal grant the King a tenth, towards the maintenance of 14,000 archers, that were appointed to serve the King at their own charge. *Octob.* 6.

Anne, the King's sister, is divorced from her husband, *Henry Holland*, Duke of *Exeter*. *Nov.* 12.

The Parliament meeting again, according to its prorogation, the Commons grant the King one tenth and one fifteenth. 1472. *Feb.* 8.

George

Ann. C. *George Nevil*, Archbiſhop of *York*, is apprehended by the King's order, and ſent priſoner to the Caſtle of *Guiſnes*.

His effects, that were then ſeized, amounted to the value of 20,000 *l.*

Reg. 12. *John de Vere*, Earl of *Oxford*, who had eſcaped after the battle of *Barnet*, and ſoon after ſeized *St. Michael*'s Mount in *Cornwal*, ſurrenders to the King; but all his eſtate is confiſcated, and he is ſent priſoner to the Caſtle of *Hammes*, where he remained 12 years.

King *Edward* perſecutes the *Lancaſtrians*.

He ſends Ambaſſadors to the Duke of *Bretagne*, to demand the Earls of *Pembroke* and *Richmond*, but the Duke refuſes to deliver them up: However, he promiſes to guard them carefully, and upon that conſideration *Edward* allows him yearly a large penſion.

1473. Some differences that ſubſiſted between King *Edward* and
Reg. 13. the *Hanſe* Towns, are decided at the Congreſs of *Utrecht*.
Sept. 19. By a treaty concluded at *Alnwick*, the truce with *Scotland*
Sept. 28. is confirmed.

The Alliance between *England* and *Denmark* is renewed.

1474. The Duke of *Burgundy* engages King *Edward* to join in a league with him againſt *France*; and accordingly they ſign ſeveral treaties for that purpoſe, in *July* this year.

Jan. 23. The Parliament meeting again, after ſeveral prorogations, at *Weſtminſter*, grants the King a tenth and a fifteenth, and 51,170 *l.* 4 *s.* 7 *d.* ½. for the payment of the 14,000 archers, mentioned before.— It grants afterwards, moreover, one tenth and one fifteenth, and three parts of either of them.

Reg. 14. King *Edward* iſſues out Commiſſions to levy troops, and ſends Ambaſſadors to the Emperor *Frederic*, to the Kings of *Hungary*, *Sicily*, &c. to engage them to enter into the league, or to endeavour to hinder their union with *France*.

July 30. And to ſecure himſelf againſt any diverſions from the *Scots*, he concludes a marriage between his daughter *Cecily*, and *James*, the King of *Scotland*'s eldeſt ſon.

Henry Holland, Duke of *Exeter*, is found drowned on the coaſt of *Kent*.

1475. King *Edward* raiſes money for his expedition into *France*,
Reg. 15. by way of benevolence.

He ſends 3000 men to the Duke of *Bretagne*.

June. Having got all things in a readineſs, he embarks at *Sandwich*, with a large army, and comes to *Calais*.

Before his departure from *England*, he ſends *Garter* to King *Lewis*, to ſummon him to reſtore the whole Kingdom

of *France*; and, in caſe of refuſal, to proclaim war againſt him. *Lewis* receives the Herald kindly, and makes him a preſent, telling him, That his Maſter was come to make war, only by the inſtigation of the Duke of *Burgundy*, and the Conſtable *de St. Pol*. *Ann. C.*

King *Edward* advances into *Picardy*, expecting to meet the Duke of *Burgundy*, which not doing, he ſends the Lord *Scales* to him, to know the reaſon.

The Duke leaves the ſiege of *Nuz*, and comes with a ſmall train, to make his excuſes to *Edward*.

The Conſtable *de St. Pol*, who commanded in *St. Quentin*, and had promiſed to deliver up that place to the *Engliſh*, does not ſtand to his engagement; and the Duke of *Burgundy* leaving King *Edward*, he finds himſelf greatly embarraſſed.

In that juncture, *Lewis* offering *Edward* a peace, he ac- *Auguſt.*
cepts of it, and ſends his Ambaſſadors to treat with thoſe of *France*, near *Amiens*, or *Pequigny*.

There, a treaty of peace is concluded between *England* *Aug.* 28,
and *France*; whereby *Lewis* engages himſelf to pay King 29.
Edward 50,000 crowns, yearly, as long as he lived.

The Duke of *Burgundy* endeavours to prevent the concluſion of this treaty; but finding the truce ſigned, he bitterly reproaches King *Edward*, and they part in extreme anger.

The Kings of *England* and *France* have an interview upon *Aug.* 29.
Pequigny bridge.

King *Lewis* gives penſions to the chief Courtiers and Favourites of King *Edward*, to the amount of 16,000 crowns.

King *Edward* returns to *London*, where he is received *Sept.* 28.
with great joy.

The Duke of *Burgundy* refuſes to be included in the truce made by King *Edward*, but at laſt, accepts of a ſeparate truce for nine years, offered him by the King of *France*. And, the Conſtable *de St. Pol* being delivered to King *Lewis*, he cauſes him to be beheaded.

King *Edward* renews the truce with *Bretagne*, and orders 1476.
his Ambaſſadors to demand of the Duke of *Bretagne Henry*, *Jan.* 22.
Earl of *Richmond*; the Duke accordingly gives him up, *Mar.* 16.
but, repenting of it, upon the repreſentation of one of his *Reg.* 16.
Counſellors, he finds means to get him again out of the hands of the Ambaſſadors.

The Duke of *Burgundy* conquers *Lorrain*, and attacks the *Swiſs*, but is defeated by them at *Granſon*, and at *Morat*.

Soon after, his army is entirely routed, in a battle fought 1477.
with the Duke of *Lorrain*, before *Nanci*, and himſelf ſlain, *Jan.* 5.

in

Ann. C. in the 46th year of his age. His death cauſes a great alteration in the affairs of *Europe*.

King *Lewis* deprives *Maria*, the late Duke of *Burgundy*'s
Reg. 17. daughter, of *Burgundy*, and the towns upon the *Somme*, and even forms the project of diſpoſſeſſing her of the reſt of her Dominions. She applies to King *Edward* for aſſiſtance, but his Council being bribed by *France*, he refuſes to grant her
July. any. Soon after, ſhe marries Prince *Maximilian* of *Auſtria*.

1478. *Richard*, Duke of *York*, the King's ſecond ſon, marries
Jan. 15. *Ann*, daughter and ſole heir of *John Mowbray*, Duke of *Norfolk*, and is created Duke of *York* and *Norfolk*, Earl-Marſhal, *Warren*, and *Nottingham*.

Jan. 16. A Parliament meets at *Weſtminſter*, wherein *George*, Duke of *Clarence*, the King's brother, is attainted of treaſon:
Feb. 18. And he is, ſoon after, drowned in a butt of malmſey.

Reg. 18. Prince *Maximilian* having entered *Burgundy*, and taken ſeveral places, *Lewis*, in order to attach King *Edward* to his intereſt, ſends Ambaſſadors to prolong the truce for 100 years after their deaths, and to pay a penſion of 50,000 crowns, during the continuance of the truce. But *Edward* preſſing the marriage of his daughter *Elizabeth* with the Dauphin, King *Lewis* puts him off, and offers to divide with him the Ducheſs of *Burgundy*'s Dominions, allowing him for his ſhare *Flanders* and *Brabant*. *Edward* is ſo weak as to embrace this propoſal.

1479. He abandons himſelf to his pleaſures, and raiſes money by illegal means, particularly by forfeitures upon penal laws, and by having the rich accuſed of treaſon, in order to confiſcate their eſtates, or exact large ſums for their pardon.

Feb. 13. The Alliance between *England* and *Denmark* is confirmed and renewed, the *Engliſh* engaging not to ſet foot in *Iceland*,
— 15. without a paſſport from the King of *Denmark*.

A treaty of friendſhip is ſigned between *England* and
Reg. 19. *France*, but *Lewis* never ratifies it.

Prince *Maximilian* propoſes a marriage between his ſon *Philip*, and *Ann*, King *Edward*'s third daughter, in order to gain him to his intereſts.

A marriage is alſo ſet on foot, between *Catharine*, King *Edward*'s fourth daughter, and *John*, Infante of *Caſtile* and *Arragon*.

King *Lewis* delaying the concluſion of the Dauphin's marriage with the Princeſs *Elizabeth*, *Edward* ſends Ambaſſadors to him, to demand the performance of his promiſe,

miſe, and the ratification of the late treaty; but *Lewis* *Ann. C.*
amuſes him.

And, moreover, he ſolicits *James* III, King of *Scotland*, to break the truce with *England*, which opens *Edward*'s eyes, and convinces him of the King of *France*'s inſincerity.

King *Edward*, fully bent upon revenge, ſecures the 1480.
King of *Caſtile* to his ſide, ratifies the treaty with the King *Reg.* 20.
of *Denmark*, and, equipping a fleet, ſends it to Prince *Maximilian*'s aſſiſtance, with 6000 men.

Mean time, the King of *Scotland* continuing his prepa- 1481.
rations for war, King *Edward* prepares for his defence, *Reg.* 21.
and appoints *Richard*, Duke of *York*, General of his army.

The *Scots* make an irruption into the borders, and carry *June.*
away ſome booty; but King *Edward* was more intent upon the war with *France*, than upon that with *Scotland*.

He renews his Alliance with the Duke of *Bretagne*, and concludes the marriage of his ſon, the Prince of *Wales*, with *Ann*, eldeſt daughter of that Duke; or, in caſe ſhe died, with her youngeſt ſiſter, *Iſabella*.

A Parliament meets at *Weſtminſter*, wherein the Com- 1482.
mons, with the aſſent of the Biſhops and Lords, grant the *Jan.* 20.
King a tenth and a fifteenth, to be levied on the Laity; and alſo a yearly ſubſidy, to be levied of all Strangers. They moreover allow a yearly rent out of the cuſtoms, and other revenues, to defray the King's houſhold expences, amounting to 11,000 *l.*

King *Edward* renews his Alliance with *Portugal.* *Reg.* 22.

Alexander, Duke of *Albany*, the King of *Scotland*'s brother, eſcapes out of priſon, wherein he had been thrown by his brother, and coming by ſea to *England*, concludes a treaty with King *Edward*, in order to dethrone King *June* 10.
James III.

In purſuance of this treaty, King *Edward* ſends a fleet *May.*
againſt *Scotland*, commanded by *Robert Ratcliffe*; and an *July.*
army of 22,500 men, which takes *Berwick* and *Edinburgh*; King *James* retires to the Caſtle of *Edinburgh*, *Auguſt.*
wherein he keeps himſelf ſhut up.

A peace is concluded between the two Nations, by the *Aug.* 4.
Duke of *Albany*'s mediation, who is appointed Regent of *Scotland*.

The Duke of *Albany* relinquiſhes the project of placing himſelf on the Throne, and reſtores the King his brother to his former eſtate.

But King *James* reſuming his former courſe of life, and his enmity to the Duke of *Albany*, reſolves to diſpatch him

Ann. C. out of the way; whereupon the Duke withdrawing to the Caſtle of *Dunbar*, ſends ſome perſons into *England*, to re-
1483. new his treaty with King *Edward*; which is accordingly
Feb. 11. confirmed, with additional articles. And the Duke of *Albany*, having delivered *Dunbar* to the *Engliſh*, retires into *France*.

Maria, Ducheſs of *Burgundy*, being killed by a fall from her horſe, in 1481, leaves, among other children, a daughter, called *Margaret*, which King *Lewis* XI. obtains in marriage for his ſon, the Dauphin, with the Earldoms of *Artois*, *Burgundy*, *Maconnois*, *Auxerre*, and *Charolois*; notwithſtanding, the Dauphin was contracted to *Elizabeth*, eldeſt daughter of King *Edward*.

Reg. 23. Incenſed at this outrageous affront, *Edward* bends all his thoughts to war and revenge, though he was without any conſiderable Ally, not being able to depend upon the aſſiſtance of the *Flemings*, *Bretons*, or *Scots*.

However, he aſſembles all the Nobility that were in or near *London*; and repreſenting to them the grievous affronts put upon him by the King of *France*, they promiſe to ſerve him with their lives and fortunes.

Apr. 9. But in the midſt of the great preparations for this war, King *Edward* dies of a fever, in the 42d year of his age, after a Reign of 22 years, one month, and five days:

And was buried at *Windſor*, in the New Chapel which he built.

The Character *of* EDWARD IV.

When *Edward* aſcended the Throne, he was one of the handſomeſt men in *England*, and perhaps in *Europe*. This is acknowledged by all. His noble mien, his free and eaſy air, his affable carriage, prepoſſeſſed every one in his favour. Theſe qualities, joined to an undaunted courage, gained him among the people, an eſteem and affection, extremely ſerviceable to him, in many circumſtances of his life. *Philip de Commines* affirms, he owed his reſtoration, to the inclination, the principal *London* Ladies had for him. But that would have been inconſiderable, had he not likewiſe acquired the affection of their huſbands, and, in general, of moſt part of the *Engliſh*. If he had not depended upon the hearts of the people, he would never have ventured to attempt the recovery of the Throne, with the help of two thouſand men, who were moſtly foreigners. For ſome time, he was exceeding liberal, but at laſt became

came covetous, not ſo much from his natural temper, as from a neceſſity to ſupply the immoderate expences, into which he was thrown by his pleaſures. Though he had a great extent of wit, and a ſolid judgment, he committed, however, ſeveral very great errors: The firſt was, when he ſuffered himſelf to be ſurprized by the Earl of *Warwick*. But that fault was in great meaſure repaired, by the dexterity and readineſs wherewith he freed himſelf from the Archbiſhop of *York*. The ſecond was, to truſt ſuch perſons as betrayed him, and were ſold to *France*. The third, to ſuffer himſelf to be ſo long deceived by *Lewis* XI, who was univerſally exclaimed againſt for his ill faith. Moſt Hiſtorians have extremely aggravated this error, as being ignorant, that from the year 1480, he began to take meaſures to make war upon *Lewis*, as appears in what has been quoted from the *Collection of the Public Acts*. Two other errors are alſo aſcribed to him, which may be more eaſily excuſed. The firſt is, his breaking off the war with *France* for an inconſiderable ſum, at a time when he might have flattered himſelf with the hopes of ſucceſs. But if the circumſtances of this affair be well examined, it will be eaſily ſeen, that being forſaken by the Dukes of *Burgundy* and *Bretagne*, his Allies, it would have been very raſh to purſue with his own forces alone, the execution of ſo great an enterprize, which, probably, would have proved unſucceſsful. Another error laid to his charge, is, his not joining with the Heireſs of *Burgundy*, to ſtop the progreſs of the King of *France*. I own (ſays *Rapin*) that was a real fault: However, it may be conſiderably leſſened, by the examples of ſeveral Princes, eminent for their abilities, who obſerved the ſame conduct, on the like occaſions. Uncertain of the events, Princes often imagine they ſhall be great gainers by ſetting their neighbours at variance, in hopes of their weakening one another. But the ſucceſs ſometimes happens not to anſwer their expectations. It is certain, if *Maria* of *Burgundy*, and afterwards the Archduke, her huſband, had more vigorouſly reſiſted the attacks of *Lewis* XI, nothing was more capable to render *Edward* the Umpire of *Europe*, than the mutual weakening of theſe two powers. By this conduct it was that he made himſelf courted by the King of *France*, and the Duke of *Burgundy*, becauſe he was always in condition to make the balance incline to one ſide. He hoped, perhaps, it would be always the ſame; but he had to deal with a more artful Prince than himſelf.

These are properly political faults, which are often considered as such, only because of the events which are not in man's power. But the crimes *Edward* is more justly charged with, are his cruelty, perjury, and incontinence. The first appears in the great number of Princes and Lords, whom, after taking them prisoners, he put to death on the scaffold. If ever there was room to exercise mercy in case of Rebellion, it was at that fatal time when it was almost impossible to stand neuter, and so difficult to chuse the justest side between the two Houses, that were contending for the Crown. And yet, we don't find, *Edward* had ever any regard to that consideration. The death of the Prince of *Wales*, son of *Henry* VI, murdered almost in his presence; and that of *Henry* himself, notwithstanding his innocence, may perhaps be justified in some measure, by those who think nothing unlawful when a Throne is in question; but they will never be excused by those who have any tincture of Religion. As for the death of the Duke of *Clarence*, I don't know whether it would be possible to find the least softening, if it be true, as it is very probable, that he was innocent.

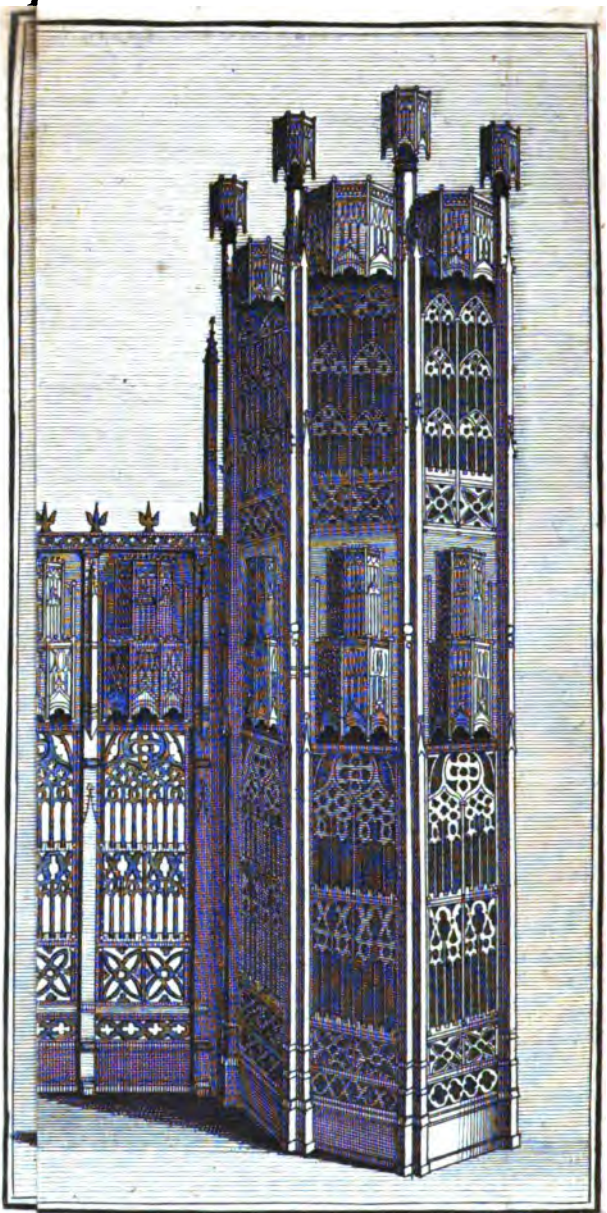
Edward's breach of faith was visible, in the unjust punishment of the Lord *Wells* and his brother-in-law, after drawing them out of sanctuary by a safe-conduct; in that of the bastard of *Fauconbridge*, whose crime he had pardoned: And lastly, in his oath at *York*, taken even with intention to break it. All these actions are of the number of those, that can be excused only by reasons of State; weak excuse in things where Honour and Religion are concerned.

Moor. As for *Edward*'s incontinency, his whole life may be said to be one continued scene of lust. He had many concubines, but especially three, of whom he said, *One was the merriest, the other the wittiest, and the third the holiest in the world, for she was always in a Church, but when he sent for her.* He had, however, but two natural children, both by *Elizabeth Lucy* (to whom he is said to to have been contracted before his marriage) *Arthur*, surnamed *Plantagenet*, created Viscount *L'Isle*, by *Henry* VIII, and *Elizabeth*, wife of Sir *Thomas Lumley*. I shall say nothing of *Edward*'s Religion, since Historians mention it only in relating his death-bed discourses.

Hall. Stow.

Hall. Stow. Hollingsh.

What is most surprising in the life of this Prince, is his good fortune, which seemed to be almost miraculous. He was raised to the Throne after the loss of two battles, the first by the Duke his father, the other by the Earl of *Warwick*,



J. Mynde sc.

The CHAPEL of WINDSOR.

wick, then devoted to the House of *York*. The head of the father was still upon the walls of *York*, when the son was proclaimed at *London*. *Edward* escaped, as it were by miracle, out of his confinement at *Middleham*. He was restored to the Throne, or at least received into *London* at his return from *Holland*, before he had vanquished, and whilst his fortune yet depended upon the decision of a battle, which the Earl of *Warwick* was ready to give. In a word, he was ever victorious in all the battles where he was present.

By his Queen *Elizabeth Widville*, King *Edward* had the following children: I. 1. *Edward*, born *November* 4, 1470, who succeeded him. 2. *Richard*, Duke of *York* and *Norfolk*, and Earl *Warren*. 3. *George*, Duke of *Bedford*, who died young.

II. 4. *Elizabeth*, born *February* 11, 1466, who married King *Henry* VII. 5. *Cecily*, wife, first of *John* Lord *Wells*, and then of one ——— *Kyme*. 6. *Ann*, wife of *Thomas Howard* Duke of *Norfolk*, and Earl-Marshal. 7. *Bridget*, born *November* 10, 1480, was a Nun at *Dartford*. 8. *Mary*, who died in 1482. 9. *Margaret*, born *April* 19, 1472, died young. 10. *Catharine*, married *William Courtney*, Earl of *Devonshire*.

A Description of the Monument *of* EDWARD IV.

His monument is in the new chapel of Windsor, founded by himself. It is composed of steel polished and gilt, representing a pair of gates between two towers of curious workmanship after the Gothic manner. This tomb is fronted with touchstone, and stands in the north arch near the high altar. His epitaph is in monkish Latin verses; as it is not inscribed on the tomb, and has nothing in it besides some low-strained encomiums, which argue the barbarous taste of the age in which it was wrote, we shall leave as we find, without a translation. It was registered in a book in the college of arms, and is as follows:

Carmina que letus cecini, cano tristia mestus,
Heu pater, heu pastor, heu Rex, heu bellicus armis,
Heu ductus Salomon, Jonathas, Arthurus in hoste,
Heu vere legis custos, heu gloria plebis,
Edwardus quartus Anglis Rex, & decus orbis,
Tollitur a nobis Rosa mundi solq; triumphi,
Aesolom in vultu, Salomon tristi quasi cultu,

Templi fundator, caſtri novus & recreator,
Aſt nobis natis qui ſit jam queſo beatus.
Gallus obedit ejus vultu, luctuſq; ſubegit,
Protector Chriſti fidei, victus nece triſti;
Cella petens aſtri, jacuit jam colmina caſtri.
Sol latet obſcurus, gravibus dolet Anglia curis
Caſtra choris plena ſtallentum ſunt peramena,
Olim jam flentum, vir verba referre volentum:
Luce migrat celis nona Rex noſter Aprilis,
Edwardi, Chriſti martis, precibuſq; Georgii,
M. ſemel. C. quater octo decies tribus annis;
Triſtis ſed Regni vicenus trinus annus;
Natus quo menſe necat hunc moris illius enſe.
Anglia plange parens Regis, ſic Neuſtria nutrix,
Rex tuus ex jure moritur cur Gallia conſtet;
Regem nunc Reges plangant, geniti genitores,
Princeps Durq; comes genitrix Regina proles,
Spiritus exorent Reges petat alta Polorum,
Omnes Angligene quia Rex & tutor eorum.

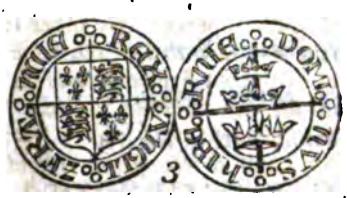
An Account of the MONEY *coined in this Reign.*

By an Indenture of the 4th of *Edward* IV, a pound-weight of gold, of the old ſtandard, was to make by tale twenty pounds, ſixteen ſhillings, and eight-pence; and a pound-weight of ſilver, old ſterling, was to make thirty-ſeven ſhillings and ſix-pence. By other Indentures of the 5th, 8th, 11th, 16, and 22d of the ſame King, a pound-weight of gold of the old ſtandard, was to make forty-five Nobles, going for ten ſhillings a-piece, or ninety Half-Nobles, or one hundred and eighty Quarter-Nobles, or ſixty-ſeven and a half of the pieces impreſſed with Angels, going for ſix ſhillings and eight-pence each, and conſequently was coined into twenty-two pounds, ten ſhillings, by tale; and the ſilver moneys were ſhorn at thirty-ſeven ſhillings and ſix-pence the pound-weight, Troy. Theſe Indentures were made between the King and the Lord *Haſtings*, his Chamberlain, Maſter, Worker, and Warden, of all his Exchanges and Outchanges in *England* and *Calais*. King *Edward* the Fourth's monies are diſtinguiſhed from thoſe of *Edward* III, by the form of the letters, particularly ∩ which is not made like an H, as in thoſe of *Edward* III; as alſo by the weight, his Groats being above twenty grains lighter: moreover, the title of *Ireland* is wanting on his Coins. The outer circle on the Groats is wanting, leaving

ing the letters extended to the very edge, and generally worn part away; in other reſpects, like his Predeceſſors; and of ſeveral mints, as *London*, *York*, *Canterbury*, *Briſtol*; ſome of them, beſides the name of the place of mintage on the reverſe, have the initial letters E. C. B. on the King's breaſt. (*Fig.* 1.) The *Iriſh* Groats have the King's head within a roſe, and generally make no mention at all of *England*, with the place of coinage on the reverſe, as *Dublin*, *Drogheda*, *Waterford*; the power of coining money

1

2


3

being taken from other places. Theſe fall ſhort of the *Engliſh* Groats near ten grains; the firſt difference betwixt the ſtandards of the *Engliſh* and *Iriſh* money beginning in this Reign. Of this *Iriſh* money there is one piece having on the reverſe, CIVITAS. DVBLINIE. with a large Star, that fills the whole Area: This is reckoned a great curioſity. (*Fig.* 2.) There is another in *Speed*, having on one ſide the arms of *France* and *England*, quartered, inſcribed, REX. ANGLI. Z. FRANCIE. Reverſe, three Crowns, denoting the three Kingdoms, DOMINVS. HIBERNIE. (*Fig.* 3.) The *Ryal* is like *Henry* the Fifth's

Roſe-Noble, only here is added a flag at the ſtern of the ſhip, wherein is the letter E. EDWARD. DI. GRA. REX. ANG. Z. FRANC. DNS. IB. Reverſe, IHS. AVT. TRANSIENS. PER MEDIVM. ILLORV. IBAT. Inſtead of a Croſs there is a Roſe in the Center, with Rays, like a Sun, extending to the Lions and Fleurs-de-lis, interchangeably. The Angel is exactly like that of *Henry* VI.

The NOBILITY, created within this period, was as follows:

Ann. C.

1461. *Richard Plantagenet*, Earl of *Carliſle*; and Duke of *Glouceſter*, afterwards King *Richard* III.

1461. *George Plantagenet*, Duke of *Clarence*.

1472. *Mar.* 25. ——— Earl of *Salisbury* and *Warwick*.

June 30. *Henry Bourchier* (Earl of *Eſſex*) Earl of *Eſſex*.
William Nevil, Earl of *Kent*.

Nov. 4. *William Herbert*, Baron *Herbert* (of *Ragland*, *Chepſtow*, and *Gower* in *Wales*.)
John VVenlok, Baron *VVenlok*.
VVilliam Haſtings, Baron *Haſtings*.

1463. *May* 23. *John Nevil*, Earl of *Northumberland*. But in 1470, reſigning that title, he was created

1470. *Mar.* 25. ——— Marquiſs of *Montague*.

1465. *May* 23. *Edmund Grey*, Earl of *Kent*.

June 20. *VValter Blount*, Baron *Montjoy*.

1466. *May* 24. *Richard VVidville*, Earl of *Rivers*.

1467. *Mar.* 13. *John de la Pole*, Earl of *Lincoln*.

1468. *May* 27. *VVilliam Herbert*, Earl of *Pembroke*.

1469. *May* 7. *Humphrey Stafford*, Earl of *Devonſhire*.

1470. *Jan.* 5. *John Stafford*, Earl of *VViltſhire*.

1471. *Aug.* 24. *Thomas Grey*, Earl of *Huntingdon*.

1475. *Apr.* 18. ——— Marquiſs of *Dorſet*.

Lewis

	Ann. C.
Lewis de Bruges, Earl of *Winchester*.	1472.
John Howard, Baron *Howard*.	*Oct.* 13.
Richard Plantagenet, Duke of *York*.	*Oct.* 15.
——— Earl of *Nottingham*.	1474. *May* 28.
——— Earl of *Warren* and *Surrey*, and Duke of *Norfolk*.	1476. *June* 12.
Edmund Plantagenet, Earl of *Salisbury*.	1477. *Feb.* 7.
——— Earl of *March* and *Pembroke*.	1477. *Feb.* 15.
William Herbert (in lieu of the Earldom of *Pembroke* resigned) Earl of *Huntingdon*.	1479. *July* 8.
Maurice Berkley, Viſcount *Berkley*.	1479. *July* 4.
Francis Lovell, Viſcount *Lovell*.	1481. *Apr.* 21.
	1482. *Jan.* 4.

Knights of the Garter elected in the Reign of King EDWARD IV.

George, Duke of *Clarence*.
Sir *William Chamberlayne*, Knight.
John Tiptoft, Earl of *Worceſter*, afterwards High-Conſtable of *England*.
John Nevil, Lord *Montague*, afterwards Earl of *Northumberland*, and Marquiſs of *Montague*.
William Herbert, Lord *Herbert*, afterwards Earl of *Pembroke*.
William Haſtings, Lord *Haſtings*.
John Scrope, Lord *Scrope* of *Bolton*.
Sir *John Aſtley*, Knight.
Ferdinand, King of *Naples*, ſon of *Alphonſus* King of *Arragon*.
Francis Sforția, Duke of *Milan*.
James, Earl of *Douglas*.
Gaillard de Duras, Lord of *Duras*.
Sir *Robert Harcourt*, Knight.
Anthony Widuile, Lord *Scales* and *Nuteli*, afterwards Earl *Rivers*.
Richard, Duke of *Gloucester*, afterwards King of *England*, of that name the Third.

——Lord

—— Lord *Mountgryſon* in *Apulia*.
John Mowbray, Duke of *Norfolk*.
John de la Pole, Duke of *Suffolk*.
William Fitz-Alan, Earl of *Arundel*.
John Straſford, Earl of *Wiltſhire*.
John Howard, Lord *Howard*, afterwards Duke of *Norfolk*.
Walter Devereux, Lord *Ferrers* of *Chartley*.
Walter Blount, Lord *Mountjoy*.
Charles, Duke of *Burgundy*.
Henry Stafford, Duke of *Buckingham*.
Thomas Fitz-Alan, Lord *Maltravers*, afterwards Earl of *Arundel*.
Sir *William Parr*, of *Kendal*, Knight.
Frederick, Duke of *Urbine*.
Henry Percy, Earl of *Northumberland*.
Edward, Prince of *Wales*.
Richard, Duke of *York*, ſecond ſon to King *Edward* IV.
Thomas Grey, Marquiſs of *Dorſet*, and Earl of *Huntingdon*.
Sir *Thomas Montgomery*, Knight.
Ferdinand, King of *Caſtile* and *Leon*.
Hercules d'Eſte, Duke of *Ferrara*.
John, King of *Portugal*, Son to *Alphonſus* V.

17. EDWARD V.

Ann. C. 1483. *Apr.* 9. *Reg.* 1. *EDWARD* V. is proclaimed King, being between twelve and thirteen years of age.

He was then at *Ludlow*, in *Shropſhire*, where he was ſent by his father, in order to compoſe by his preſence the diſorders of the *Welſh*, who were grown unruly and diſobedient to their Governors.

There were at that time two parties at Court, the Old and the New Nobility; the latter of which ſided with, and was ſupported by the Queen; to the great diſcontent of the Old Nobility: But the King takes care to get them reconciled before his death.

Richard Duke of *York*, being a great diſſembler, reſolves to make his Court publicly to the Queen; but in private, joins with *Henry Stafford* Duke of *Buckingham*, *William* Lord *Haſtings*, and *Thomas* Lord *Stanley*, three Lords of the Old Nobility, in order to hinder the Queen from having the Government of the Kingdom.

Both parties take meaſures to ſeize the Government. And the Queen orders her brother, *Anthony* Earl *Rivers*, to

K. EDWARD V.
G. Vertue Sc.

to raiſe forces in *Wales*, and conduct the King up to *London*, in order to his Coronation. *Ann. C.*

The Duke of *Buckingham*, and Lord *Haſtings*, ſend an expreſs to the Duke of *Glouceſter*, who was then at *York*, to inform him of the Queen's meaſures; and they three meeting ſoon after at *Northampton*, agree, to perſuade the Queen to diſmiſs the forces lately raiſed in *Wales*, that the Duke of *Glouceſter* might the more eaſily ſeize the Government.

The Queen falling into the ſnare laid for her, writes to the Earl *Rivers* to diſmiſs thoſe forces, which he accordingly does; and keeping only the King's domeſtics, begins his journey with the King for *London*.

As the King was approaching *Northampton*, the Dukes of *Glouceſter* and *Buckingham* go out and meet him, and adviſe the Earl *Rivers* to conduct him as far as *Stony-Stratford*; and then they perſuade that Earl, to go and ſpend the night with them at *Northampton*, which he does.

They careſs him very much, but the next morning arreſt him; as alſo *Richard* Lord *Grey*, Sir *Thomas Vaughan*, and Sir *Richard Hawſe*: And, inſtead of proceeding to *London*, carry the King back to *Northampton*.

The Queen informed of this goes and takes ſanctuary in *Weſtminſter-Abbey*, at midnight, with her Children.

Dr. *Thomas Rotherham*, Archbiſhop of *York*, and Lord Chancellor, goes and comforts the Queen there, and leaves the Great Seal with her, but ſends for it again as ſoon as he comes home.

An inſurrection happens in *London*, but it is appeaſed by Lord *Haſtings*. *May* 4.

The King is brought to *London*, attended by a great number of Lords, particularly by the Duke of *Glouceſter*, who does him homage in the Biſhop of *London*'s palace.

A great Council is called, by which *Richard* Duke of *Glouceſter* is declared Protector of the King and Kingdom.

As ſoon as he is declared Protector, he takes the Great Seal from Archbiſhop *Rotherham*, and gives it to *John Ruſſel*, Biſhop of *Lincoln*; and alſo makes other alterations at Court.

He propoſes in the Council, to take *Richard* Duke of *York* from the Queen his mother by force, if ſhe would not quietly part with him: Cardinal *Thomas Bourchier*, Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, is commiſſioned by the Council to go and perſuade the Queen to deliver him up; who, receiving

ceiving the Prince from the Queen, brings him to the Protector.

A few days after, the Protector, ſtill feigning to be making preparations for his Nephew's Coronation, cauſes the two Princes to be removed to the *Tower*, the uſual place from whence the proceſſion at Coronations began.

Then he imparts his project of ſeizing the Crown to the Duke of *Buckingham*; with whom and other his truſty friends, he concerts, to engage proper perſons in that plot; to keep it ſecret; to prove *Edward* IVth's children illegitimate; and, either to gain or diſpatch the Lord *Haſtings* out of the way.

He gains Sir *Edmund Shaw*, Mayor of *London*, his brother Dr. *John Shaw*, and one *Pinker*: To whom he joins *Richard Catesby*, a Lawyer, and a Confident of the Lord *Haſtings*, whom he betrayed.

A report is ſpread, by their means, that the late King *Edward* IV. and his brother, the Duke of *Clarence*, were not ſons of the Duke of *York*; and that King *Edward* IVth's children were all baſtards, on account of his pretended marriage-contract with *Elizabeth Lucy*. Conſequently, that *Richard* Duke of *Glouceſter* was the only lawful ſon and heir of the Duke of *York*.

The Protector erects two Councils; one whereof met at *Baynard's-Caſtle*, and the other at *Crosby's-Place*. The former was to regulate the preparations for *Edward*'s pretended Coronation, but all their orders were retarded.

The Lord *Stanley* diſcovers his fears of the Protector's ill deſigns againſt the King; but the Lord *Haſtings* confidently affirming thoſe ſuſpicions were groundleſs, the King's friends take no meaſures to ſtop the Protector's progreſs, as they might eaſily have done.

The Duke of *Glouceſter* imploys *Catesby* to ſound the Lord *Haſtings*, who diſcovering the Lord *Stanley*'s ſuſpicions, and expreſſing an inviolable attachment to the King's perſon, the Duke reſolves to diſpatch him out of the way; and accordingly calling a Council in the *Tower*, arreſts him, and cauſes him to be immediately executed.

The Lord *Stanley* (who is wounded in the ſcuffle) *Rotherham* Archbiſhop of *York*, and *John Morton* Biſhop of *Ely*, are alſo arreſted.

Anthony Earl *Rivers*, *Richard* Lord *Grey*, Sir *Thomas Vaughan*, and Sir *Richard Hawſe*, who were priſoners at *Pontefract*, are executed the ſame day.

The Protector ſends for the Mayor and Aldermen, to whom

cluſos injectiſq; culcitris ſuffocatos abdite, et inhoneſte tumulari juſſit patruus RICHARDUS perfidus regni prædo oſſa deſideratorum, diu et multum quæſita poſt annos CXC & I. ſcalarum in ruderibus (ſcalæ iſtæ ad ſacellum turris albæ nuper ducebant) alte defoſſa, indiciis certiſſimis ſunt reperta XVII die Julii A. D. M DC LXXIIII. CAROLUS II. Rex clementiſſimus, acerbam ſortem miſeratus, inter avita monumenta, principibus infeliciſſimis juſta perſolvit. Anno Dom. 1678. Annoq; Regni ſui 30.

In Engliſh:

Here lie the remains of EDWARD V, King of England, and of RICHARD, Duke of York. Theſe unhappy brothers, who were ſhut up in the Tower, and there ſmothered with pillows, by order of their perfidious uncle, RICHARD, the uſurper of the Throne, were privately and indecently buried. Their much deſired bones, diligently and often ſought for, in vain, July 17, 1674, one hundred and ninety-one years after their death, were dug up in the ruins of a ſtair-caſe, that formerly led to the Chapel of the white tower, and known by moſt undoubted tokens. The moſt compaſſionate King CHARLES II, pitying their ſevere fate, thought fit to order thoſe moſt unfortunate Princes this place amongſt the monuments of their foreſathers, in the year of our Lord 1678, and the thirtieth of his reign.

18. RICHARD III. *ſirnamed Crook-back.*

Ann. C. 1483. KING *Richard* begins his Reign, and is proclaimed
June 19. the next day, by the name of *Richard* III.
— 20. He ſends for 5000 men out of the North, becauſe he did
Reg. 1. not entirely confide in the Citizens of *London*.
— 27. Sir *Robert Brackenbury* is appointed Conſtable of the *Tower*.

John Ruſſel Biſhop of *Lincoln* is made Lord-Chancellor;
— 27. and *John* Lord *Howard* is created Duke of *Norfolk*, and
— 28. Earl-Marſhal.

Thomas Rotherham, Archbiſhop of *York*, and the Lord *Thomas Stanley* are releaſed; but Dr. *Morton* Biſhop of *Ely* is committed to the Duke of *Buckingham*'s cuſtody, who ſends him to his caſtle of *Brecknock* in *Wales*.

King

K. RICHARD III.

G. Vertue Sc.

King *Richard* III. and his Queen, *Ann*, are crowned. *Ann. C.*

The Uſurper, in order to ſecure himſelf on the Throne, ſends Ambaſſadors to *Caſtile*, *Bretagne*, and *France*, to renew the Alliances, or prolong the truces ſubſiſting between thoſe Courts and the Crown of *England*. *July* 7. *July. Auguſt.*

Moreover, he reſolves to diſpatch his two nephews, King *Edward* V. and *Richard* Duke of *York*, out of the way: And Sir *Robert Brackenburgh* refuſing to be the inſtrument of the King's cruelty, the two Princes are ſmothered in the *Tower* by Sir *James Tyrrell*, made, for one night, Conſtable of the place for that very purpoſe, aſſiſted by *Miles Foreſt* and *John Dighton*.——Their bones, as it is ſuppoſed, being found in 1674, were removed into *Henry* VIIth's Chapel, at *Weſtminſter*.

The King takes, in the mean time, a progreſs into the North; and coming to *York*, is there crowned a ſecond time: The ſame day, he creates *Edward* his ſon Prince of *Wales*. *Auguſt.*

Lewis XI. King of *France* dies, and is ſucceeded by his ſon *Charles* VIII. *Aug.* 30.

Henry Stafford, Duke of *Buckingham* being diſguſted with the King, leaves him at *Glouceſter*; and retiring to his Caſtle of *Brecknock*, conſults there with Biſhop *Morton*, how to dethrone the King, and place the Crown on the head of *Henry* Earl of *Richmond*.

Matters being concerted between them, they find means to inform of their deſign *Margaret*, Counteſs of *Richmond*, who was married to the Lord *Stanley*; and ſhe enters into the plot.

In the mean time, Biſhop *Morton* takes an opportunity to eſcape out of the Duke of *Buckingham*'s cuſtody, and retires to *Ely*, from whence he flies into *Flanders*.

The Counteſs of *Richmond* imparts the deſign to the Queen-Dowager, who was ſtill in her ſanctuary at *Weſtminſter*; and makes overtures to her of a marriage between the Princeſs *Elizabeth* and the Earl of *Richmond*; which the Queen approves of, and promiſes to forward the undertaking with all her power and intereſt.

Matters being thus ſettled between the Queen-Dowager, the Counteſs of *Richmond*, and the Duke of *Buckingham*, they endeavour to ingage their moſt truſty friends in the plot, who likewiſe draw in others.

The Duke of *Buckingham*, in order to execute his deſigns, ſecures firſt ſome friends in *Wales*, who undertake to liſt ſoldiers privately; and then ſettles a correſpondence with

ſome

Ann. C. ſome Gentlemen of *Darſetſhire*, *Devonſhire*, and *Cornwal*, who promiſe to raiſe forces, which the Duke intended to join with his *Welſhmen*, and ſo receive the Earl of *Richmond* at his arrival: At the ſame time, ſeveral Lords and Gentlemen were to riſe in other Counties.

Septemb. The Counteſs of *Richmond* ſends two expreſſes, different ways, to the Earl her ſon; and he, being informed of what was reſolved in his favour, imparts the ſecret to the Duke of *Bretagne*, who willingly engages to ſupply him with men and ſhips: Whereupon he ſends back the expreſſes to acquaint his friends, that he hoped to be ready by the beginning of *October*, and deſired them to prepare all things by that time.

King *Richard* receiving a confuſed account of the Conſpiracy, advances towards the center of the Kingdom, and ſuſpecting the Duke of *Buckingham*, orders him to Court; but the Duke refuſes to come, and drawing together his forces, begins to march towards the weſtern Counties.

The King, in the mean time, aſſembles his forces, and appoints the rendezvous at *Leiceſter*, where he repairs himſelf, with a reſolution to give his enemies battle.

The Duke of *Buckingham* advances by long marches to *Glouceſter*, where he intended to paſs the *Severn*; but being hindered from doing it by a very great inundation, which laſted ſix days, his army diſperſes, and he hides himſelf at the houſe of one *Ralph Baniſter*, who had been his ſervant; and by whom being betrayed, for 1000 *l.* reward *October.* that was offered, he is beheaded at *Shrewsbury*, without any legal proceſs.

The Conſpirators thereupon diſperſe themſelves, and many fall over to the Earl of *Richmond*, among whom was the Marquiſs of *Dorſet*.

Oct. 12. Mean while, the Earl of *Richmond*, ignorant of what paſſed in *England*, ſails from *St. Mab's* with 5000 men, and 40 ſhips, and comes over-againſt *Pool*, in *Darſetſhire*; but finding the Militia there ready to oppoſe his landing, he retires to *Normandy*, and returns to *Bretagne*.

Not deſpairing of better ſucceſs another time, he reſolves to make a ſecond attempt, and ſolemnly ſwears to marry the Princeſs *Elizabeth*. Many of the *Engliſh* reſort to him.

Oct. 24. King *Richard* appoints Sir *Ralph Aſhton*, Vice-Conſtable, to try the Conſpirators, ſeveral of whom are executed.

1484. A Parliament meets at *Weſtminſter*, which paſſes an act
Jan. 23. of attainder againſt the Earl of *Richmond* and his Adherents; declares the late King *Edward*'s marriage with

Elizabeth

Elizabeth Widville void, and his iſſue illegitimate; and confirms King *Richard*'s title, aſſerting, There was none other perſon living, but him only, that could claim the Crown and Dignity Royal, by way of inheritance. *Ann. C.*

The King, after this, lays a great tax and tallage upon the people.

Though the Counteſs of *Richmond* was concerned in the plot, yet it was not diſcovered; however, the King ſuſpecting her, he orders the Lord *Stanley*, her huſband, to keep her confined, and confers on him the office of High-Conſtable.

King *Richard* being informed, that ſome of the Conſpirators were ſtill ſtirring in *Bretagne*; in order to ſecure himſelf, he confirms the Alliance with *Portugal*, and makes or renews truces with *Bretagne*, *France*, the Archduke *Maximilian*, and *Scotland*; and ſends an Ambaſſy of obedience to the Pope. *April.* *Septemb.* *Reg.* 2.

He has alſo private Negotiations with *Peter Landais*, the Duke of *Bretagne*'s Prime-Miniſter, whom he endeavours to perſuade to deliver up the Earl of *Richmond*; but he being apprized of his danger by *Morton*, Biſhop of *Ely*, eſcapes into *France*, where he is honourably received by King *Charles* VIII.

Edward, Prince of *Wales* dying, the King declares his nephew, *John de la Pole*, Earl of *Lincoln*, his preſumptive Heir. *April.*

John de Vere, Earl of *Oxford*, eſcapes out of his confinement at *Hammes*, and repairs to the Earl of *Richmond*; as do alſo ſeveral other Lords and Gentlemen from *England*.

The King, ſuſpecting the Lord *Stanley*, obliges him to leave his ſon, *George*, Lord *Strange*, in hoſtage.

And, diſcovering the project of the Earl of *Richmond*'s marriage with his niece, the Princeſs *Elizabeth*, he reſolves to marry her himſelf; for which purpoſe, he gets her, and the reſt of her ſiſters, out of the Queen-Dowager's hands; and his Queen dying ſoon after, he makes his addreſſes to the Princeſs *Elizabeth*, but ſhe abſolutely refuſes him.

King *Richard* fits out a fleet to oppoſe the Earl of *Richmond*'s landing, in caſe he endeavoured to make another attempt upon *England*, but apprehending no danger from him, he lays it up in the ſpring. 1485.

The Earl, encouraged hereby, ſollicits the Court of *France* for aid, and having obtained from it 2000 men, with ſhips to tranſport them, and a ſum of money, for which he left the Marquiſs of *Dorſet* and Sir *John Bourchier* in hoſtage *Reg.* 3.

Ann. C. tage, he repairs to *Roan*, where the troops were to aſſemble.

July. Here receiving the diſagreeable news of the Queen's death, and of *Richard*'s intending to marry the Princeſs *Elizabeth*, he reſolves, in order to gain Sir *Walter Herbert*, to offer to marry his younger ſiſter, and diſpatches a meſſenger to Sir *Walter* for that purpoſe; but the roads being narrowly watched, the meſſenger durſt not purſue his journey.

July. In the mean time, the Earl of *Richmond* being invited

Auguſt. over to *England* by his Friends, embarks at *Harfleur*, and ſetting ſail *July* 31, lands on the 6th of *Auguſt* at *Milford-haven*; from whence he proceeds, the next day, to *Haverford*, where he was joyfully received.

From hence he ſends an expreſs to the Counteſs, his mother, to inform her of his arrival, and deſign to march to *London*; and immediately marches quite through *Wales* to *Shrewsbury*, being joined in his march by Sir *Rice ap Thomas*, and others, and meeting with no oppoſition from Sir *Walter Herbert*, who had been ordered by King *Richard* to ſtop his progreſs.

The Lord *Stanley*, and his brother, Sir *William*, raiſe 5000 men, as if it had been for the King, though it was really for the Earl of *Richmond*'s ſervice, and go and poſt themſelves at *Litchfield*.

The King, who was at *Nottingham*, hearing of the enemies landing, reſolves to wait for them between *Leiceſter* and *Coventry*, and give them battle; but there was a great deſertion in his army.

The Earl of *Richmond*, eager to engage the King, advances to *Litchfield*, and then to *Tamworth*, in his way to which laſt place he had like to be loſt: He has a private Conference, during his march with the Lord *Stanley*, and his brother, Sir *William*.

The two armies meeting near *Boſworth*, draw up in order of battle, the King's conſiſting of between 12 and 13,000

Aug. 22. men, and the Earl of *Richmond*'s of 5000; and, coming here to an engagement, the King's army was totally defeated, and himſelf ſlain, with the loſs of 1000 or 1200 men; whereas the Earl of *Richmond* did not loſe above 100.

The moſt conſiderable perſons that fell on the King's ſide, were, *John Howard*, Duke of *Norfolk*, *Walter*, Lord *Ferrers*, Sir *Richard Ratcliffe*, *Robert Brackenbury*, &c. and on the Earl's ſide, the only perſon of note ſlain, was Sir *William Brandon*, his Standard-bearer.

The Lord *Stanley* and his brother Sir *William* contributed greatly to this victory, by ſtanding neuter before the fight, and

and then falling furiouſly upon the King's troops, during the heat of the engagement. *Ann. C.*

Richard's Crown being found by a Soldier, is brought to the Lord *Stanley*, who places it on the Earl of *Richmond*'s head, ſaluting him King.

The late King *Richard*'s body is found among the ſlain, ſtark naked, covered with blood and dirt; and in that condition thrown acroſs a horſe, behind *Blanc Sanglier*, a Purſuivant at Arms, and carried to *Leiceſter*; where it was buried in St. *Mary*'s Church, belonging to the *Grey-Friers*.

Thus fell King *Richard* III. in the 34th year of his age, after a ſhort Reign of two years, two months, and two days.

The Character *of* RICHARD III.

Richard III, was ſirnamed *Crook-back'd*, becauſe he was ſo in reality. Moreover, one of his arms was almoſt withered, receiving but little or no nouriſhment. As to the defects of his mind, if we believe moſt Hiſtorians, they were ſo great and ſo numerous, that it would be difficult to find in Hiſtory a Prince of ſo ill a character. It is certain, he had a boundleſs ambition, which often cauſed him to commit actions unbecoming a Chriſtian Prince. To this paſſion alone muſt be aſcribed his treachery and cruelty, ſince he was treacherous and cruel only with reſpect to the acquiſition or preſervation of the Crown. He has not been the ſole Prince whom ambition has led into the like exceſſes. The Hiſtorians who writ in the Reigns of *Henry* VII and *Henry* VIII, have ſo aggravated the heinouſneſs of his actions, that one cannot help obſerving in their writings, a ſtrong deſire to pleaſe the Monarchs then on the Throne. Nay, very probably, they have aſcribed to him ſome actions upon no very good foundation; for inſtance, his murdering with his own hand, *Henry* VI, and the Prince of *Wales*. Their deſire to ſay a great deal of ill of this Prince, made them overlook his good qualities, which ought not to have been paſſed over in ſilence. Be this as it will, without pretending either to juſtify him upon what he did of ill, or condemn him generally upon all, as ſome have done. I ſhall content myſelf (ſays *Rapin*) with blaming what was blame-worthy, and acknowledging withal what deſerved condemnation. The crimes he was guilty of in procuring or keeping the Crown, are, as I ſaid, effects and conſequences of his immoderate ambition, by which he ſuffered himſelf to be blinded. But their being produced by that paſſion, does not in the leaſt leſſen their heinouſneſs. As to

the reſt, he had a great deal of ſenſe, and a very ſolid judgment, Qualities that might have been an honour to him, had they been uſed to better purpoſes. We may judge of his good ſenſe and penetration, by his precautions to ſecure himſelf from the aſſaults of his enemies. Theſe precautions could not be more juſt, if Divine Providence had not been pleaſed to render them fruitleſs, as it ſometimes does, with reſpect to ſeemingly the beſt concerted deſigns. On ſeveral occaſions he ſhewed an uncommon valour, and particularly in the battle where he was ſlain. This cannot be denied him, without injuſtice. He expreſſed great concern, that juſtice ſhould be impartially miniſtred to all his ſubjects, without diſtinction, provided the preſervation of his Crown was not concerned; for, in that reſpect, he made no ſcruple to trample upon all the rules of right and equity. This natural inclination for juſtice, but combated by his ambition, may afford ſome occaſion to preſume, he would, perhaps, have proved a good King, had he been able to fix himſelf ſo firmly in the Throne as to have feared no revolution. At leaſt, this cannot be ſaid to be improbable. The Emperor *Auguſtus*, who was guilty of ſo many cruelties to arrive at the Empire, affords a memorable and well-known inſtance of ſuch a change, and it would not be impoſſible to find other examples. But as *Richard* was taken out of the world before he had given ſigns of any amendment, his ill actions abſorbed whatever there might be commendable in him. There is one Hiſtorian, however, who has endeavoured to vindicate this Prince: But as he has ſet no bounds to this vindication, and laboured to make him entirely innocent, he has not acquired much credit, eſpecially as he was often obliged, in order to attain his ends, to advance facts not ſtrictly true. He has, however, a place in the collection of the *Engliſh* Hiſtorians; but no modern Author has thought fit to take him for guide.

Buck.

By his Queen, *Anne* (ſecond daughter and coheir of *Richard Nevil*, Earl of *Warwick* and *Salisbury*, and widow of *Edward* ſon of King *Henry* VI.) he had only one ſon, who died in 1484. But he had two natural children; *John* ſurnamed of *Glouceſter*; and *Catharine* married to *William* Earl of *Huntington*.

With *Richard* III, ended the *Angevin* Kings, ſirnamed *Plantagenets*; who, ſince *Henry* II, the firſt of this race, had poſſeſſed the Crown of *England* from father to ſon, during the ſpace of 330 years. *Richard* was the laſt King

of this Houſe; but not the laſt male, as ſome have affirmed, ſince the Earl of *Warwick*, his nephew, ſon of the Duke of *Clarence*, his brother, was ſtill alive. This young Prince was the ſole branch of the male iſſue of *Edward* III, which had been ſo numerous, but was almoſt entirely deſtroyed by the late Civil war. This war commenced thirty years before, was, at length, ended by the battle of *Boſworth*, after deſtroying above one hundred thouſand *Engliſhmen*, and a great number of Princes of the two contending Houſes. *Philip de Comines* mounts the number to fourſcore; but it is a miſtake or exaggeration of that Author, as it is eaſy to ſee by the Genealogical Table of the poſterity of *Edward* III.

A Brief Recapitulation of the Hiſtory of the Plantagenets.

HENRY II, the firſt King of this houſe, was the greateſt of all the *Engliſh* Monarchs with reſpect to extent of dominion. Beſides the Kingdom of *England*, he poſſeſſed in *France*, *Guienne*, *Poictou*, *Saintonge*, *Auvergne*, *Limouſin*, *Perigord*, *Angoumois*, *Touraine*, *Anjou*, *Maine*, *Normandy*, to which he joined alſo *Bretagne* by the marriage of one of his ſons with the Heireſs of that Duchy; and laſtly crowned all with the conqueſt of *Ireland*. But with all this grandeur he was ever unhappy. His conteſt with *Becket*, the vexatious perſecutions from Pope *Alexander* III. the rebellion of his Queen and Sons, and the unfortunate ſucceſs of his laſt war with *France*, ſuffered him not to enjoy a moment's repoſe.

RICHARD I, rendered his name famous in the Eaſt, by the conqueſt of the Iſle of *Cyprus*, by the taking of *Acra*, and by a great victory over the *Saracens*. But the fame he acquired in that expedition was a dear purchaſe to *Chriſtendom*, and particularly to *England*, by the prodigious quantity of men and money, exported from thence, without the Chriſtians of *Paleſtine* reaping any great advantages. *Richard* himſelf at his return into *Europe*, underwent the rigours of a grievous and long impriſonment, from which he could not be freed without an exorbitant ranſom which quite drained his Kingdom. In ſhort, after a ſeveral years ſtruggle with *Philip Auguſtus* to very little purpoſe, he unfortunately periſhed by an arrow at the ſiege of *Chaluz*, undertaken from his greedy deſire of money.

JOHN Lack land enjoyed not a moment's happineſs during his whole Reign. Perſecuted by the King of *France*, then by Pope *Innocent* III, and laſtly, by his own ſubjects, his Reign was nothing but a continual train of misfortunes. He loſt firſt all the provinces poſſeſſed by his Anceſtors in *France*. After which, *Innocent* III. deprived him of his Crown, and reſtored it to him upon ſhameful and diſhonourable terms. In fine, he had the great mortification to ſee his Barons in arms againſt him, and to die at a time when all *England* was paying allegiance to a foreign Prince.

HENRY III, a Prince of a very mean ſpirit, lived in a continual ſtate of ſubjection, though ſeated on a throne; one while a ſlave to his favourites and miniſters, another while to the imperious will of the Popes. At length, ſtripped of all his authority by his own ſubjects, he remained ſome time captive to his greateſt enemies. And he was entirely indebted to a victory fortunately gained by the Prince his Son, for his reſtauration, and the tranquillity he enjoyed the two laſt years of his life.

EDWARD I, rendered his name famous by the conqueſt of *Scotland*. But after ſhedding torrents of blood in that unjuſt quarrel, he had the mortification to loſe that acquiſition, and to die before he had recovered it. His conqueſt of *Wales* was the moſt real advantage procured for the Kingdom by any King of *England*.

The Reign of *EDWARD* II, is remarkable only for that Prince's ill-conduct and misfortunes. He is the firſt inſtance of a King of *England* depoſed by authority of Parliament. Happy, if the fury of his enemies had ſtopped there! but, with an unparalleled barbarity, he was made to ſuffer the moſt cruel death that could poſſibly be deviſed, and which bore no proportion to the indiſcretions he was guilty of.

EDWARD III, was one of the moſt illuſtrious Kings of *England*, as well for his perſonal qualities as for his victories in *France*, and the famous treaty of *Bretagne*, which reſtored to him with intereſt the Provinces, *John Lackland* had ſuffered to be loſt. But his Reign, though glorious was not free from misfortunes. His minority was ſullied by the tragical death of *Edward* II. his father, and of the Earl of *Kent* his unkle. To puniſh theſe horrid outrages, he was forced to keep his own mother in priſon as long as ſhe lived. Towards the end of his days he had the mortification to ſee himſelf ſtript of all he had re-conquered

quered upon *France*, without hopes of recovery. In a word, he ruined, as I may ſay, his own reputation, and died at a time when his ſubjects began to loſe their former eſteem for him.

Thus far it is eaſy to ſee that the race of the *Plantagenets* had enjoyed no great ſhare of happineſs. But their misfortunes, which were blended with ſome proſperities, were very inconſiderable in compariſon of what that race afterwards underwent. When a man takes a view of what happened to the poſterity of *Edward* III, he ſees nothing but diſaſters, tragical or untimely deaths, hatred, animoſity, revenge, civil wars, cruelties unheard of, among Princes ſprung from the ſame ſtock. *England* had never ſeen ſo terrible a deſtruction of her inhabitants, nor had the ſcaffold been ever died with ſo much noble and royal blood as during the hundred years between the death of *Edward* III, and that of *Richard* III. Let us briefly run over the ſeveral branches of *Edward* the third's family, in order to ſee their calamities.

EDWARD the *Black Prince*, one of the moſt accompliſhed Princes that ever was born, died in the forty-ſixth year of his age, having firſt buried his eldeſt ſon *Edward*, but ſeven years old.

RICHARD II, his other ſon, who mounted the Throne after his Grandfather, was depoſed, impriſoned, and barbarouſly murdered.

LIONEL, Duke of *Clarence*, third ſon of *Edward* III, died in a foreign Country, in the flower of his age. He left but one daughter, whoſe marriage into the Houſe of *March* was the occaſion of all the calamities *England* was afflicted with for thirty years together.

The poſterity of *John* of *Gaunt*, *Edward*'s fourth ſon, were far from being happy. *HENRY* IV, Succeſſor of *Richard* II, paſſed his whole Reign under continual apprehenſions of loſing a Crown acquired by extraordinary methods, and preſerved by the violent death of *Richard* II, whom he cauſed to be murdered in priſon.

HENRY V, one of the moſt illuſtrious Kings of *England*, after ſo great a progreſs in *France*, as to be declared Regent and Heir of that Kingdom, enjoyed that conſiderable advantage but two years, or rather, had only a foretaſte of what he had ſo eagerly deſired. He died in the flower of his age, leaving a ſon, nine months old, who afterwards proved very unfit to compleat the work, his illuſtrious Father had ſo glorioufly begun.

The Dukes of *Clarence*, *Bedford*, and *Glouceſter*, died all three without iſſue: *Glouceſter* was long expoſed to the fury of his enemies, and, at laſt, ſacrificed to their vengeance.

HENRY VI, Son of *Henry* V, loſt all that the King his Father had acquired in *France*. After which, he was ſtript of his Royalty, impriſoned, reſtored for a ſhort ſpace, and at laſt murdered by a Prince ſprung from the ſame ſtock with himſelf.

EDWARD his ſon, Prince of *Wales*, died after the ſame manner, and by the ſame hand.

In ſurveying the other branch of the Houſe of *Lancaſter*, namely, that of *Beaufort-Somerſet*, hardly ſhall we find a Prince but what loſt his life in a battle, or on the ſcaffold.

The Houſe of *York*, of whom *Edmund de Langley*, fifth ſon of *Edward* III, was head, was ſtill leſs favoured. Some unfortunate ſtars ſeemed to be continually ſhedding their malignant influences upon that family. Excepting *Edmund de Langley* himſelf, the firſt Duke of *York*, all the Princes, his deſcendants, died a violent or untimely death.

EDWARD, Duke of *York*, his eldeſt ſon, was ſlain at the battle of *Azincourt*.

RICHARD, Earl of *Cambridge*, loſt his head on a ſcaffold.

RICHARD, third Duke of *York*, and his ſon *EDMUND*, Earl of *Rutland*, periſhed in the battle of *Wakefield*.

GEORGE, Duke of *Clarence*, was afterwards condemned to die in a butt of Malmſey.

EDWARD IV, after enjoying the Crown of *England* ſome years, to which he had a better title than the Houſe of *Lancaſter*, died indeed a natural death, but in the two and fortieth year of his age.

EDWARD V, and *RICHARD*, his brother, were ſmothered in their bed.

EDWARD, Prince of *Wales*, ſon of *Richard* III, was taken out of the world in the eleventh year of his age.

RICHARD III. was killed at the battle of *Boſworth*.

In fine, we ſhall ſee, in the courſe of the Hiſtory, *EDWARD*, Earl of *Warwick*, ſon of the unfortunate Duke of *Clarence*, and the only ſurviving male of the Houſe of *York*, end his days by the hand of the executioner.

Nothing more remains to complete the account of the diſaſters that happened to the poſterity of *Edward* III, but to take notice, that *THOMAS* of *Woodſtock*, Earl of *Glouceſter*,

Glouceſter, ſeventh ſon of that Monarch, died a violent death, in priſon, at *Calais*.

Were not all theſe misfortunes which fell on *Edward* the Third's Poſterity the effects of the Divine Vengeance extended to the fourth Generation, for the barbarous murder committed on the perſon of *Edward* II? At leaſt, it is difficult not to ſee, in theſe events, the tragical death of *Edward* II, revenged upon *Richard* II; that of *Richard* upon *Henry* VI; that of *Henry* upon *Edward* V; and that of *Edward* upon *Richard* III.

An account of the MONEY *coined in this Reign.*

That *Richard* III. coined money, appears by an Indenture, whereby he contracts with *Robert Brackenbury* for the coinage both of gold and ſilver, of the ſame value and denomination with the money of the fifth of *Edward* IV. Dr. *Nicolſon* deſcribes one of his Groats, as inſcribed with characters of the like ſhape with thoſe of *Henry* VI. and *Edward* IV. weighing about two penny weights three grains, which was the exact ſtandard of *Richard* III's Groats. Others in the poſſeſſion of the late Archbiſhop of *York* and Mr. *Thoreſby*, in which the face ſide wants the outer circle, the letters of the inſcription which reach to the extremity of the coin be-

ing generally imperfect, ſo that there was reaſon for the proviſion made by Act of Parliament in the next Reign, that the new money ſhould have a circle about the outermoſt parts. That coin which *Speed* gives of *Richard* II, is thought rather to belong to this King, by the word AGLIÆ inſtead of ANGLIÆ, in whoſe Reign that way of writing was uſed. The Author of *Num. Brit. Hiſt.* has two pieces of this King inſcribed, RICHARDUS. REX. ANGLI. Reverſo, CIVITAS EBORACI. Another, RICARDUS. REX.

REX. ANGL. Reverſe, CIVITAS. LONDON. The ſhortneſs of this King's Reign makes his coin ſo very rare, that *Thoresby* obſerves, he had ſeen a ſeries of antient monies from *Edward* the Confeſſor to the preſent times, *Richard* III. excepted, which he had not chanced to light upon. *Speed*'s caſe was the ſame, ſo that he was forced to leave a blank for this King's money.

The NOBILITY created by King RICHARD III. was as follows:

Ann. C. 1483. *June* 28.
John Howard, Duke of *Norfolk*.
William Berkley, Earl of *Nottingham*.
Edward Grey, Viſcount *Liſle*.
Thomas Howard, Earl of *Surrey*.

Knights of the Garter elected in the Reign of King RICHARD III.

Sir *John Conyers*, Knight.
Thomas Howard, Earl of *Surrey*, afterwards Lord Treaſurer of *England*, and Duke of *Norfolk*.
Francis Lovel, Viſcount *Lovel*.
Sir *Richard Ratcliff*, Knight.
Sir *Thomas Burgh*, Knight, afterwards Lord *Burgh*.
Thomas Stanley, Lord *Stanley*, afterwards Earl of *Derby*.
Sir *Richard Tunſtall*, Knight.

BOOK XIV.

Containing the Reign of HENRY VII. *With the State of the Church from* 1399, *to* 1509.

19. HENRY VII.

1485. *Reg.* 1. *Auguſt.*
HENRY, having obtained the victory at *Boſworth*, cauſes *Te Deum* to be ſung upon the place, and is preſently after proclaimed King by his army.

Having three foundations whereon to build his right; namely, 1. Conqueſt; 2. His intending to marry the Princeſs *Elizabeth* heir of the Houſe of *York*; and 3. His deſcent from the Houſe of *Lancaſter* by his mother's ſide; he reſolves

K. HENRY VII.
G. Vertue Sculp:

reſolves to reſt upon the title of *Lancaſter*, and to uſe the other two only as ſupporters. *Ann. C.*

But ſtill diſtruſting that title in his own mind, he is all his life afraid of the Houſe of *York*; and upon this account, cauſes *Edward Plantagenet*, ſon of the late Duke of *Clarence* to be removed from *Sheriff-hutton* Caſtle to the *Tower* of *London*, where he is cloſely confined.

The Princeſs *Elizabeth*, who was confined in the ſame Caſtle, comes to *London*.

King *Henry* makes his entry into *London*; and cauſes King *Richard*'s three ſtandards taken at *Boſworth*, to be brought into *St. Paul*'s Church. *Aug.* 27.

He aſſembles his Council, and other principal perſons, before whom he renews his promiſe to marry the Princeſs *Elizabeth*.

The ſweating ſickneſs rages in *London*, and other parts of the Kingdom. *Sept.* 21. *October.*

John de Vere, Earl of *Oxford*, is made Conſtable of the *Tower*.

A truce for one year is concluded between *England* and *France*.

King *Henry* is crowned at *Weſtminſter*, and on the ſame day inſtitutes a guard of fifty Archers, known by the name of Yeomen of the Guard. *Oct.* 30.

A Parliament meets at *Weſtminſter*, which entails the Crown upon King *Henry*, in theſe words, *That the inheritance of the Crown ſhould reſt, remain, and abide in the King and the Heirs of his body, perpetually ſo to endure, and in none other*. *Nov.* 7.

The attainders formerly paſſed againſt King *Henry*, whilſt Earl of *Richmond*, and his Friends, are reverſed; and the late King *Richard* and his Adherents are attainted.

This Parliament granted the King Tunnage; which was 3 *s.* on every tun of wine, of Denizens, and 6 *s.* of Aliens. Poundage, or one ſhilling in the pound, of all merchandiſes imported or exported, except tin, for which Aliens were to pay two ſhillings. The ſubſidy of wools and wool-fells, namely 33 *s.* and 4 *d.* of Denizens, and of Aliens 3 *l.* 6 *s.* 8 *d.* for every ſack of wool, and for 240 wool fells. And for every laſt of hides, of Denizens 3 *l.* 6 *s.* 8 *d.* and of Aliens 3 *l.* 13 *s.* and 4 *d.*——The Clergy alſo granted a tenth.

A Proclamation is publiſhed, wherein the King offered a pardon to ſuch as ſubmitted by ſuch a day, and took the oaths to him.

King

Ann. C. King *Henry* borrows 2000 *l.* of the City of *London*, and repays the King of *France* the Money he had borrowed of him.

John Morton Biſhop of *Ely*, and *Richard Fox*, are made Privy-Counſellors.

Edward Stafford, ſon of the late Duke of *Buckingham*, is reſtored in blood.

1486. The King raiſes a great deal of money by forfeitures and
Jan. 17. confiſcations.

Jan. 18. A three years truce is concluded between *England* and *France*

King *Henry* celebrates his nuptials with the Princeſs *Eli-*
Mar. 10. *zabeth:* But his extreme hatred for the whole Houſe of
— 13. *York* inſpires him with a great coldneſs for that Princeſs.

July. He gets a diſpenſation from the Pope's Legate for his marriage, and afterwards two diſpenſations from the Pope himſelf for the ſame: Together with a Bull, confirming the Act of Settlement.

Perceiving that the northern Counties were beſt affected to the Houſe of *York*, he takes a progreſs thither, in order
April, to ingratiate himſelf with the inhabitants by ſome acts of
&c. grace and favour.

While he was at *Lincoln*, he receives information of a Rebellion headed by the Lord *Lovel*, and *Humphrey* and *Thomas Stafford*; but his uncle, *Jaſper Tudor* Duke of *Bedford*, marching againſt the Rebels, and offering them a pardon, they ſubmit: The Lord *Lovel* eſcapes into *Flanders*, and *Humphrey Stafford* is executed.

July 3. A three years truce is concluded between *England* and *Scotland*.

— 22. Cardinal *Bourchier*, Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, dies, and
Reg. 2. is ſucceeded by *John Morton* Biſhop of *Ely*.

Sept. 20. The truce between *England* and *Bretagne* is prolonged.

Arthur, the King's eldeſt ſon, is born at *Wincheſter*.

The people being highly diſcontented with the King, becauſe he deferred the Queen's Coronation, ſome malicious perſons ſpread a report, That the King intended to put the Earl of *Warwick* to death: And, That one of *Edward* the fourth's ſons was ſtill alive.

Richard Simon, a Prieſt of *Oxford*, inſtructs one *Lambert Simnel*, a Baker's ſon, and makes him paſs for *Edward* Earl of *Warwick*; and then has him conveyed to *Ireland*, where he is proclaimed King of *England*, and Lord of *Ireland*, by the name of *Edward* VI.

King *Henry* alarmed at this, calls a ſecret Council; after which

which he confines the Queen Dowager to *Bermondſey*, Monaſtery, as if ſhe had been the author of the whole contrivance, and ſeizes her eſtate. *Ann. C.*

Moreover, on purpoſe to undeceive the people, he ſhows the Earl of *Warwick* in public about *London*.

And alſo proclaims a pardon to all that would quit the Rebels; promiſes a reward to ſuch as ſhould diſcover the ſecret of the plot; and orders the ports to be guarded.

John de la Pole, Earl of *Lincoln*, who had been declared by King *Richard* III. preſumptive heir of the Crown, openly eſpouſes *Simnel*'s intereſt; and goes over to *Margaret* Ducheſs Dowager of *Burgundy*, who was ſiſter of the late King *Edward* IV. With her he concerts meaſures how to dethrone King *Henry*; and ſhe promiſes him to ſend into *Ireland* 2000 veteran *German* Soldiers, under the command of *Martin Swart*.

A treaty of commerce is concluded between *England* and the *Low-Countries*. 1487. *Jan.* 2.

Richard Fox, Keeper of the Privy-Seal, is made Biſhop of *Exeter*.

King *Henry* taking meaſures to oppoſe his enemies, levies two armies, under the command of the Duke of *Bedford* and the Earl of *Oxford*, to oppoſe the deſcent of the *Flemings* and *Iriſh*. In the mean time, he takes a progreſs into *Suffolk* and *Norfolk*, and returns to *London* by the way of *Cambridge*.

The Earl of *Lincoln*, and Lord *Lovel*, arrive in *Ireland* with the 2000 *Germans*; and, after *Simnel*'s Coronation that was performed at *Dublin*, paſs over into *Lancaſhire*; whence they advance towards *Newark*, with a reſolution to fight; their army conſiſting of 8000 men. *May.* *June.*

King *Henry*, who had aſſembled his forces at *Coventry*, marches towards *Nottingham*, with a deſign to intercept the Rebels.

Both armies meeting at a village called *Stoke*, come there to a ſharp engagement, where King *Henry* gets the victory, with the loſs of half his firſt line: But of the Rebels were ſlain, the Earl of *Lincoln*, *Martin Swart*, and above 4000 more; moſt of the *Germans* being killed or wounded. *June* 16.

Lambert Simnel being taken, is made a Turn-ſpit in the King's kitchen, and afterwards one of his Faulconers. As for *Simon* the Prieſt, he is committed cloſe priſoner, and heard of no more. The Lord *Lovel* alſo diſappears.

After this victory, King *Henry* marches to *Lincoln*, and then *June.* *July.*

Ann. C. then to *York*, and in his way ſeverely fines thoſe who had held intelligence with the Rebels.

Aug. 5. He procures a commiſſion from the Pope to abſolve the Rebels from the penalty of excommunication; and a Bull to reſtrain the privileges of ſanctuary.

Reg. 3. *Charles* VIII, King of *France*, having formed the deſign of conquering the Duchy of *Bretagne*, King *Henry*, inſtead of ſending powerful ſuccours to the Duke, to whom he had the greateſt obligations, does, out of covetouſneſs, offer only his mediation to the two contending parties, not willing to be at the charge of raiſing forces.

And yet he makes that a handle to demand a ſubſidy *Nov.* 9. from the Parliament, for the defence of *Bretgne*. This Parliament, which met *November* 9, grants the King the tenth penny of every man's goods and lands in the Kingdom for the war in *Bretagne*.

Notwithſtanding which, King *Henry* puts that money in his coffers, and reſumes the way of Negotiation with *France*, whereas he ought to have ſent a good body of troops to defend *Bretagne*.

Nov. 25. The Queen is crowned, with the uſual ſolemnity.

— 28. A treaty is concluded between *England* and *Scotland*, and ſeveral matches are agreed upon.

King *Henry* ſends an Ambaſſy to the Pope.

1488. The rigorous exacting of the tax granted by the laſt Parliament occaſions an inſurection in *Yorkſhire* and *Durham*: The Mutineers murder *Henry Percy*, Earl of *Northumberland*, Preſident of the North; and ſetting Sir *John Egerton* at their head, declare they were marching to *London* to give the King battle, but they are diſperſed by *Thomas Howard*, Earl of *Surrey*.

The King coming to *York*, cauſes *John à Chamber*, the chief Incendiary, to be hanged, with 12 of his Accomplices.

June. *James* III, King of *Scotland*, is ſlain at the battle of *Bannocks-bourn*, and ſucceeded by his ſon, *James* IV, who confirms the truce with *England*.

July. A new truce is concluded between *England* and *France*, till *January* 17, 1490.

— 28. The battle of *St. Aubin* is fought, between the *French* and *Reg.* 4. the *Bretons*, wherein the latter are defeated; the Lord *Widville* being ſlain, with moſt of the 400 *Engliſh* he had carried over.

Sept. 9. *Francis* II, Duke of *Bretagne*, dies; whereupon King *Henry* ſeems to prepare in earneſt to aſſiſt the young Ducheſs his

his daughter, and ſends Ambaſſadors to ſeveral Courts, as if he was forming a league againſt *France*. *Ann. C.*

His Ambaſſadors conclude a treaty at *Redon* with the Ducheſs, whereby he ingages to ſend into *Bretagne* an aid of 6000 men. 1489. *Feb.* 10.

Thoſe ſuccours arrive accordingly into *Bretagne*, and are followed by a reinforcement, *March.*

A treaty is concluded at *Francfort* between *France* and *Bretagne*, but it is not executed. *Reg.* 5.

Ann, Ducheſs of *Bretagne*, is married by proxy to *Maximilian*, King of the *Romans*; which marriage is not made public till *March*, 1491. 1490.

A Parliament meets at *Weſtminſter*, wherein ſeveral uſeful ſtatutes are enacted. *Jan.* 13. *February.*

The Ducheſs of *Bretagne* ſends an Ambaſſy to King *Henry*, to deſire him to ſend her freſh ſuccours.

But inſtead of treating with her Ambaſſadors, he ſends Biſhop *Fox* and others, to *France*, to treat with King *Charles* concerning all his differences with the Ducheſs of *Bretagne*; and to demand, at the ſame time, 125,000 crowns, being the arrears of the penſion due from *Lewis* XI. to King *Edward* IV, by the treaty of *Pequigny*.

At length he appoints Commiſſioners to treat with the Ducheſs's, but it was only with a view to ſecure the money he had diſburſed upon her account.

The *Flemings*, ſpirited up and aſſiſted by the King of *France*, revolt againſt the Emperor, take *Ipre* and *Sluys*, and beſiege *Dixmude*; but King *Henry* ſends 1000 men over to *Flanders*, by whoſe aſſiſtance the *Flemings* and *French* are totally defeated. *July* 16. — 26.

The Ducheſs of *Bretagne*'s Ambaſſadors enter into freſh engagements with King *Henry*, to reimburſe all his charges, *&c.* upon the hopes of an aid, which he never intended to give. *Reg.* 6.

King *Henry* makes Alliances with *Spain*, *Portugal*, *Denmark*, *Maximilian*, King of the *Romans*, the Duke of *Milan*, &c. *Septemb.* *October.*

A marriage is concluded between *Arthur*, Prince of *Wales*, and *Catharine*, third daughter of *Ferdinand* and *Iſabella*, King and Queen of *Spain*.

The King of *France*, uneaſy at the forementioned Alliances, ſends Ambaſſadors to *England*, to diſcover King *Henry*'s intentions. *Decemb.*

Henry, in order to frighten King *Charles*, declares to his Ambaſſadors, that he deſigned to try to recover *France*, which,

Ann. C. which, of right, belonged to him, though nothing was really further from his thoughts.

The Ducheſs of *Bretagne* ſends an Ambaſſy to *England*, to deſire aid, and to notify at the ſame time her marriage to the King.

1491. King *Henry* ſends Ambaſſadors to *France* to treat of all his differences with that Crown, particularly concerning a ſum of money; and alſo of the affair between *Charles* and the Ducheſs of *Bretagne*.

April. — 17. He foments the troubles in *Scotland*; and bribes the Lord *Bothwel* and Sir *Thomas Tod*, to deliver into his hands *James* IV. King of *Scotland*, and his brother the Duke of *Roſs*.

The King of *France* hearing of the Ducheſs of *Bretagne*'s marriage with *Maximilian*, reſolves to make himſelf maſter of the reſt of her Dominions, and lays ſiege to *Rennes*: The *May* 23. Ducheſs being hard preſſed, ſends two Ambaſſies to King *June* 3. *Henry* to deſire aſſiſtance; but he makes uſe of that only for a pretence to borrow money of his ſubjects for a war with *France*: This he carefully collects, but gives no orders for raiſing forces.

June 28. *Henry*, the King's ſecond ſon, is born.

The league between King *Henry*, *Ferdinand*, and *Maximilian* is renewed, and they agree to enter *France*, each at the head of an army, in *May* or *June* the next year.

Charles VIII. King of *France* bribes the Ducheſs of *Bre-*
Reg. 7. *tagne*'s counſellors, who adviſe her to break off her marriage with *Maximilian*, and take *Charles* for a husband: The Ducheſs courageouſly refuſes a good while, but is prevailed upon at laſt, and the marriage is concluded *December* 16. —By this means *Bretagne* came to be a Province of *France*.

Decemb. The *Engliſh* Ambaſſadors finding themſelves amuſed, return home, and King *Henry* makes great preparations for a war with *France*: As doth alſo *Maximilian*.

A truce is concluded between *England* and *Scotland*.

1492. King *Henry* aſſembles a Parliament, to which having communicated his deſign to carry war into *France*, they grant him a Benevolence.

He ſends 2500 men, and twelve ſhips, to ſuccour the Archduke *Philip*, againſt the *Gantois* who had revolted.

Feb. 5. An Ambaſſy arrives from *France*, which lays the firſt foundations of the ſubſequent peace; and King *Henry* ſends
June 12. an Ambaſſy thither to confirm and promote it.

He ſummons *Maximilian* and *Ferdinand* to enter *France*, purſuant

purſuant to the treaty between them; but they were unprepared. *Aug.* C.

Chriſtopher Columbus ſails the firſt time from *Port Palos* in *Andaluzia*, with King *Ferdinand*'s licenſe, in queſt of the new world. *Aug.* 3. *Reg.* 8.

King *Henry* iſſues out orders for the levying a greater number of forces; and appoints Commiſſioners to confer with thoſe of *Scotland*; and all only to delay his expedition. *Auguſt.* — 22.

At laſt embarking at *Dover* with 25,000 foot, and 1600 horſe he arrives at *Calais* the ſame day. *Oct.* 6.

Before he embarks, he receives a letter from the Marſhal *Deſquerdes*, offering a negotiation of peace; ſo, hearing that *Maximilian* was unprepared to act in concert with him, and that *Ferdinand* King of *Spain* had concluded a peace with *France*, he appoints Ambaſſadors to treat with *Deſquerdes*.

In the mean time, he lays ſiege to *Boulogne*. *Oct.* 19.

A treaty of peace is ſigned at *Eſtaples*, between *England* and *France*; whereby King *Charles* engages to pay King *Henry* the arrears of a penſion granted to *Edward* IV, at 50,000 livres a year. *Nov.* 3.

The King of *France* aſſigns penſions to all King *Henry*'s principal Counſellors and Miniſters.

King *Henry* returns to *London*.

The Ducheſs Dowager of *Burgundy* labours to raiſe King *Henry* troubles at home, by ſetting up *Perkin Warbeck*, to perſonate *Richard* Duke of *York*, ſecond ſon of King *Edward* IV. And, after having inſtructed him, ſends him for a year into *Portugal*, that he might not firſt appear in the *Low Countries*, and ſo cauſe her to be ſuſpected. *Dec.* 17.

Upon appearance of war between *England* and *France*, ſhe orders him to repair to *Ireland*; from whence King *Charles* ſends for him to *Paris*, and treats him as Duke of *York*, but diſmiſſes him, when ſure of a peace with *England*.

Perkin hereupon retires to the Ducheſs of *Burgundy*, who at firſt feigning not to have ſeen him before, treats him as an impoſtor, but afterwards owns him for her nephew the Duke of *York*.

News of this being brought to *England*, it is believed by abundance of people, and cauſes great motions in the Kingdom; which convinces the King of his great danger from the *Yorkiſts*. 1493.

A treaty of perpetual peace and amity is concluded between King *Henry* and *Ferdinand* and *Iſabella* King and *Mar.* 8.

Ann. C. Queen of *Arragon*; In this treaty the marriage articles between Prince *Arthur* and the Princeſs *Catharine* are renewed and confirmed.

A Conſpiracy is formed againſt the King, headed by Sir *William Stanley* Lord Chamberlain, *John Ratcliffe* Lord *Fitz-walter*, Sir *Robert Clifford*, &c. *Clifford* being ſent to *Flanders*, to concert meaſures with the Ducheſs of *Burgundy*, and *Warbeck*, ſends word, That the Duke of *York* was alive, and that he knew him perfectly well; which ſerves to inflame the Conſpirators.

King *Henry*, in order to undeceive the people, orders Sir *James Tyrrel*, and *Dighton*, the murderers of the Duke of *York*, to be examined, and publiſhes their depoſitions.

Moreover, he ſends ſpies into *Flanders*, whom he cauſes to be excommunicated every Sunday the better to conceal them; and having learnt from them the whole ſtory of *Perkin Warbeck*, makes it public.

Auguſt. The Emperor *Frederic* IV. dies, and is ſucceeded by his ſon *Maximilian*.

— 21. *John Morton*, Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* is made Cardinal

Reg. 9. of *St. Anaſtaſius*.

A ſeven years truce is concluded between *England* and *Scotland* till *April* 30, 1501.

King *Henry* having received full information of whatever relates to *Warbeck*, deſires the Archduke *Philip* to deliver him up; who refuſing, *Henry* breaks off all commerce with him, and baniſhes the *Flemings* out of his Dominions; appointing the mart at *Calais*. The Archduke baniſhes alſo all the *Engliſh*, who were in *Flanders*.

Sir *Robert Clifford* being gained by *Henry*, diſcovers to him all *Warbeck*'s and the Ducheſs of *Burgundy*'s ſecrets, with their correſpondents in *England*. Whereupon *John Ratcliff* Lord *Fitzwalter*, and ſeveral other perſons are apprehended in one day. The Lord *Fitzwalter* is ſent priſoner to *Calais*; but Sir *Simon Montfort*, Sir *Robert Ratcliff*, and *William Daubeney* are executed: The reſt were pardoned.

1494. King *Henry* hearing that *Warbeck* had many Adherents in

Reg. 10. *Ireland*, he appoints his ſecond ſon *Henry* Lieutenant of *Ireland*; giving him for Deputy Sir *Edward Poynings*, who goes over to take care of that Kingdom, and calling a Parliament, cauſes *Poynings*'s law to be made.

Nov. 1. Prince *Henry* is created Duke of *York*.

Richard Fox is made Biſhop of *Durham*.

King

King *Henry* extorts large ſums from his ſubjects, by for- *Ann. C.*
feitures upon penal laws.

Sir *William Stanley*, Lord Chamberlain, being accuſed by 1495.
Sir *Robert Clifford* of holding intelligence with *Warbeck*, is *January.*
beheaded. This occaſions a great terror in *England*; and *Feb.* 16.
ſeveral libels were publiſhed, for which five perſons are exe-
cuted.

This year *Charles* VIII. King of *France* conquers *Na-* *May.*
ples, but loſes it again immediately.

Henry, Duke of *York*, is made Preſident of the northern
marches, and the Earl of *Surrey* is ordered to levy troops
for the defence of the North, againſt the *Scots*.

Cecily, Ducheſs of *York*, mother of King *Edward* IV. *May* 31.
and *Richard* III, dies.

King *Henry* takes a progreſs in *Lancaſhire* to viſit the *June.*
Counteſs, his mother, at *Latham*.

In the mean time, *Perkin Warbeck* arrives upon the *July* 3.
coaſt of *Kent*, near *Sandwich*, and lands ſome of his men; *Reg.* 11.
but they being cut off by the inhabitants, he returns to
Flanders.

A Parliament meets at *Weſtminſter*, wherein it is enacted, *Oct.* 13.
That no perſon that ſhall attend upon the King, for the time
being, and do him true ſervice, ſhall be attainted of High-
treaſon, or forfeit any thing for the ſame.

And alſo, That poor perſons ſhall be admitted to ſue *in*
formâ pauperis.

Mean while, *Perkin Warbeck* lands in *Ireland*, but not
finding the inhabitants diſpoſed to favour his deſigns, he
goes to *Scotland*, where the King receives him as Duke of
York, and gives him in marriage *Catharine Gordon*, daughter
of the Earl of *Huntley*.

The great treaty of commerce, called by the *Flemings* 1496.
intercurſus magnus, is concluded between *England* and the *Feb.* 24.
Archduke *Philip*, Governor of the *Low-Countries*.

The King grants a patent to *John Cabott*, to go in queſt *Mar.* 5.
of new lands, with *Engliſh* colours.

James IV, King of *Scotland*, undertakes to place *Warbeck*
on the Throne of *England*, and for that purpoſe enters
Northumberland at the head of an army, and diſperſes *Reg.* 12.
Perkin's Proclamation; but this expedition ends only with
the ravaging *Northumberland*, where the *Scots* get a great
booty.

Charles VIII, King of *France*, cauſes the peace, con-
cluded at *Eſtaples* with *England*, to be confirmed by the
States.

Ann. C. But, notwithſtanding that, King *Henry* enters into the
Septemb. League of *Italy*, againſt *France*, which League conſiſted of Pope *Alexander* VI, the Emperor *Maximilian*, the King and Queen of *Spain*, the Doge of *Venice*, the Duke of *Milan*, and King *Henry*.

Dec. 21. *Jaſper Tudor*, Duke of *Bedford*, dies, without legitimate iſſue.

1497. A Parliament meets at *Weſtminſter*, which grants the
Jan. 16. King 120,000 *l.* and two fifteenths, for the war with *Scotland*.

The rigour uſed in collecting this ſubſidy occaſions a rebellion in *Cornwal*, which was headed by *Michael Joſeph* and *Thomas Flammock*.

The Rebels march into *Devonſhire* and *Somerſetſhire*; and at *Wells*, being headed by *James Tuchet*, Lord *Audley*, advance to *Wincheſter*, and into *Kent*, and then come and incamp on *Black-Heath*, being 16,000 in number.

June 22. King *Henry* having ſent the Earl of *Surrey* into the North to oppoſe the incurſions of the *Scots*, attacks and defeats the Rebels on *Black-Heath*, 2000 whereof are ſlain, and but 300 of the King's army. The Lord *Audley*, *Flammock*,
— 28. and *Joſeph* are executed.

In the mean time, the *Scots* make a ſecond irruption into *England*, and lay ſiege to *Norham* Caſtle; but the *Engliſh* oblige them to retire into their own Country, and purſuing them there, take the town of *Aton*.

July 18. King *Henry* ratifies the marriage-articles between his
Reg. 13. eldeſt ſon *Arthur* and *Catharine* of *Arragon*. This marriage had been concluded in 1491, and confirmed *Octob.* 1, 1496.

Septemb. Through the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador's mediation, a peace is concluded between *England* and *Scotland*, and *Perkin Warbeck* is ſent away by King *James* into *Ireland*.

A marriage is propoſed between *James* IV, King of *Scotland*, and *Margaret*, eldeſt daughter of King *Henry*.

The paſſage to the *Eaſt-Indies* round the *Cape of Good-Hope*, is diſcovered.

1498. *Charles* VIII, King of *France*, dies, and is ſucceeded by
Reg. 14. *Lewis* XII.

A new inſurrection breaks out in *Cornwal*, and the Rebels ſending for *Warbeck* out of *Ireland*, ſet him at their head.

Sept. 7. He lands at *Whitſand-Bay*, and repairs to *Bodmin*, where having aſſembled about 3000 men, he publiſhes a Proclamation, wherein he aſſumes the name of *Richard* IV,

King

King of *England*: And than goes and beſieges *Exeter*, but *Aug. C.* is repulſed.

King *Henry*, and ſeveral of the Nobility who had raiſed forces, march againſt *Perkin*, who thereupon flies to *Thinton*, and afterwards takes ſanctuary in *Bewley* Abbey, where he is inveſted by the Lord *D'aubeney*. His army, to the number of 6000 men, ſubmits to the King's mercy.

Perkin's wife is ſeized in *St. Michael's Mount*, and brought to the King, who uſes her well.

Henry comes to *Exeter*, and, examining into the origin of the Rebellion, cauſes ſome of the Rebels to be executed, and others to be ſeverely fined.

Perkin accepting of a pardon, offered him by the King, voluntarily ſurrenders, and is brought to Court, where, though he ſeemed to be at liberty, yet he was very narrowly watched.

He is carried twice on horſeback through the City of *London*, that people might have time and opportunity to view him well, and then is confined in the *Tower*.

Soon after, he is privately examined, and his confeſſion publiſhed, giving an account of his life and actions.

This year *Shene* Palace was burnt down; but the King *Dec.* 21. rebuilt it, and gave it the name of *Richmond*.

The peace between *England* and *Scotland* is broke by a 1499. quarrel, which happened between ſome *Engliſh* and *Scots*, at *Norham*; but, however, the truce is renewed ſoon after.

Warbeck eſcapes out of the *Tower*, and goes into *Kent*, from whence he deſigned to convey himſelf out of the Kingdom; but miſſing his aim, he flies for ſanctuary to *Bethlehem* Monaſtery.

Upon promiſe of having his life granted him, he ſubmits to the King's mercy, and after having been ſet two whole days in the ſtocks, is confined again in the *Tower*.

Wilford, a Shoemaker's ſon, pretending to be the Earl of *Warwick*, is apprehended, and hanged.

Prince *Arthur*'s marriage with *Catharine*, daughter of *May* 19. *Ferdinand* V, King of *Spain*, is ſolemnized by proxy.

Perkin Warbeck gains four ſervants belonging to the *Reg.* 15. Lieutenant of the *Tower*, with whom he conſpires, to kill their maſter, ſeize the keys of the *Tower*, and eſcape with the Earl of *Warwick*, who had been drawn into the plot.

This conſpiracy being diſcovered, *Perkin Warbeck* is con- *Nov.* 16. demned, and hanged ſoon after. — 23.

Edward Plantagenet, Earl of *Warwick*, is alſo condemned, — 28.

Ann. C. and beheaded for the ſame. He was the laſt male-heir of the Houſe of *York*.

1500. The Spiritual Juriſdiction of the Iſles of *Jerſey*, *Guernſey*,
Feb. 13. *&c.* is transferred, by a bull of Pope *Alexander* VI, from the Biſhop of *Coutance*, to the Biſhop of *Winchester*.

This ſame Pope makes uſe of a jubilee he had publiſhed, and of an intended cruſade againſt the *Turks*, to raiſe money in *England*.

May 8. King *Henry* goes to *Calais*, on account of the plague in *England*, and has an interview with the Archduke *Philip*; where overtures are made of croſs-marriages between *Henry* Duke of *York*, and *Margaret*, ſiſter of *Philip*, and between *Charles*, ſon of *Philip*, and *Mary*, King *Henry*'s ſecond daughter.

June. The King returns to *England*.

Commiſſioners are appointed to ſearch after, and fine the Adherents of *Michael* the Farrier, and *Warbeck*, in the Weſt of *England*.

Reg. 16. *John Morton*, Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, *Thomas Rotherham*, Archbiſhop of *York*, *John Alcock*, Biſhop of *Ely*, and Founder of *Jeſus College*, and *Thomas Langton*, Biſhop of *Winchester*, died this year. *Langton* was ſucceeded by the famous *Richard Fox*.

1501. *Edmund de la Pole*, Earl of *Suffolk*, and nephew of King
Reg. 17. *Edward* IV, flies into *Flanders*, which gives King *Henry* uneaſineſs; but he returns, and is pardoned.

The Palace at *Sheen* being finiſhed this year, the King gives it the name of *Richmond*.

Oct. 2. The Princeſs *Catharine* arrives in *England*, and is ſoon
Nov. 14. after married to *Arthur*, Prince of *Wales*.

1502. A contract of marriage between *James* IV, King of
Jan. 24. *Scotland*, and *Margaret*, eldeſt daughter of King *Henry*, is ſigned.

As alſo two treaties, the one of perpetual peace, and the other concerning the outrages that might be committed on both ſides.

April 2. *Arthur*, Prince of *Wales*, dies, at *Ludlow* Caſtle, and was
Reg. 18. buried in the Cathedral Church at *Worceſter*.
June. *Henry*, Duke of *York*, is created Prince of *Wales*, and Earl of *Cheſter* and *Flint*.

The Emperor *Maximilian* concludes a treaty of Commerce, and another of Friendſhip and Alliance with King *Henry*.

Dec. 9. The King grants a patent to *James Elliot*, *Thomas Aſhurſt*, *John*

John Gonſalez, and *Francis Fernandez*, to go in queſt of unknown Countries. *Ann. C.*

Three men, brought from the New World by *Sebaſtian Cabot*, come to *England*. 1533. *Jan.* 24.

The firſt ſtone of King *Henry* the VIIth's Chapel, adjoining to *Weſtminſter* Abbey, was laid. That Chapel coſt 14,000 *l.* building. *Feb.* 11.

Elizabeth, King *Henry*'s Queen, dies in child-bed, and was buried in *Weſtminſter* Abbey. *Feb.* 16.

Henry Dean, Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, dies, and was ſucceeded by *William Warham*, Biſhop of *London*.

A Parliament is held, in which the Lords and Clergy grant the King a ſubſidy.

The King being now at peace abroad, and without troubles at home, oppreſſes his ſubjects ſeveral ways, by means of Sir *Richard Empſon* and *Edmund Dudley*, in order to heap up money.

The King's oppreſſions breeding great diſcontents in the Kingdom, the Earl of *Suffolk* takes hold of that to aſſert his right to the Crown, as being deſcended from the Houſe of *York*, by his mother, and retires into *Flanders*.

But King *Henry* having diſcovered his ſecrets, by the aſſiſtance of Sir *Robert Curſon*, cauſes Sir *William Courtney*, *William de la Pole*, Sir *James Tyrrel*, Sir *John Windham*, and the reſt of his Accomplices, to be apprehended: *Tyrrel* and *Windham* are ſoon after beheaded.

Prince *Henry* is contracted in marriage to *Catharine* Princeſs Dowager of *Wales*, and Pope *Julius* II. grants them a diſpenſation. *June* 25. *Reg.* 19. *Dec.* 26.

James IV. King of *Scotland* conſummates his marriage with the Princeſs *Margaret*. *Aug.* 8.

A Parliament meets at *Weſtminſter*, which grants the King a ſubſidy for his eldeſt daughter's marriage. 1504. *Jan.* 25.

Notwithſtanding which, he ſoon after raiſes a great deal of money, by way of benevolence.

In this Parliament a new coin was appointed. *Reg.* 20.

King *Henry* thinks of having *Henry* VI. canonized: But, finding that too chargeable, he only obtains a bull to remove his body from *Cherſey* to *Weſtminſter-Abbey*.

He builds three Houſes for *Franciſcans*, called Obſervants, at *Richmond*, *Greenwich*, and *Newark*; and three more for Conventuals, at *Canterbury*, *Newcaſtle*, and *Southampton*. He alſo turned the *Savoy* into an Hoſpital.

King *Henry* ſends three truſty perſons into *Italy* and *Spain*, to be informed of the perſon and condition of the young 1505. *Reg.* 21.

Ann. C. young Queen of *Naples*, whom he had projected to marry; and to enquire into the affairs and deſigns of *Ferdinand* King of *Caſtile* and *Arragon*.

Dec. 30. A treaty of Alliance is concluded between King *Henry* and *George* Duke of *Saxony*.

1506. The Archduke *Philip*, and his wife *Jane*, Queen of
January. *Caſtile*, are driven by a ſtorm (which laſted from *January* 11, to 26) on the coaſt of *England*, and land at *Weymouth*; where being detained till the King's pleaſure was known, they come to the King at *Windſor*.

The treaty of commerce between *England* and the *Low-Countries* is renewed, to the advantage of the *Engliſh*, on which account that treaty was called *Intercurſus magnus*.

Mar. 20. A marriage is concluded between King *Henry* and *Margaret* ſiſter of the Archduke *Philip*, and widow of the Duke of *Savoy*.

King *Henry* demands the Earl of *Suffolk* of the Archduke *Philip*, who refuſes to deliver him up; but at laſt complies, upon condition King *Henry* ſhould not put him to death.

— 24. The Earl accordingly comes to *England*, and is conveyed to the *Tower*.

April. 23. *Philip* and his Queen depart from *England* for *Spain*.

Reg. 22. The Archduke *Philip* dies, and is ſucceeded by his ſiſter
Sept. 25. *Margaret* in the Government of the *Low-Countries*.

1507. She makes a proviſional treaty of commerce with King
Reg. 23. *Henry*.

June 5. A marriage is concluded between *Charles*, Archduke of
Dec. 21. *Auſtria*, and the Princeſs *Mary* King *Henry*'s third daughter.

Henry being ſeized in 1506, with the gout, it now turns to a ptiſic, which makes him believe his end was near.

Notwithſtanding which he permits *Empſon* and *Dudley* to continue their exactions, with all imaginable rigour.

They proſecute and condemn, in large fines, Sir *William Capel*, Sir *Thomas Knefworth*, and Sir *Laurence Aylmer*, late Mayors of *London*, for neglect in their offices.

By ſuch oppreſſive means, the King heaps up 180,000 *l.* which he moſtly had in ſecret places at *Richmond*, in his own keeping.

1508. The marriage between the Archduke *Charles* and the
Reg. 24. Princeſs *Mary* is ſolemnized by proxy.

Dec. 17. The Archduke pawns to King *Henry* a jewel called *the rich Fleur-de-Luce* for 50,000 crowns.

1509. The King finding he daily grew worſe, grants a general pardon; diſcharges all priſoners in and about *London* that lay for fees, or for debts of 40 *s.* and under; and even ſome that

that lay for 10 *l.* or larger ſums. And, making his will, orders his Heir to make reſtitution of whatever his Officers and Miniſters had unjuſtly taken from his ſubjects. *Ann. Co.*

King *Henry* dies at *Richmond*, in the 53d year of his age, after a Reign of 23 years and eight months:

And was buried at *Weſtminſter* in his new Chapel; where he reſts, under a ſtately monument, which was finiſhed in 1519, and coſt 1000 *l.*

The Character of HENRY VII.

If the Hiſtory of this reign be read with never ſo little attention, it will eaſily be perceived, that *Henry*'s views were but two. The firſt was to keep the Crown, acquired by extraordinary good fortune, and perhaps unthought of, before he was invited into *England* by the Duke of *Buckingham*. The other was to accumulate riches. As he never ſuffered himſelf to be diverted by other thoughts, his whole application centered upon one ſingle object, namely, upon thoroughly examining every thing that could have any relation to the two ends he had propoſed. Ambition, honour, glory, love, pleaſures, and all the other paſſions which generally diſquiet the hearts of Princes, made but little impreſſion upon him. Content with enjoying his Crown, he thought neither of new acquiſitions, nor of rendering his name illuſtrious by great actions. All his thoughts were confined to prevent or defeat the deſigns of his domeſtick enemies, or to well fill his coffers. He had a wonderful ſagacity, to diſcover in the affairs that occurred, the ſide from whence ſome advantage could be drawn. This is what he plainly ſhewed in the affair of *Bretagne*, in his pretended wars with *France* and *Scotland*, and even in his domeſtick troubles, which by his addreſs, turned all to his profit. Bacon. Hall.

Though he was ſometimes forced to take arms, never Prince loved peace more than he. As he had no ambition, he ſaw no advantage for him in war. On the contrary, he conſidered that all the events of a war, whether foreign or domeſtick, were againſt him. The former could at moſt but procure him ſome glory and acquiſitions abroad, of which he was not very fond; and by the latter he might be a great loſer. Beſides, a time of commotions afforded no opportunities to accumulate riches. So laying down this fixed principle of his policy, not to engage in any war without

an abſolute neceſſity, he never ſwerved from it. It is this that made him unconcernedly behold the loſs of *Bretagne*, and without reſentment ſuffer the inſults of the King of *Scotland*, becauſe it was not from the war that he intended to reap any advantage, but only from the preparations that were to be made to ſupport it. However, this policy would have been unſeaſonable when it was attacked by domeſtick enemies, whoſe aim was to rob him of his Crown. As his all was then at ſtake, he chearfully faced the danger, though with all the precautions poſſible not to run any hazard. He won two battles upon the Rebels, one at *Stoke*, the other at *Black-Heath*. But in both he was very ſuperior in number of troops, and fought againſt Perſons ill armed and unskilled in the art of war. So, it cannot be ſaid what he would have done, had he been oppoſed with equal forces. It is no leſs difficult to know, whether it was owing to his courage that he headed his armies in perſon, or to his diſtruſt of thoſe that ſerved him. However this be, he was always fortunate in his domeſtick wars, and thereby gained ſo great a reputation, that all the Princes of *Europe* earneſtly courted his Alliance. On the other hand, (ſays *Rapin*) the eſteem Foreigners expreſſed for him, did not a little contribute to render him formidable to his ſubjects. I ſay, formidable, for it is certain, he was never beloved. In a word, his method of governing which approached to arbitrary power, eſpecially towards the end of his Reign, his inſatiable avarice, his haughtineſs, his pride and his dark and reſerved temper, were no proper qualities to win the affections of his people.

He never opened his mind to any man, except perhaps to one or two of his Miniſters. As for the reſt, he ſet them to work without their knowing themſelves the motives of their own proceedings. The world was ſo perſuaded, he had always ſome hidden deſign even in his moſt indifferent actions, that what was only a pure effect of chance, was often aſcribed to his policy.

His ſpies in foreign Courts gave him an extenſive knowledge of all that paſſed there. On the other hand, his Ambaſſadors were always charged to inform themſelves by all ſorts of ways, of the ſecrets of the Princes to whom they were ſent. Very often this was the principal article of their inſtructions. By this means he made ſuch diſcoveries as enabled him to convince the foreign miniſters, reſiding at his Court, of his great inſight into their Maſter's affairs. Hence he reaped many conſiderable advantages, chiefly in that

that the Princes of *Europe* fearing his abilities, were very forward to live in good underſtanding with him. His ſtrict friendſhip with *Ferdinand* King of *Arragon*, a Prince of much the ſame character, was extremely uſeful to him. Probably it hindered the Court of *France* from interpoſing much in the affairs of *England*, and was one of the principal cauſes of his conſtant peace with his neighbours.

Inſtead of increaſing the credit of the Nobility, he took all poſſible care to leſſen it. His Council was almoſt wholly compoſed of Churchmen and Lawyers, who being devoted to him, and aiming only to pleaſe him, never oppoſed his will. This unlimited compliance of his Council, was the cauſe of his entirely addicting himſelf to his natural paſſion of heaping up money, there being no perſon about him, that had boldneſs or conſcience enough to give him good advice upon that head. This conduct drew upon him the hatred of the *Engliſh*, which at firſt made him ſomething uneaſy, but when he had ſurmounted all his troubles, he regarded it not. On the contrary, he affected to rule with an abſolute power, making of his Council a Court of juſtice, where all the pleas of the Crown were decided, which had never been ſeen before.

He has been extremely praiſed for the good laws made in his Reign, as if he had been the ſole Legiſlator, and his Parliament no ways concerned. Hence perhaps was given him the glorious name of the *Solomon of England*, though he much more reſembled that Prince in the heavy yoke he laid on his people. But if theſe laws are carefully examined, it will doubtleſs be found that the King's intereſt was the true motive, though in appearance they ſeemed to be made for the good of the people. Thus did *William the Conqueror* formerly act, whom our *Henry* reſembled in ſo many things, that they may be very juſtly compared. In ſhort, *Henry*'s moſt diſtinguiſhing character was, that he lived entirely for himſelf, conſidered things only with reſpect to his own private intereſt, and regarded not any affairs where that was not concerned. Indeed, ſuch a character is not uncommon among Princes. But he had this in particular, that whereas the intereſt of other Princes is uſually divided into ſeveral branches, *Henry*'s was in a manner contained in one ſingle branch, namely, to have always full coffers.

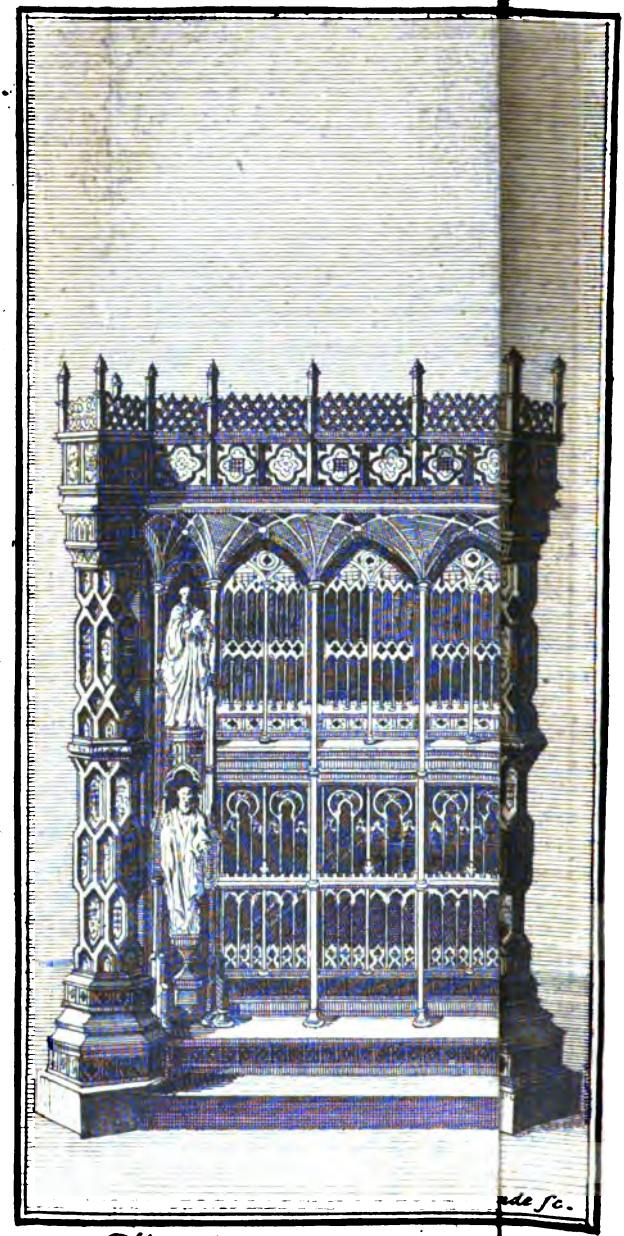
He was extremely ſuſpicious, as are generally thoſe who act by ſecret ways, becauſe they think all the world like themſelves. The Houſe of *York*'s title, and the people's opinion concerning it, filled his mind with fears and ſuſ-

picions, with which he was continually racked. It is true he took great care to conceal his uneaſineſs. But his conduct and precautions plainly demonſtrated, his mind was not as he would have had it thought to be, at reſt. This perpetual diſtruſt led him inceſſantly to ſeek means to prevent the dangers, in which he was not always ſucceſsful. Witneſs the report he cauſed to be ſpread that the Duke of *York* was alive, which had a quite contrary effect to what he expected. His genius was but mean. He ſaw better near than at a diſtance, and his wiſdom conſiſted more in extricating himſelf out of difficulties, than in finding means to avoid them. The chief troubles of his Reign may be ſaid to happen by his fault. However, he acquired, by a long experience, qualities which by nature he had not.

It is not ſurprizing that a Prince always intent upon preventing the Rebellion of his ſubjects, and continually employed in heaping up money, ſhould have performed nothing glorious for himſelf or the Kingdom. Conquerors do not always make the greateſt Kings. On the contrary, peace would have been very advantageous to the *Engliſh*, had it rendered them happy. But it was ſtill more fatal to them than war itſelf, ſince the King's inſatiable avarice inceſſantly carried him to deviſe means to accumulate riches, which could be done only at their expence. There are Princes that heap up money ſolely to diſperſe it; but *Henry* kept it carefully in his coffers, without any communication. Liberality was a virtue he did not pretend to. If he made any preſents, it was only to ſpies or informers.

As for his Religion and Morals, nothing certain can be affirmed, by reaſon of the contrarieties which met in him. He was chaſte, temperate, an enemy to open and ſcandalous vices, conſtant in the exerciſes of devotion, and obſerving ſtrict juſtice where his intereſt was not concerned. But on the other hand, his extreme avarice made him commit many injuſtices, and the fear of loſing his Crown, cauſed him to conſider as lawful, all means which could free him from that danger, how unjuſt ſoever they might be in other reſpects. The Earl of *Warwick's* death will be an everlaſting ſtain to his memory. His making a jeſt of Religion, in cauſing a ſolemn proceſſion to be made on purpoſe to ſhew that Prince to the people, and the excommunications he ordered to be pronounced againſt his own ſpies, are clear evidences that his Religion was not proof againſt his intereſt.

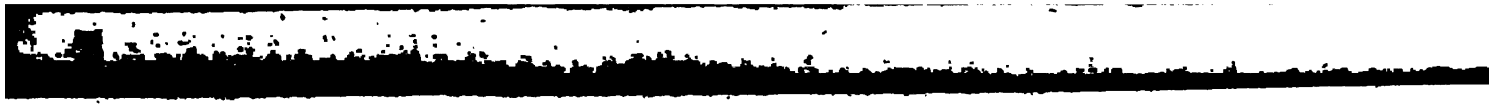
In general, it cannot be denied, this Prince had great abilities.



The Stately Monument of y.

The Monumen

J. Mynde sc.



But as theſe abilities centered only in himſelf, would have been more valuable in a private perſon a great Monarch. Though all his projects were ed with ſucceſs, his Reign cannot be ſaid to be happy, for himſelf or for *England*. He lived under continual and ſuſpicions, and his ſubjects were always expoſed to domeſtic troubles or oppreſſion. One thing renders Reign remarkable, namely, that by *Henry*'s abilities, wars, which had ſo long afflicted *England*, were at happily ended. I ſay happily, ſince it was very inent, with reſpect to the welfare of the *Engliſh*, whether the Kingdom was governed by a Prince of the Houſe of *ſter*, or a Prince of the Houſe of *York*.

ry VII. was of a ſerious temper, ever thoughtful and t upon his affairs, without being diverted by his pleaes, to which he was little addicted. He had a book rein he marked down with his own hand, the qualities characters of the perſons he knew, in order to employ upon occaſion. A Monkey that he kept in his chamhaving one day tore this note-book all to pieces, he apred grieved as at ſome very great loſs.

He was of ſtature taller than the common ſort. His face long, thin, and lean, like the reſt of his body, but thal very grave, which made people ſpeak to him with r. He could however be affable when his affairs required He was rather ſtudious than learned. What he read in leiſure hours was generally in *French*, though he underood *Latin* too.

By his Queen, *Elizabeth* of *York*, eldeſt daughter of King *Edward* IV, *Henry* had, four ſons; 1. *Arthur*, born *September* 20, 1486. He died *April* 2, 1502. 2. *Henry*, born *June* 28, 1491, who ſucceeded him. 3. *Edmund*, born *February* 21, 1498; he departed this life in 1499. 4. *Edward*, born *February* 1500, who died young. He had alſo four daughters; 1. *Margaret* born *November* 29, 1489, married, in 1503, to *James* IV. King of *Scotland*. 2. *Elizabeth*, born *July* 2, 1492; ſhe died *September* 14, 1495. 3. *Mary*, born in 1498, married *Lewis* XII. King of *France*. 4. *Catharine*, born *February* 2, 1503, died ſoon after.

A Deſcription of the Monument *of* HENRY VII.

His monument is a moſt magnificent mauſoleum, erected in the fine chapel, which he added to Weſtminſter-abbey.

It

It was made by Peter, a Florentine, for one thouſand pounds ſterling, and is all of wrought copper, which the artiſt obliged himſelf to find. It is allowed to be one of the fineſt pieces of workmanſhip in the world; as Lord Bacon confirms in his hiſtory of this Prince's reign, where he ſays, "That he lieth buried at Weſtminſter, in one of the ſtate-"lieſt and daintieſt monuments of Europe, both for the cha-"pel and for the ſepulchre; ſo that he dwelleth more richly "dead in the monument of his tomb, than he did alive in "*Richmond*, or any of his palaces."

On the ſouth ſide of this tomb, towards the top, and near the King's effigies, is this inſcription:

Hic jacet Henricus ejus nominis ſeptimus, Angliæ quondam Rex, Edmundi Richmondiæ comitis filius, qui die XXII. Auguſti Rex creatus, ſtatim poſt apud Weſtmonaſterium die XXX Octobris coronatur, Anno Domini 1485. Moritur deinde XXI die Aprilis Anno ætatis LIII. Regnavit annos XXIII. Menſes VIII minus uno die.

In Engliſh:

Here lies HENRY the ſeventh of that name, King of England, ſon of EDMUND Earl of Richmond, who being created King, Auguſt 22, was crowned the 30th of October following, in the year of our Lord 1485. He died April 21, in the fifty third year of his age, and reigned twenty three years and eight months, wanting one day.

On the north ſide of this monument on the left hand of this Prince's effigies, lies that of ELIZABETH his Queen, under which in a ſquare tablature is this epitaph:

Hic jacet Regina ELIZABETHA, EDWARDI quarti quondam Regis filia, EDWARDI quanti Regis quondam nominati ſoror, HENRICI ſeptimi olim Regis conjux, atque HENRICI octavi Regis mater inclyta. Obiit autem ſuum diem in turrim Londoniarum, Die II. Feb. Anno Domini 1502. 38 Annorum ætate functa.

In Engliſh:

Here lies Queen ELIZABETH, daughter of King EDWARD IV, ſiſter of King EDWARD V, wife of King HENRY VII, and renowned mother of King HEN-

HENRY VIII. She died Feb. 11. 1502, in the Tower of London, having compleated her thirty eighth year.

On the freeze of this monument beginning on the south side, at the head, are these Latin verses:

Septimus hic situs est Henricus, gloria Regum
Cunctorum, ipsius qui tempestate fuerunt.
Ingenio atque opibus, gestarum & nomine rerum,
Accessere quibus naturæ dona benignæ:
Frontis honos, facies augusta, heroica forma.
Junctaque ei suavis conjux, perpulchra, pudica,
Et fæcunda fuit: Fælices prole parentes,
Henricum quibus octavum terra Anglia debes.

In English:

Here lies HENRY the seventh, the glory of the Kings of his time, for wisdom, riches, and the fame of his great actions. To which nature had bounteously added her choicest gifts; elevation of aspect, majesty of feature, and dignity of form. He was joined in marriage to a consort equally affectionate, beautiful, chaste and fruitful. Happy parents in their offspring; to whom, England, you owe an HENRY VIII.

And about the Sacellum both within and without, are embossed these verses in old English characters:

Septimus Henricus tumulo requiescit in isto,
Qui Regum splendor, lumen & orbis erat;
Rex vigil, & sapiens, comis virtutis amator,
Egregius forma, strenuus atque potens:
Qui peperit pacem regno, qui bella peregit
Plurima, qui victor semper ab hoste redit;
Qui natas binis conjunxit regibus ambas,
Regibus & cunctis federe junctus erat:
Qui sacrum hoc struxit templum, statuit que sepulchrum
Pro se, poque sua conjuge, prole, domo.
Lustra decem atque annos tres plus compleverat annis,
Nam tribus octenis regia Sceptra tulit.
Quindecies Domini centenus fluxerat annus,
Currebat nonus, cum venit atra dies.
Septima ter mensis lux tum fulgebat Aprilis,
Cum clausit summum tanta corona diem.
Nulla dedere prius tantum tibi secula regem
Anglia, vix similem posteriora dabunt.

In

Ann. C.
1505. *Robert Fitzwalter*, Baron *Fitzwalter*, reſtored.
Nov. 3.
1506. *Charles Somerſet*, Baron *Herbert* of *Gower*.
Nov. 26.
1507. *William Conyers*, Baron *Conyers*.

Knights of the Garter elected in the Reign of King HENRY VII.

John Vere, Earl of *Oxford*.
Sir *Giles d'Aubeney*, afterwards Lord *d'Aubeney* (or *d'Aubigny*.)
Thomas Fitz-Alan, Earl of *Arundel*.
George Talbot, Earl of *Shrewsbury*.
John Wells, Viſcount *Wells*.
George Stanley, Lord *Strange*.
Sir *Edward Wydevil*, Knight Banneret.
John Dynham (or *Dinant*) Lord *Dynham*, Lord Treaſurer of *England*.
Maximilian, King of the *Romans*, afterwards Emperor of *Germany*.
Sir *John Savage*, Knight.
Sir *William Stanley*, Knight, Lord Chamberlain.
Sir *John Cheney*, Knight Banneret.
Alphonſus, Duke of *Calabria* and *Naples*, King of *Sicily* and *Jeruſalem*.
Arthur, Prince of *Wales*.
Thomas Grey, Marquiſs of *Dorſet*.
Henry Percy, Earl of *Northumberland*.
Henry Bourchier, Earl of *Eſſex*.
Sir *Charles Somerſet*, Knight Banneret, afterwards Earl of *Worceſter*, and Lord *Herbert*.
Robert Willoughby, Lord *Brook*.
Sir *Edward Poynings*, Knight.
Sir *Gilbert Talbot* of *Grafton*, Knight Banneret.
Sir *Richard Poole*.
Edward Strafford, Duke of *Buckingham*.
Henry, Duke of *York*, afterwards King of *England* of that name the VIIIth.
Edward Courtney, Earl of *Devonſhire*.
Sir *Richard Guilford*, Knight Banneret.
Edmund de la Pole, Earl of *Suffolk*.
Sir *Thomas Lovell*, Knight Banneret.
Sir *Reginald Bray*, Knight Banneret.

John

John, King of *Denmark*. *Ann. C.*
Guido Ubaldo, Duke of *Urbino*.
Gerald Fitz-Gerald, Earl of *Kildare*.
Henry Strafford, Lord *Strafford*, afterwards Earl of *Wiltſhire*.
Richard Grey, Earl of *Kent*.
Sir *Rys ap Thomas*, Knight Banneret.
Philip, King of *Caſtile*.
Sir *Thomas Branden*, Knight Banneret.
Charles, Arch-Duke of *Auſtria*, Prince of *Spain*, afterwards Emperor of *Germany*.

The State of the Church of the fifteenth Century.

IN the fifteenth century, the ignorance of all orders of men was extreme.

And the Clergy's chief care was to ſupport themſelves in that height of grandeur and power they were arrived to.

The learning, then in vogue, was principally School-Divinity, and the knowledge of the Canon-Law.

The *Engliſh* Nation in general paſſionately wiſhed for a reformation of ſundry abuſes crept into the Church.

King *Henry* IV. and V. proceed with great ſeverity againſt the *Lollards*. But the generality of the Nation were, notwithſtanding, great admirers of *John Wicleff*'s opinions.

A ſtatute is paſſed, enacting, That all perſons, who pur- 1400.
chaſed or put in execution any bulls to be diſcharged from the payment of tythes, ſhould incur the penalties contained in the ſtatute of Proviſors.

And another, That if any perſon ſhould accept a proviſion granted by the Pope, to be exempt from the juriſdiction or obedience of the Biſhops, he ſhould be within the danger of the ſtatute of Proviſors.

Pope *Martin* V. writes a ſevere letter to *Henry Chicheley* 1426.
Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, commanding him to uſe his utmoſt endeavours, that the ſtatute of Præmunire might be repealed. He writes alſo to King *Henry* VI. and the Parliament to the ſame purpoſe.

Pope *Nicholas* V. demanding an extraordinary ſubſidy of the Clergy of *England*, for the uſe of the Holy See, King *Henry* VI. orders it not to be paid.

King *Edward* IV. grants the Clergy a charter, prohibiting the Judges to meddle with criminal matters where the Clergy were concerned.

Ann. C. The Popes assume the power of bestowing Archbishoprics, Bishoprics, and other benefices in this Kingdom, by way of provision, which was a great grievance.

Within this century, were held the following Councils: That of *Pisa*, in 1409; that of *Constance*, in 1414; and that of *Basil*, in 1431.

The most considerable *English* Historians within this period, were:

Thomas de Walsingham; whose *Chronica*, or *Historia Brevis*, reaches from the year 1273, to 1422, and his *Ypodigma Neustriæ*, from the irruption of the *Normans* into *France* to the year 1418. He flourished about the year 1440.

John Harding; his two books of Chronicle in *English* rhime were printed at *London* in 1543, 8°. They extend from *Brute* to the Reign of King *Edward* IV.

John Rosse, or *Rous*, whose Chronicle was published by *T. Hearne*, in 1716, 8°.

BOOK XV.

The Reign of King HENRY VIII; *containing the space of* 37 *years*, 9 *months.*

20. HENRY VIII.

1509. *April* 22. KING *Henry* VIII. succeeds his Father, King *Henry* VII, at the age of 18 years, 10 months, and 6 days.

Reg. 1. Having in his younger years been designed for the Church, he was, for that reason, learned above the usual rate of persons of his high birth,

He was very handsome, and delighted in tournaments, and other bodily exercises, wherein he consumed a great deal of time and money.

April 25. He confirms the pardon granted by his Father before his decease: But, two days before, *Empson* and *Dudley* had been impeached, and committed to the *Tower*.

May 10. The body of King *Henry* VII. is interred in his own magnificent Chapel, adjoining to *Westminster* Abbey.

June 7. King *Henry* espouses *Catharine* of *Arragon*, his brother's widow, in virtue of the Pope's dispensation, though *William Warham*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, opposed it.

— 24. The King and Queen are crowned.

Margaret,

K. HENRY VIII
Vertue Sculp.

Margaret, Counteſs of *Richmond* and *Derby*, mother of King *Henry* VII, and Foundreſs of *Chriſt*'s and St. *John*'s Colleges at *Cambridge*, dies. *Ann. C.* — 29.

Richard Fox, Biſhop of *Vincheſter*, introduces *Thomas Wolſey* to Court, with a view to ſupplant his rival *Thomas Howard*, Earl of *Surrey*, then Lord-Treaſurer.

King *Henry* confirms the treaties with *Scotland* and the Emperor.

Chriſtopher Bambridge, Archbiſhop of *York*, is commiſſioned by the King to act as his Ambaſſador at *Rome*.

The *Venetians* are defeated at the battle of *Agnadel*, and Pope *Julius* II. makes a peace with them, not long after.

This year the plague raged in *England*.

King *Henry* the Seventh's Executors make reſtitution of many great ſums of money, extorted from ſeveral perſons by *Empſon* and *Dudley*.

Edmund Dudley, Eſq; being accuſed of High-treaſon, is tried at *Guild-Hall*, in *London*, and found guilty. *July* 16.

Sir *Richard Empſon*, being likewiſe tried for the ſame, at *Northampton*, is condemned. *Oct.* 1.

A Parliament meets at *Weſtminſter*, wherein *Empſon* and *Dudley* are attainted : 1510. *Jan.* 21.

And the benefit of forfeitures, for penal laws, is reduced to the term of three years next preceding.

A new treaty of Alliance is concluded between *England* and *France*. *Mar.* 23.

Pope *Julius* ſends King *Henry* a conſecrated roſe. *April* 10.

Ferdinand, King of *Arragon*, falls off from the league of *Cambray*, and concludes a treaty of Alliance with King *Henry*, wherein the latter is over-reached. *Reg.* 2. *May* 24.

Empſon and *Dudley* are beheaded on *Tower-Hill*. *Aug.* 17.

The Queen is brought to bed of a Prince, that was named *Henry*, but he died the 22d of *February* following. 1511. *Jan.* 1.

King *Ferdinand* engages King *Henry* in the league he was making with the Pope againſt *France* :

And obtains of him 1000 archers, under pretence of employing them againſt the *Moors*. *March* 8.

Chriſtopher Bambridge, Archbiſhop of *York*, is made a Cardinal for his pains, in endeavouring to ſet King *Henry* againſt *France*. — 11.

The Ducheſs of *Savoy*, Governeſs of the *Low-Countries*, deſires of King *Henry* an aid of 1500 archers, to be employed againſt the Duke of *Gelders*, which are accordingly ſent over. *Reg.* 3. *July*.

Commiſſioners are appointed to repair all the outrages

Ann. C. committed between *England* and *Scotland*, ſince the laſt peace:

But this good correſpondence is ſoon broken off, by means of one *Andrew Barton*, a *Scottiſh* ſubject, who, having committed hoſtilities in the Narrow Seas, is purſued and taken by two *Engliſh* ſhips; whereupon the King of *Scotland* ſends to demand reſtitution.

King *Henry* enters into a league with Pope *Julius* II, *Ferdinand*, King of *Arragon*, and the *Venetians*, againſt *France*.

Nov. 17. Shortly after, he concludes a private league with King *Ferdinand* for the conqueſt of *Guienne*, which was a fooliſh project.

1512. *Feb.* 4. A Parliament meets at *Weſtminſter*, wherein the King obtains two fifteenths from the Temporality, and two tenths from the Clergy, for the war with *France*.

At this Parliament *John Dudley*, ſon and heir of *Edmund Dudley*, lately attainted, is reſtored in blood.

— 9. The King ſends *Silveſter*, Biſhop of *Worceſter*, and Sir *Robert Wingfield*, as his Ambaſſadors to the Council of *Lateran*.

Reg. 4. *May.* He ſends alſo a fleet and an army to join King *Ferdinand* in the pretended conqueſt of *Guienne*: But *Ferdinand* makes uſe of them to conquer *Navarre* for himſelf, contrary to the deſign of the league.

— 22. *James* IV, King of *Scotland*, concludes a league with *France* againſt King *Henry*, and aſſembles an army on purpoſe to invade *England*; whereupon King *Henry* raiſes forces in the northern parts, for the Kingdom's defence.

Nov. 4. He alſo calls a Parliament, which, meeting on *Nov.* 4, grants him two fifteenths, and four demies, and a poll-tax, being ten marks on every Duke, and the reſt in proportion.

Decemb. The *Engliſh* fleet and army return from *Spain*, highly diſſatisfied with *Ferdinand*'s proceedings.

Pope *Julius* II. dies, and is ſucceeded by *Leo* X.

1513. *Feb.* 21. *March.* *April.* Hoſtilities againſt *France* having been commenced, the year foregoing, by making a deſcent on *Bretagne*, they are renewed, in the beginning of this, by making an unſucceſsful attempt upon the *French* fleet in the port of *Breſt*, wherein Sir *Edward Howard*, the *Engliſh* Admiral, is drowned.

Soon after, the *French*, on their part, land in *Suſſex*, and burn a few cottages.

— 5. A league is formed at *Mechlin* between Pope *Leo*, the Emperor *Maximilian*, King *Ferdinand*, and King *Henry*; wherein

wherein they agree to attack *France*, at once, from ſeveral quarters; but the aim of the three former was only to impoſe upon *Henry*, and make him ſubſervient to their deſigns. *Ann. C.*

For, at the ſame time, *Ferdinand* concludes a one year's truce with *France*, wherein he includes *Henry*, without his knowledge: The Pope does not ratify the treaty in time: And *Maximilian* excuſes himſelf from leading an army into *Burgundy*, according to his engagement; ſo that *Henry* is forced to act alone againſt *France*. *Reg.* 5.

Notwithſtanding, he makes great preparations for paſſing into *France*, with a numerous army.

But before his going over, he cauſes *Edmund de la Pole*, Earl of *Suffolk*, who was then a priſoner in the *Tower*, to be beheaded. — 30.

About this time, *Thomas Wolſey* becomes the King's Prime-Miniſter.

King *Henry* cauſes the beſt part of his army to paſs over to *Calais*. *May.*

They go and lay ſiege to *Terouenne*. *June* 22.

The King goes over to *Calais*, with the reſt of his army: — 30.

And repairs to the ſiege before *Terouenne*. *Aug.* 4.

The Emperor *Maximilian* comes and ſerves as a volunteer under him, receiving 100 crowns a day for his pay. — 12.

The *French* are routed at the ſkirmiſh of *Guinegaſte*, or *Battle of the Spurs*. — 16.

Terouenne, deſpairing of relief, ſurrenders, and, two days after, King *Henry* and the Emperor make their entrance in it. — 22.

King *Henry* delivers it to the Emperor, who immediately cauſes the greateſt part of it, with the fortifications, to be demoliſhed.

In the mean time, *James* IV, King of *Scotland*, having ſent King *Henry* a defiance, enters *England*, and takes *Norham*, and ſeveral other places.

He is defeated, and ſlain, at the battle of *Floddon-field*, or *Bramſtone*, and his body is conveyed to *Shene*, or *Richmond* in *Surrey*. *Sept.* 9.

Henry, having thus made himſelf maſter of *Terouenne*, goes and lays ſiege to *Tournay*, which capitulates, the 22d of the ſame month. The King reſolves to keep it. — 15.

A treaty is ſigned at *Lille*, between King *Henry*, *Margaret*, daughter of the Emperor *Maximilian*, Ducheſs Dowager of *Savoy*, and Governeſs of the *Netherlands*, and the Archduke, *Charles*, afterwards Emperor, by the name of *Charles* V. *Oct.* 15.

Ann. C. King *Henry* ſets out from *Lille*, and arrives *Octob.* 24,
— 17. at his Palace at *Richmond*.

King *Lewis* XII. concludes a peace with Pope *Leo* X.

1514. A Parliament meets at *Weſtminſter*, but did nothing re-
Jan. 3. markable.

Feb. 6. *Thomas Wolſey* is nominated Biſhop of *Lincoln*; and tranſlated, the 1ſt of *October* following, to the Archbiſhopric of *York*, upon the death of *Chriſtopher Bambridge*. He is alſo conſtituted Adminiſtrator of the See of *Tournay*.

James V, not quite two years old, is acknowledged King of *Scotland*, and his mother, *Margaret*, ſiſter to King
Reg. 6. *Henry* VIII, declared Regent whilſt ſhe remained a widow: But ſoon after, ſhe marrying again *Archibald Douglas* Earl of *Angus*, the *Scots* chuſe *John Stewart* Duke of *Albany* Regent.

May 19. King *Henry* receives a conſecrated ſword, and cap of maintenance, ſent him by the Pope.

Aug. 7. Three ſeveral treaties are concluded between *England* and *France*: 1. One of peace: 2. Another, concerning the marriage of *Lewis* XII. with *Mary*, third ſiſter to King *Henry* VIII: 3. And a third, whereby King *Lewis* engaged to pay King *Henry* a million of crowns yearly.

The Pope and King *Ferdinand* oppoſed thoſe treaties.

The Princeſs *Mary* having been pre engaged to the Archduke *Charles* of *Auſtria*, ſhe proteſts againſt that engagement, before the ſigning of the ſecond treaty.

Oct. 9. The marriage between her and King *Lewis* XII. is conſummated.

Nov. 5. She is crowned Queen of *France*. One of her maids and attendants was Mrs *Anne Boleyn*, afterwards Queen of *England*.

1515. *Lewis*, King of *France*, dies, and is ſucceeded by *Fran-*
Jan. 1. *cis* I.

Feb. 5. A Parliament meets at *Weſtminſter*, wherein, among other ſtatutes, one was enacted againſt exporting unwrought wool out of the Kingdom.

April 5. The Alliance between *England* and *France* is confirmed by a new treaty, in which the *Scots* are included.

Reg. 7. *Mary*, Queen-Dowager of *France*, having been privately married to *Charles Brandon*, Duke of *Suffolk*, is publicly
May 13. married to him.

Thomas Wolſey endeavours to cauſe King *Henry* to enter into a new league againſt *France*, out of revenge, becauſe the Adminiſtration of the See of *Tournay* was taken from him by the King of *France*'s means.

But

But this King, to content him, promiſes to procure him, if poſſible, a Cardinal's Hat. *An. C.*

Wolſey is accordingly made a Cardinal. *Septemb.*

King *Henry* renews the Alliance between *England* and *Spain*, and reſolves privately to aſſiſt the Emperor and Duke of *Milan* againſt *France*.

The Parliament meets at *Weſtminſter*: And, in a Synod held about the ſame time, the Clergy excuſe themſelves from granting an extraordinary ſubſidy, demanded by the Pope. *Nov.* 12.

William Warham, Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, reſigns the Great Seal. It is given to Cardinal *Wolſey*, whoſe extreme pride gives great offence: The King loads him with favours. *Dec.* 22.

Ferdinand, King of *Arragon*, dies, and is ſucceeded by *Charles*, Archduke of *Auſtria*. *Ferdinand* left the title of Catholic to his Succeſſors. 1516. *February.*

The Princeſs *Mary*, afterwards Queen of *England*, is born. — 18.

King *Henry* tries to have the Duke of *Albany* removed from the Regency of *Scotland*, and claims it, as uncle to the young King. *Reg.* 8.

But this project, as alſo that of bringing the young King into *England*, miſcarrying, King *Henry* is ſatisfied with concluding a truce with *Scotland*. *June.*

The Emperor pretends to be willing to reſign the Empire to King *Henry*, in order to attach him to his intereſt; but *Henry* deſires him to put it off, till the *French* were expelled out of *Italy*.

A defenſive league is concluded at *London*, between the Emperor and the Kings of *England* and *Spain*. *Oct.* 29.

The Council of *Lateran* undertakes to reform the Calendar.

The Emperor *Maximilian* concludes a league with the Kings of *France* and *Spain*, againſt the *Turks*. 1517.

Pope *Leo* X. ſets up a mart for indulgences, under pretence of the war with the *Turks*, but really to enrich himſelf.

Martin Luther, an *Auguſtin* Frier, at *Wirtemberg*, preaches againſt thoſe indulgences, which gives the firſt riſe to the Reformation.

The Pope demands of King *Henry* 200,000 ducats for the pretended war againſt the Infidels, which the King refuſed to grant him; but he levies a tenth upon the Clergy.

Maximi-

Ann. C. *Maximilian* feigns again to be willing to reſign the Empire to King *Henry*.

This year there was a great drought, from the beginning of *September*, till the middle of *May* following.

And the ſweating-ſickneſs raged alſo in *England*.

1518. Negotiations are carried on between King *Francis* I. and Cardinal *Wolſey*, about the reſtoring of *Tournay* to *France*: And it was accordingly reſtored the 8th of *February* following.

Reg. 9. *May.* *June.* *July.* The Pope ſends Cardinal *Campejus* as his Legate *à latere* into *England*, to ſollicit King *Henry* to a war againſt the *Turk*. Cardinal *Wolſey* gets himſelf joined in the Legateſhip. And

Oct. 2. A league is concluded between *England* and *France* againſt the *Turks*.

Oct. 14. Four treaties are ſigned between *England* and *France*: By the 1ſt, the Princeſs *Mary* was to be married to the Dauphin, as ſoon as he was 14 years old. The 2d was about the reſtitution of *Tournay*, &c.

Dec. 21. The Princeſs *Mary* is affianced to the Dauphin.

— 31. Pope *Leo* ratifies the league entered into by the Emperor and the Kings of *France* and *Spain*, againſt the *Turk*.

This year the College of Phyſicians in *London* was founded.

1519. *Maximilian* I. Emperor of *Germany*, dies.

Jan. 12. *Reg.* 10. King *Francis* I. and *Henry* VIII. are Competitors for the Empire: But *Charles* V. King of *Spain*, is choſen.

June 28. Jealouſies and diſputes ariſe between *Charles* and *Francis*, which occaſion afterwards bloody wars. Each of them endeavours to gain King *Henry* to their intereſt, through *Wolſey*'s means, whom they careſs extremely.

Wolſey cauſes *Campejus* to be recalled, and himſelf appointed ſole Legate, with power to viſit the Clergy and Monaſteries. He erects alſo the Legate's Court:

Nay, he has the confidence to aſpire to the Papacy, through the Emperor's intereſt, who promiſes it him.

King *Francis* makes a private treaty with King *Henry*, wherein he engages to detain in *France* the Duke of *Albany* Regent of *Scotland*.

This year, *Mexico* and *New Spain* were diſcovered by *Hernando Cortes*.

1520. The King of *France* makes an overture to Cardinal *Wolſey*, about the reſtoring of *Calais*, and the other towns in the *Engliſh* pale, for a ſum of money. But *Wolſey* dares

Reg. 11. not propoſe the affair to the King his Maſter.

May 26. The Emperor *Charles* V. arrives unexpectedly at *Dover*: King

King *Henry* meets him there, and promiſes him not to enter into any engagement with the King of *France* to his prejudice. The treaty of commerce between *England* and *Germany* is alſo now renewed. *Ann. C.*

Charles embarks for *Flanders*. — 30.

King *Henry* paſſes over to *Calais*: And

Hath an interview with the King of *France*, between *Ardres* and *Guiſnes*. *May* 31. *June* 4.

A treaty relating to the Princeſs *Mary* is concluded between thoſe two Princes. — 24. — 6.

King *Henry* pays the Emperor a viſit at *Graveling*: Which the Emperor returns the next day, at *Calais*. *July* 10.

The Pope grants Cardinal *Wolſey* a penſion upon the Biſhoprie of *Palencia*, and conſtitutes him perpetual Adminiſtrator of the See of *Badajos*, in *Spain*. — 29.

Charles V, Emperor of *Germany*, is crowned. *Oct.* 21.

The truce between *England* and *Scotland* is prolonged to the 9th of *April* following.

Pope *Leo* excommunicates *Luther*, who appeals again to a Council. Thereupon, the Pope deſires the Elector of *Saxony* to put him to death, or ſend him to *Rome*, but the Elector refuſes it.

The Emperor aſſembles a Diet at *Worms*, to which *Luther* was ſummoned, and appears; but refuſing to retract his opinions, he is proſcribed. 1521. *Apr.* 16. *May* 8.

King *Francis* ſeizes *Navarre*, but is again ſoon diſpoſſeſſed of it. However, he raiſes the Emperor ſeveral enemies in the *Low-Countries*, and *Italy*. *Reg.* 12.

Thereupon *Charles* requires King *Henry* to aſſiſt him againſt the *French*, in purſuance of the league of *London*.

Cardinal *Wolſey*'s Legateſhip is prolonged for two years: And he gets the Abbey of *St. Albans in commendam*. He alſo procures a bull from the Pope, impowering him to make Knights, Count Palatines, *&c.* legitimate Baſtards, give Degrees, *&c.* *April.*

By his procurement, *Edward Stafford*, Duke of *Buckingham*, is committed to the *Tower*, for High-treaſon: *Apr.* 16.

And beheaded. *May.* 17.

King *Henry* writes his book *Of the ſeven Sacraments* againſt *Luther*: For which the Pope confers on him the title of *Defender of the Faith*.

The Emperor preparing to attack *France* from ſeveral quarters, King *Francis* makes a repreſentation of his caſe to King *Henry*, who does not chuſe to act for either, otherwiſe than as Umpire.

His

Ann. C. His mediation being accepted, a Congreſs is appointed at
July 20. *Calais*, where Cardinal *VVolſey* goes on the behalf of his
Aug. 4. Maſter the King of *England*.

But he does not act as an impartial Mediator; for, eight
— 12. days after the opening of the Congreſs, he goes to *Bruges*, where he joins in a league between the Pope, the Emperor, and the King of *England*, againſt *France*. And the Princeſs *Mary* (though before engaged to the Dauphin) is promiſed to the Emperor.

Septemb. An inſignificant treaty is concluded between *England* and
October. *France*.

Oct. 30. The Duke of *Albany* is permitted by the King of *France* to return to *Scotland* after a four years abſence, and reſumes the Regency.

Nov. 24. The league between the Pope, Emperor, and King *Henry*, is finally agreed upon.

— 27. Cardinal *VVolſey* returns to *England*.

This year, in the wars between the *French* and Imperialiſts, muſquets were firſt uſed.

Dec. 1. Pope *Leo* X. dies; whereupon *VVolſey* (relying upon the Emperor's promiſe) uſes his utmoſt endeavours to ſucceed
1522. him. But, notwithſtanding, *Adrian* VI. is choſen through
Jan. 9. the Emperor's intereſt, to whom he had been Preceptor.

Feb. 2. The King's title of *Defender of the Faith* is made public.

February. King *Henry* endeavours to force the Duke of *Albany* out of *Scotland*, wherein he ſucceeds at length, and concludes a truce with that Kingdom.

March. Then he declares war againſt *France:* And puts out a
April. ſtrong fleet to ſea, to ſecure the trade.

Reg. 14. For the ſupport of this war, a loan of the tenth part of lands, ſtocks, moveables, and money, is exacted from the Laity; and a fourth from the Clergy: Beſides 20,000 *l.* borrowed of the City of *London*. But the *London* Merchants oppoſe this tax.

May 26. The Emperor, in his way to *Spain*, arrives at *Dover*,
June 6. and comes to *London*, where he is received with great reſpect.

— 19. He is inſtalled, in perſon, Knight of the Garter, at *Windſor*. His brother *Ferdinand*, afterwards Emperor, was elected into the ſame noble Order, the 23d of *April* foregoing.

Charles and *Henry* ſwear to obſerve the league of *Bruges:* And *Henry* lends *Charles* a great ſum of money.

— 8. The Earl of *Surrey* is conſtituted the Emperor's Admiral:

He

He lands twice in *Bretagne*, burns *Morlaix*, and brings away great booty. *Ann. C. June.*

The Emperor embarks at *Southampton*, in his way to *Spain*. *July.* — 6.

The *Engliſh* forces go and join the Emperor's, in the *Netherlands*, but do nothing conſiderable. *Auguſt. Septemb.*

Rhodes is taken by the *Turks*. *October.*

Cardinal *Wolſey* obtains the Biſhopric of *Durham*, vacant by the death of *T. Ruthal*, and reſigns the See of *Bath* and *Wells*: His Legateſhip is alſo prolonged. *Dec.* 25. 1523. *Mar.* 24.

A Parliament meets at the *Black-Friers*, which grants the King a ſubſidy of 2 *s.* in the pound (for four years) from every man worth 20 *l.* a year, and ſo downwards, in proportion: But thoſe of 50 *l.* and upwards, were to pay 3 *s.* in the pound. *April* 15. *Reg.* 15.

The Convocation, which met at the ſame time, grants alſo a ſubſidy of one half of their annual revenues, payable in five years.

An act of attainder is paſſed againſt the late Duke of *Buckingham*, but his ſon, *Henry Stafford*, is reſtored in blood.

Chriſtiern II, King of *Denmark* and *Sweden*, being expelled his Dominions, arrives in *England*, and the Alliance between this Kingdom and *Denmark* is renewed. *June* 15.

The *Engliſh* take *Jedworth*, and make frequent incurſions in *Scotland*. King *Henry* endeavours at the ſame time to have the Duke of *Albany* removed, and his ſiſter, the Queen Dowager, made Regent.

To diſengage the *Scots* from *France*, he promiſes to give his daughter *Mary* in marriage to their young King.

An *Engliſh* army, commanded by the Duke of *Suffolk*, paſſes over to *Calais*, and takes ſeveral places in *France*. *Aug.* 24.

Charles, Duke of *Bourbon*, Conſtable of *France*, being diſguſted, eſpouſes the Emperor's intereſt, and takes the command of one of his armies. *Septemb.*

Pope *Adrian* VI. dies. Cardinal *Wolſey* endeavours again to obtain the Papacy; but *Julio de Medici*, who took the name of *Clement* VII, is choſen, *Nov.* 19. *Sept.* 14.

The Duke of *Albany* lands in *Scotland*, and invades *England*; but a truce is concluded ſoon after. — 21.

King *Henry* cauſes the ſubſidy lately granted him, and payable in four years, to be paid at once. *October.*

Cardinal *Wolſey* forms, this year, the deſign of founding *Chriſt-Church* College in *Oxford*, and another College at *Ipſwich*, his native place.

Luther

Ann. C. *Luther* anſwers King *Henry*'s book, and the Reformation makes a great progreſs in *Germany*.

1524. Pope *Clement* VII. confirms King *Henry*'s title of *De-*
March 5. *fender of the Faith.*
Reg. 16. The Duke of *Bourbon* ſwears to acknowledge *Henry* King of *France*.

July 2. He enters *Provence*, and takes ſeveral places; King *Henry* furniſhing him with 124,000 crowns a month, till he acted himſelf in *Picardy*.

— 29. *James* V, King of *Scotland*, takes the reins of the Government, and the Earls of *Angus*, *Lenox*, and *Argile*, are conſtituted Regents under him.

The truce between *England* and *Scotland* is prolonged to the 26th of *January*, 1525.

Aug. 8. A bull is granted to Cardinal *Wolſey*, impowering him to viſit all the Religious Houſes, notwithſtanding their immunities.

Sept. 11. By another, he is authorized to ſuppreſs ſmall Monaſteries, to the yearly value of 3000 ducats, and to endow his two Colleges with their revenues.

King *Henry* begins to alter his meaſures, through *Wolſey*'s perſuaſion, and to join with *France* againſt the Emperor.

Turkeys, Carps, Hops, Pickarel, and Beer,
Were firſt brought into *England*, this year.

1525. King *Francis* I. is defeated before *Pavia*, and taken
Feb. 24. priſoner. He is carried to *Madrid*, and impriſoned in the Caſtle there.

March. There being a treaty of marriage on foot between the King of *Scotland* and the Princeſs *Mary*, the Emperor, to whom ſhe was promiſed before, ſends to demand her, with her dowry; but is refuſed.

Reg. 17. King *Henry* being determined to break with the Emperor, and ſave *France* from certain ruin, ſends Ambaſſadors to *Spain*, to make ſeveral extraordinary demands upon the Emperor, which he was pretty ſure would not be granted.

To ſupport the charge of a war with the Emperor, Cardinal *Wolſey* ſends Commiſſions, and appoints Commiſſioners, in every Shire, to levy the ſixth part of every Lay-man's goods, and the fourth of the Clergy's.

But theſe being ſtrongly oppoſed, as illegal, the King diſavows them, and demands a benevolence, which occaſions an inſurrection in *Suffolk*; however, it is ſoon appeaſed: But ſo many complaints were brought againſt *Wolſey*, that he was very near being diſgraced.

Notwith-

Notwithſtanding, he finds means to appeaſe the King, and makes him a preſent of his ſtately Palace at *Hampton-Court*. *Ann. C.*

Five treaties are ſigned at *Moore*, between *England* and *France*, including a defenſive league between thoſe two Kingdoms. *Aug.* 30.

Peru is diſcovered by *Franciſco Picarro*.

M. Luther ſends an apology to King *Henry*, for his diſreſpectful anſwer to that King's book.

A treaty is concluded, at *Madrid*, between the Emperor and the King of *France*. 1526. *Jan.* 14.

King *Francis* is releaſed, but does not perform the treaty of *Madrid*, being diſpenſed by the Pope: On the contrary, he enters into a league, at *Cognac*, with the Pope, the Duke of *Milan*, and the *Venetians*, againſt the Emperor. *Mar.* 10. *Reg.* 18. *May* 22.

He ratifies the treaty of *Moore*, as ſoon as he is at liberty: *Aug.* 8.

And concludes another private treaty with King *Henry*.

The Pope and the *Venetians*, relying on the aſſiſtance of *England* and *France*, take the field againſt the Emperor; but the family of *Colonna* declaring againſt the Pope, enter *Rome*, ſack part of it, and oblige the Pope to ſhut himſelf up in the Caſtle of *St. Angelo*. *Sept.* 19, 20.

Whereupon the Pope makes a truce with the Emperor, and pretends to go to *Spain*, in order to procure the peace of *Europe*; but, to divert him from that journey, King *Henry* ſends him a ſum of money.

King *Francis* deceives the Pope and the *Venetians*, as well as the Emperor, who calls him knave and villain.

Lewis II, King of *Hungary*, is defeated at the battle of *Mohatz*, by *Soliman*, Emperor of the *Turks*.

Cardinal *Wolſey* obtains a grant of ſeveral ſmall Monaſteries, to be ſuppreſſed, and the revenues applied to his Colleges.

This year, the New Teſtament was firſt publiſhed in *Engliſh*, by *W. Tyndall*.

The Kings of *England* and *France* do not perform their part, as ſtipulated by the league of *Cognac*; but endeavour to throw the whole burden of the war upon the Pope and the *Venetians*. 1527.

Whereupon the Pope concludes a truce with the Viceroy of *Naples*, who was making war upon him; and diſbands two armies which he had on foot. *Reg.* 19.

King *Henry* makes a league offenſive and defenſive with *France*, compriſed in three treaties. *April* 30.

The

Ann. C. The Duke of *Bourbon* comes before *Rome*, and attacks
May 5. that City; but is ſlain, in the beginning of the aſſault.
— 12. However, his army continuing the attack, enter *Rome*, which they ravage and plunder for about ſeven days, in a barbarous and mercileſs manner.

The Pope retires to the Caſtle of *St. Angelo*, where he is kept priſoner.

During his impriſonment there, King *Henry* began to have uneaſy ſcruples about his marriage with *Catharine* of *Arragon*; ſuggeſted to him by *Gabriel d'Aigremont*, Biſhop of *Tarbe*, one of the *French* Plenipotentiaries for the league concluded in *April* this year.

June 6. Pope *Clement* capitulates with the Imperial army. King *Henry* being determined to proclaim war againſt the Emperor, ſends to demand of him half of the booty taken at *Pavia*, &c.

July. Cardinal *Wolſey* goes and confers with King *Francis* at *Amiens*:

Aug. 18. And ſigns with him three treaties, being ſupplements or explanations of the foregoing ones.

Dr. *William Knight*, Secretary of State, is ſent to *Rome*, to ſue for the King's divorce. The Pope promiſes him to do what *Henry* deſired; but he finds means to delay the performance of his promiſe, and to gain time.

Sept. 24. The Pope and Cardinals, confined in the Caſtle of *St. Angelo*, write to King *Henry*, and deſire his protection and aſſiſtance for their releaſe.

Cardinal *Wolſey* returns to *England* from *Amiens*.

The Emperor tries to ſet the Kings of *England* and *France* at variance.

October. King *Henry* ſends *Francis* the order of the Garter, as
Novemb. *Francis* had ſent him before the order of *St. Michael*.
Oct. 31. A treaty is concluded for the Pope's liberty:
Dec. 9. But the night before he was to be releaſed, he eſcapes in diſguiſe, and goes and ſhuts himſelf up in *Orvieto*.

1528. The Kings of *England* and *France* declare war againſt
Jan. 22. the Emperor; but the Pope refuſes to join with them.
Mar. 28. *Francis* ſends the Emperor a challenge, wherein he gives
Reg. 20. him the lie in form, though diſſuaded from it by our King: In *June* following, the Emperor ſends a ſharp reply to *Francis*'s challenge.

April. The declaration of war againſt the Emperor, occaſions
May. a mutiny among the clothiers, who were great loſers by the war; but they are made eaſy, by a truce between *England* and the *Low-Countries*, ſigned *June* 8, this year.

Pope *Clement* grants Cardinal *Wolſey* a Commiſſion to determine the King's divorce; with a bull decretal pronouncing the marriage void; and a diſpenſation for *Henry* to marry again. *Ann. C.*

But the Commiſſion being null, becauſe dated whilſt the Pope was a priſoner, King *Henry* ſends *Stephen Gardiner*, then *Wolſey*'s Secretary, and *Edward Fox* to *Rome*, to obtain new bulls. *March.* *April.*

The Pope, between the fear of diſobliging the Emperor and King *Henry*, knows not how to act.

At length he ſigns a bull, appointing *VVolſey* judge of the cauſe, jointly with the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, or any other Prelate. — 13.

The King deſiring another Legate to be joined in the Commiſſion with *VVolſey*, *Lorenzo Campegio*, Cardinal Biſhop of *Salisbury*, is accordingly appointed. *June* 6.

By many artful delays, he does not arrive in *England* till *October*.

In the mean time, the Emperor's Agents at *Rome* raiſe a freſh obſtacle to the divorce, by producing a forged brief of Pope *Julius* II.

Pope *Clement* being then negotiating a treaty with the Emperor, ſends orders to *Campegio* to burn a bull decretal he had given him, and to defer the ſentence of the divorce as long as poſſible.

King *Henry* tired with repeated delays, diſpatches Sir *Francis Brian* and *Peter Vannes* to *Rome*, to diſcover the true cauſe.

They threaten the Pope, That if he did not give King *Henry* the ſatisfaction he deſired, *England* would be loſt to him: And ſend the King word, That nothing was to be expected from the Pope, and the only way was to cauſe the Legates to give a ſpeedy ſentence.

A five years truce between *England* and *Scotland* is ſigned. *Dec.* 14.

The name of Proteſtant was firſt uſed this year.

Pope *Clement* falling ill, Cardinal *VVolſey* makes great intereſt for the Papacy, and is ſupported by the Kings of *England* and *France*: But *Clement* recovers. 1529.

He makes uſe of ſeveral devices to put off the affair of the divorce, till he had concluded a peace with the Emperor. And particularly gives King *Henry* hope, that the matter ſhould be decided in *England*, by a ſentence of the Legates, which he would himſelf confirm. He engages alſo not to revoke the powers given to the Legates. *Reg.* 21.

Ann. C. *WWolſey* obtains the Biſhopric of *WWincheſter*, vacant by the death of *Richard Fox*.

May 15. The Emperor, *Charles* V, proteſts, in Queen *Catharine's* name, againſt whatever ſhould be done in *England*, in the affair of the divorce.

King *Henry* being afraid the proceſs ſhould be removed to *Rome*, comes to a reſolution to have the affair determined before the Legates.

— 31. For that purpoſe, he grants them a licenſe to execute the Pope's Commiſſion.

They meet the ſame day, and adjourn to the 18th of *June*, when the King and Queen are cited to appear.

June, July. The whole Proceſs is carried on before them, in about the ſpace of five weeks.

June 25. The Queen, inſtead of appearing, appeals to the Pope.

In the mean time, the Emperor's Miniſters were preſſing the Pope to avocate the cauſe to *Rome*; and *Henry's*, ſolliciting him to the contrary.

— 29. At length, *Clement* having received advice of the con-

July 15. cluſion of the treaty between the Emperor and himſelf, ſigns the bull of avocation, and, three days after, ſends it into *England*.

— 23. Cardinal *Campegio*, inſtead of pronouncing the ſentence of divorce, at the end of the proceſs, adjourns the Court to the 1ſt of *October* following.

Aug. 4. The bull of avocation arrives in *England*, wherein King *Henry* was cited to appear at *Rome*, within 40 days; and cenſures were denounced againſt him, if he did not comply.

— 5. A treaty of peace is ſigned at *Cambray*, between the Emperor *Charles* V. and King *Francis* I.

Cardinal *WWolſey* not having puſhed on the affair of the divorce ſo warmly as the King could have wiſhed, his Majeſty takes thence a prejudice againſt him, which proved, ſoon after, the cauſe of his ruin.

Full of uneaſineſs at the repeated delays he met with in his divorce, King *Henry* takes a progreſs in ſome Counties: During which, *Thomas Cranmer* ſuggeſts to ſome of his attendants the expedient, of procuring in writing the opinions of all the Univerſities in *Europe*, and of the moſt eminent Divines and Civilians.

From that time, *Cranmer* is taken into the King's favour, and ordered to follow the Court.

Cardinal *Campegio* returns to *Rome*: Before he imbarks, his baggage is ſearched, for which he complains in vain.

Oct. 9. Cardinal *WWolſey* is indicted upon the ſtatute of 16 *Richard*

II,

II, for obtaining bulls from Pope *Clement* VII, by which he exerciſed juriſdiction and authority Legatine, to the deprivation of the King's power eſtabliſhed in the Courts of Juſtice:——And for aſſuming to himſelf thereupon the dignity and juriſdiction of *Legatus de latere*. *Ann. C.*

This being proved, the Court declares, that the Cardinal was out of the King's protection, and his lands and chattels forfeited, and that he might be impriſoned. — 28.

The Great Seal is taken from him, and given to Sir *Thomas More*. — 18.

He is ordered to leave *York-place*, and retires to his houſe at *Eſher* in *Surrey*; and an inventory is taken of his goods, which are ſeized.

He is condemned in the Star-Chamber, by a Council of the Nobility.

A Parliament meets at the *Black-Friers*, wherein 44 articles are exhibited againſt *Wolſey*: When they were ſent down to the Commons, the Cardinal's Servant, *Thomas Cromwell*, then a Member of that Houſe, and afterwards Earl of *Eſſex*, cleared his Maſter of the Treaſon, in ſo handſome and able a manner, that this was one of the principal cauſes of his future advancement. *Nov.* 3.

Notwithſtanding *Wolſey*'s diſgrace, the King grants him his protection, and leaves him the Archbiſhopric of *York*, and the See of *Winchester*. — 17.

He ſends him likewiſe, at two different times, gracious meſſages, and two rings.

Wolſey's misfortunes throw him into a violent illneſs; at which the King is ſo moved, that he ſends him ſeveral tokens, as doth likewiſe Mrs. *Ann Boleyn*.

King *Henry* ſeals a general pardon for him, and ſends him money, plate, and a great deal of rich furniture. 1530. *Feb.* 12.

He reſtores alſo to him the Archbiſhopric of *York*, by Letters Patents: But reſerves to himſelf the See of *Winchester*, and the Abbey of *St. Albans*, allowing the Cardinal out of the former 1000 marks *per annum*, and the uſe of *Richmond* Palace.

Wolſey uſed his utmoſt endeavours to ſave his two Colleges, but the King takes poſſeſſion of the lands belonging to them: And orders him to repair to his Dioceſe of *York*.

The Emperor *Charles* V. receives the Imperial Crown from the Pope's hands, at *Bologna*. — 24.

He ſets out from thence for *Germany*, in order to take meaſures againſt the Proteſtants. *Mar.* 22. *Reg.* 22.

Ann. C. King *Francis*'s two ſons, who were hoſtages in *Spain*,
June 1. are releaſed by the Emperor.

King *Henry* purſues at *Rome* the buſineſs of the Divorce.

Thomas Cranmer writes about it, and goes with the King's Ambaſſadors to the Pope, who makes him his Penientiary in *England*.

Moſt of the Univerſities in *Europe* being conſulted about it, decide in favour of the King. *Oxford* and *Cambridge* make the greateſt ſcruple.

July 13. Several of the Nobility and Gentry write a letter to the Pope, wherein they repreſent to him, That if he did not annul the King's former marriage, they would take care of themſelves, and ſubſtract their obedience from him.

Thereupon, *Clement* propoſes, to give the King a diſpenſation to marry two wives: But *Henry* rejects that propoſal, and determines to bring the affair before the Parliament and Convocation, and after gaining their conſent, to cauſe it to be decided in *England*.

Sept. 19. He iſſues out a Proclamation, forbidding to receive any bull from *Rome*, contrary to the prerogatives of the Crown.

He publiſhes his reaſons for the divorce.

Septemb. Cardinal *Wolſey*, in compliance with the King's orders, retires to his Dioceſe of *York*, and comes to *Cawood* about the end of *September*.

But having, during his diſgrace, written letters to the Pope and other Princes, reflecting on King *Henry* and ſtirring them to revenge;

Nov. 4. He is therefore arreſted for High-Treaſon:

And conducted by eaſy journies towards *London*. But being ſeized, by the way, with a dyſentery and fever,

— 29. He dies in *Leiceſter-Abbey*.

And was buried in the Chapel of that Monaſtery, which is now totally demoliſhed.

The King expreſſes a great concern for his death.

The Emperor holds this year a Diet at *Augsburg*, wherein he takes meaſures for deſtroying the Proteſtants:

Dec. 22. But they conclude a defenſive league, at *Smalcald*, againſt all who ſhould attack them on account of religion.

1531. The Parliament, which had been prorogued, meets a-
Jan. 6. gain.

The whole Clergy being fallen into a *Præmunire* for acknowledging and ſupporting Cardinal *Wolſey*'s legatine authority, an information is, for the ſame, exhibited in the King's Bench againſt the Spiritual Lords.

But before their day of appearance, the Convocation a-

grees to preſent an humble ſubmiſſion in writing to the King, wherein they give him the title of *Protector and ſupreme Head of the Church and Clergy of* England, *quantum per Chriſti legem licet.*——And offer him 100,000 *l.* of the Province of *Canterbury* (18,840 *l.* being afterwards given by the Province *York*) for a pardon, by Act of Parliament, of all offences touching the *Præmunire.* Which the Clergy accordingly obtain. *Ann. C.*

The King grants likewiſe the Laity a pardon for all offences againſt the ſtatutes of Proviſors, Proviſions, and Præmunire, as he had done to the Clergy.

But the Colleges and Monaſteries not being included in the pardons, are forced to compound with the King.

King *Henry* communicates to the Parliament the determinations of the Univerſities concerning his divorce, and above 100 treatiſes upon the ſame ſubject. *Mar.* 30.

The determinations are publiſhed ſoon after.

The Convocation declares, That the King's marriage was contrary to the law of God. *Reg.* 23.

The King ſends ſome Lords of his Council to the Queen, to ask her, Whether ſhe would, for the quietneſs of the King's conſcience, leave the matter to four Biſhops, and four Temporal Lords of this Realm, or abide by her appeal: She chuſes the latter. *May* 31.

King *Henry* takes leave of her at *Windſor*, and never ſees her more. *July* 14.

Pope *Clement* is at a loſs how to act at this juncture, but diſſembles his ſentiments.

Two Proteſtants, namely, *Thomas Bilney*, B. L. and —— *Bayfield*, are burnt in *Smithfield*. *Aug.* 19. *Nov.* 27.

King *Henry* ſends 50,000 crowns to *Germany*, to aſſiſt the Proteſtant league.

This year, he takes into his hands the Hoſpital of *St. James*, and builds there a Palace; incloſing alſo round it a Park, which ſerved both for that Palace and that of *Whitehall*.

The Parliament meets again; and the Commons complain of the oath *Ex Officio*, and other grievances from the Pope and his Votaries here. 1532. *Jan.* 15.

Pope *Clement* writes a letter to King *Henry*, to perſuade him to take Queen *Catharine* again. —— 25.

The King ſends Sir *Edward Karne* to *Rome* as his Excuſator. *February.*

In this Parliament it is enacted, That no perſon in orders, convict of murther, *&c.* ſhall make his purgation

Ann. C. before the Ordinary, without being bound, with good ſureties for his good behaviour:

That feofments of lands to the uſe of Pariſh Churches,

Reg. 24. *&c.* ſhould be void:

That annates, or firſt-fruits, ſhould be no longer paid to the Pope.

This Parliament grants the King a fifteenth; and then is prorogued to the 4th of *February* following.

May 16. Sir *Thomas More*, uneaſy at the proceedings againſt the Court of *Rome*, reſigns the Great Seal.

June 4. *Thomas Audley*, Speaker of the Houſe of Commons, is knighted, and made Keeper of the Great Seal; and the 26th of *January* following conſtituted Lord Chancellor.

July. The Priory of the *Holy Trinity*, or *Chriſt*'s Church in *London*, is ſuppreſſed by the King, and their plate and lands given to Sir *Thomas Audley*; the Canons being ſent to other Priories.

Aug. 23. *William Warham*, Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, dies; and the eminent *Thomas Cranmer* is nominated to ſucceed him.

Anne Boleyn is created Marchioneſs of *Pembroke*: The King gives her 1000 *l.* a year, out of the Biſhopric of *Durham*.

Oct. 4. King *Henry* is cited to appear at *Rome*, either in perſon or by proxy, but Sir *Edward Karne* ſolemnly proteſts againſt the citation: He makes the Pope three offers, which are rejected.

A league having been concluded, in *June* laſt, between King *Henry* and King *Francis*, they reſolve to have an interview between *Calais* and *Boulogne*.

Oct. 11. For that purpoſe *Henry* goes over to *Calais*: And hath

— 20. accordingly an interview with the King of *France*; of which the only end was to terrify the Emperor and the Pope.

Francis adviſes *Henry*, to marry *Anne Boleyn*, without ſtaying for the Pope's diſpenſation.

— 30. The two Kings part, and King *Henry* returns to *England*, *November* 14.

Nov. 15. Pope *Clement* publiſhes a brief, in which he exhorts King *Henry* to take again Queen *Catharine*, and put away *Anne Boleyn*.

— 20. The Emperor and Pope have an interview at *Bologna*.

This year, the Pope impowers King *Henry*, by a bull, to erect ſix new Biſhoprics, and to endow them with the revenues of ſome Monaſteries that were to be ſuppreſſed.

King

King *Henry* marries *Anne Boleyn* privately: Though, according to others, it was on the 14th of *November* before. *Ann. C.* 1533.

A Parliament meets again, and paſſes a ſtatute, forbidding all appeals to the See of *Rome*. *Jan.* 25. *Feb.* 4.

Dr, *Thomas Cranmer* is conſecrated Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, but refuſes to take the uſual oath to the Pope, without having firſt made a proteſtation againſt it. *Mar.* 30.

The Convocations of *Canterbury* and *York* deliver it as their opinion, That the Pope had not power to diſpenſe contrary to the laws of God; and, That the conſummation of Prince *Arthur*'s marriage was proved.

King *Henry* diſcovers his ſecond marriage to the King of *France*'s Envoy, though he intended to keep it private ſome time longer, but it is ſhortly after made public.

Henry writes a treatiſe upon the incroachments of the Biſhops of *Rome*, and the prerogatives of Sovereign Princes.

He tries ſeveral times, in vain, to perſuade the Queen to conſent to the divorce.

At length, being able to prevail neither with her, nor the Pope, and *Anne Boleyn* being with child, he reſolves to have the buſineſs of the divorce determined by Archbiſhop *Cranmer*. Accordingly, *Reg.* 25.

Queen *Catharine* is cited to appear at *Dunſtable*; but ſhe, refuſing, is declared contumacious: Whereupon, the Archbiſhop pronounces her marriage with King *Henry* null: *May* 10. — 23.

And confirms his marriage with *Anne Boleyn*. — 28.

But, *Catharine* not ſubmitting to that ſentence, and ſtill referring herſelf to the Pope, King *Henry* orders, ſhe ſhould be called no more Queen, but only Princeſs Dowager, and widow of Prince *Arthur*.

Henry notifies his divorce, and new marriage, to the Emperor, and to all the other Sovereigns.

When Pope *Clement* heard of it, he nulled Archbiſhop *Cranmer*'s ſentence, and threatened the King with excommunication.

Queen *Anne Boleyn* is crowned. *June* 1.

Mary, Queen Dowager of *France*, and wife of *Charles Brandon*, Duke of *Suffolk*, dies, and was buried at *St. Edmundsbury*. — 24.

The Princeſs *Elizabeth*, afterwards Queen, was born. *Sept.* 7.

Stephen Gardiner, Sir *John Wallop*, Sir *Francis Brian*, and *Edmund Bonner*, are ſent by our King to an interview at *Marſeilles*, between the Pope and the King of *France*. *Septemb.*

King *Francis* makes the Pope promiſe, he would give King *Henry* ſatisfaction, with regard to his divorce.

Ann. C. But all that is marred again, by *Bonner's* notifying to the
Nov. 7. Pope King *Henry's* and *Cranmer's* appeals to the next general Council.

John de Bellay, Biſhop of *Paris*, comes to *England* to make this propoſal to King *Henry*, That the cauſe ſhould be judged at *Cambray*, by ſuch as he could have no juſt exception againſt.

Henry approving of the propoſal, the Biſhop goes and carries the news of it to the Pope, who deſires to have it under the King's hand, that he approved of that propoſal; and, to avoid all delays and evaſions, fixes the day for the return of the Courier (with the King's approbation) from *England*.

The Courier not returning by the time appointed, the Emperor's Agents are ſo urgent with the Pope, That he declares *Henry's* marriage with *Catharine* good and lawful, and requires him to take his wife again, denouncing ſevere cenſures againſt him, in caſe of diſobedience.

Two days after ſentence, the Courier comes, but the Pope refuſes to revoke what he had done: And thus *England* came to be releaſed from all dependence upon the See of *Rome*.

1534. The Parliament meets, and enacts ſeveral ſtatutes againſt
Jan. 15. the See of *Rome*. Particularly,

That the Convocations of the Clergy ought to be aſſembled only by the King's Writ, and enact no conſtitutions without the King's aſſent; and that no appeals ſhould be made to *Rome*.

That the firſt-fruits ſhould no longer be paid to the Pope, nor *Peter-pence*, and Procurations, nor any ſums of money for Diſpenſations.

By another act, the Succeſſion to the Crown is ſettled upon the iſſue of Queen *Anne Boleyn*, and *Henry's* marriage with the Lady *Catharine* declared void.

The ſtatute of 2 *Henry* IV, for impriſoning of Heretics, without their being firſt preſented, or indicted by two lawful witneſſes, is alſo repealed.

Elizabeth Barton, the Holy Maid of *Kent*, who, under pretence of Revelations, had impugned and ſlandered the King's divorce, and his ſecond marriage, is attainted, with her Accomplices.

April 20. They are hanged and quartered.

Reg. 26. Commiſſioners are ſent throughout the Kingdom, to adminiſter the oath of Succeſſion.

John Fiſher, Biſhop of *Rocheſter*, and Sir *Thomas More*, refuſing

refuſing to take it, in its full latitude, are committed to the *Am. C. Tower.*

The Convocation of *York* declare, That the Pope had no more power in *England*, than any other Biſhop.

King *Henry* ſends *Catharine* notice of the act whereby her marriage was declared void; but ſhe perſiſts in aſſuming the name of Queen.

A twelve months truce, concluded the laſt year between *England* and *Scotland*, is now turned into a peace, to laſt till the death of one of the two Kings. *May* 11.

The Reformation gains ground in *England*, being ſupported by the Queen, by *Cranmer*, and by *Thomas Cromwell*, who was made, *April* 12, this year, Chancellor of the *Exchequer*, and, *Sept.* 21, Maſter of the Rolls.

Francis I. King of *France*, ſeemed alſo to favour the Reformation.

John Frith and *Andrew Hewet*, two Proteſtants, are burned in *Smithfield*. *July* 22.

Pope *Clement* VII. dies;

And was ſucceeded by Pope *Paul* III. *Sept.* 26.

The Parliament meets again; and enacts, *Oct.* 12.

That the King (and his Succeſſors) ſhall be the only ſupreme Head, in earth, of the Church of *England*. *Nov.* 3.

They alſo grant the King the firſt-fruits and tenths of all ſpiritual preferments.

And make a ſtatute, For nomination of Suffragans, and conſecration of them.

As alſo, That no offenders, in any kinds of treaſons, ſhall have the benefit of ſanctuary.

This Parliament grants his Majeſty a tenth and a fifteenth.

The King iſſues out a Proclamation, forbidding to give the Biſhop of *Rome* the name of Pope, and commanding that name to be razed out of all books.

The Biſhops renounce the Pope's authority.

The acts againſt the Papal power ſet the whole body of the Monks, and other Dependents on the Court of *Rome*, againſt the King; and he, on his part, entertains the utmoſt averſion for them. 1535. *Reg.* 27.

John, Prior of the *Charter-Houſe*, *London*, and other Priors and Eccleſiaſtics, are executed as Traitors, for denying the King's Supremacy. *May* 4. *June* 18.

John Fiſher, Biſhop of *Rocheſter*, juſt before created a Cardinal; and — 22.

Sir *Thomas More*, are alſo beheaded, for the ſame. *July* 6.

Pope *Paul* III. draws up, and ſigns a bull, wherein he excom- *Aug.* 30.

Ann. C. excommunicates King *Henry*, abſolves his ſubjects from their oath of allegiance, puts the Kingdom under an interdict, *&c.* But he defers the publication of this bull to a more convenient ſeaſon.

King *Henry*, thereupon, reſolves to join with the Proteſtants in *Germany*, and keep the Emperor employed there; for which purpoſe he ſends an Ambaſſador to the league of *Smalcald*.

Moreover, he determines to diſſolve the Monaſteries: And, in order to that, appoints a general Viſitation of them; of which the management was left to *Thomas Cromwell*, by the name of Viſitor-General. He is alſo conſtituted the King's Vicegerent in all Eccleſiaſtical matters.

The account of the Viſitation is publiſhed.

Several Abbots and Priors, terrified by the Viſitors, ſurrender their Houſes:

Nov. 13. Of which the firſt was the Priory of *Langdon* in *Kent*.

Nicholas Shaxton is made Biſhop of *Salisbury*, *Hugh Latimer* of *Worceſter*, and *John Hilſey* of *Rocheſter*; being all promoters of the Reformation.

King *Henry* endeavours to perſuade his nephew *James* King of *Scotland* to caſt off the Pope; but in vain.

This year, *Wales* was incorporated with, and for ever annexed to *England*:

And braſs-cannon were firſt caſt in this Kingdom, by one *John Owen*.

1536. Queen *Catharine* of *Arragon* dies, and was buried at *Peterburgh*.

Feb. 4. The Parliament meets again: And grants to the King, and his Heirs, all ſuch Monaſteries and other Religious Houſes, as had not a clear yearly revenue of 200 *l.* and above.

The Court of Augmentations of the King's revenue is erected.

King *Henry* negotiates with the league of *Smalcald*, on purpoſe to engage the Proteſtants to make a diverſion in *Germany*, that the Emperor might not attempt any thing againſt *England*.

The Convocation petitions the King, That there might be a new Tranſlation of the Bible, to be ſet up in Churches.

The Parliament is diſſolved, after having ſat ſix years; which was longer than any before, ſince the beginning of the Monarchy.

Reg. 28. King *Henry* falls in love with *Jane Seymour*, daughter of Sir *John Seymour* of *Wolf-Hall* in *Wiltſhire*.

George

George Boleyn Viſcount *Rochford*, and *Henry Norris*, are committed to the *Tower*, on a charge of adultery with Queen *Anne Boleyn*. *Ann. C.* *May* 2.

The Queen herſelf is conveyed to the *Tower*, the ſame day.

William Brereton, Sir *Francis Weſton*, and *Mark Smeton* are alſo impriſoned for the ſame. — 15.

The Queen is tried, and condemned: As was alſo the Lord *Rochford*; and *Norris*, *Smeton*, *Weſton*, and *Brereton*. The five latter are beheaded.

The ſame day, the Queen is divorced from the King, and her daughter *Elizabeth* declared illegitimate. — 17.

Queen *Anne Boleyn* is beheaded, and buried in the Chapel within the *Tower*. — 19.

The King marries the Lady *Jane Seymour*. — 20.

Princeſs *Mary* is reconciled to the King her Father.

A new Parliament meets: And, after repealing the former act concerning the ſucceſſion to the Crown, declaring the iſſue of the King's two firſt marriages illegitimate, and diſabled from inheriting the Crown; confirming *Anne Boleyn*'s ſentence, *&c.* They give the King power to declare the ſucceſſion to the Crown, either by his Letters Patents, under the Great Seal, or by his laſt Will, ſigned with his hand. *June* 8.

They likewiſe enacted, That if any perſon extolled the Pope's authority, he ſhould incur the penalty of *Præmunire*: That every eccleſiaſtical and lay officer ſhould be ſworn to renounce the Pope, and his authority: And the refuſing of ſuch oath was made High-treaſon.

The Convocation confirms the unlawfulneſs of the King's marriage with *Anne Boleyn*.

The Lower Houſe of Convocation ſends to the Upper 67 articles, condemning, chiefly, the opinions of the Reformers.

They publiſh 10 articles deviſed by the King's Highneſs, *&c.* wherein ſome Popiſh corruptions are retrenched, and only three Sacraments mentioned.

King *Henry* being ſummoned to a Council that was to meet at *Mantua*, proteſts againſt that Council.

Reginald Pole falls out with the King, and publiſhes his book, *De Unitate Eccleſiaſtica*.

Thomas Cromwell, Secretary to the King, and Maſter of the Rolls, is made Lord Privy-Seal.

He is knighted, and conſtituted Vicar-General over all the Spirituality, under the King, and ſat divers times in the Convocation among the Biſhops, as head over them. *July* 18.

Three

Ann. C. August. Three hundred and ſeventy-ſix of the leſſer Monaſteries are ſuppreſſed; the lands wherewith they were endowed being valued at 32,000*l.* and the goods, *&c.* though ſold very cheap, amounted to above 100,000*l.*

The King publiſheth, in his Vicegerent *Cromwell*'s name, injunctions to the Clergy; wherein they are injoined, to teach in all places of Preaching, the King's Supremacy, *&c.* to admoniſh parents to teach their children the *Pater-noſter*, the articles of our Faith, and the Ten Commandments, in their mother-tongue, *&c.*

October. Theſe injunctions, together with the ſuppreſſion of the Monaſteries, and the levying of a ſubſidy, occaſion an inſurrection in *Lincolnſhire*: But the Rebels accept of a par-
— 19. don offered them by the King, and diſperſe.

A more dangerous inſurrection breaks out at the ſame
Dec. 9. time in *Yorkſhire*; but the Rebels likewiſe accept of a pardon, and return to their homes: However, the chief of their leaders, *Robert Aſke*, *Thomas*, Lord *Darcy*, and the Lord *Huſſey*, entering into a freſh conſpiracy, are afterwards treacherouſly executed, namely, in *June*, the following year.

1537. *James* V, King of *Scotland*, eſpouſes *Magdalen*, third
Jan. 1. daughter of *Francis* I, King of *France*; but ſhe dies in the *July* following.

Feb. 3. *Thomas Fitz-gerald*, Earl of *Kildare*, and five of his uncles, are drawn and quartered at *London*, for having endeavoured to cauſe a Rebellion in *Ireland*.

A new inſurrection breaks out in the North of *England*: The Rioters beſiege *Carliſle*, but are repulſed, and 75 of them hanged.

Some alſo attempt to ſeize *Hull*, but are taken, and executed.

March. The Abbots of *Whalley*, *Woborne*, and *Sawley*, and many
— 10. other Monks and Laymen, are executed in ſeveral parts of
— 13. *England*.
— 29. The Lords *Darcy* and *Huſſey*, above-mentioned, Sir *Ro-*
April. *bert Conſtable*, Sir *Thomas Percy*, Sir *Francis Bigot*, and
Reg. 29. many other perſons of quality and faſhion, are executed, in
June. divers places, for real, or pretended conſpiracies.

King *Henry* conſidering the Monks as the chief authors of the late inſurrections, reſolves to ſuppreſs all the Monaſteries; and for that purpoſe, appoints a very ſtrict viſitation of them.

Aug. 26. *Thomas*, Lord *Cromwell*, is made Knight of the Garter.

Prince

Prince *Edward*, afterwards King *Edward* VI, is born at *Hampton-Court*. *Ann. C. Oct.* 12

His mother, Queen *Jane*, dies (though, according to others, it was *Octob.* 24.) and was buried at *Windſor*. — 14.

The diviſions in *Germany*, between the Proteſtants and Papiſts, are fomented by the Emperor.

This year, pipes of lead, for conveyance of water underground, were firſt invented by *Robert Brock*, one of the King's Chaplains.

King *Henry* publiſhes the Report of the laſt viſitation of the Monaſteries; and ſome of the moſt conſiderable in *England* are ſuppreſſed; particularly, thoſe of *Abyngdon*, *Berks*; *St. Auguſtin's*, *Canterbury*; *St. Mary's* of *Coggeſhall*, of *Stratford Langthorn*, and of *Walden*, in *Eſſex*, &c. 1538.

Dr. *John Foreſt*, a Frier Obſervant, is burnt in *Smithfield*, for denying the King's Supremacy. *Reg.* 30. *May.*

James V, King of *Scotland*, marries *Mary*, ſiſter to the Duke of *Guiſe* and the Cardinal of *Lorrain*. *Auguſt.*

The Vicegerent, *Cromwell*, puts out Injunctions in the King's name, wherein all Incumbents were injoined to ſet up in Churches *Engliſh* Bibles (of which a new Tranſlation was then juſt publiſhed) and alſo to inſtruct the people in the Principles of Religion, by teaching them the Creed, the Lord's Prayer, and the Ten Commandments, in *Engliſh*; and to keep a regiſter of baptiſms, weddings, and burials, *&c.* *Septemb.*

King *Henry* orders St. *Thomas* [*Becket*] of *Canterbury's* bones to be diſperſed, or burnt, and ſeizes his rich ſhrines.

The images of our Lady of *Walſingham*, *Ipſwich*, &c. to which pilgrimages and offerings were wont to be made, are taken away.

Stephen Gardiner, Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, puts the King upon perſecuting the Reformed.

John Nicolſon, alias *Lambert*, being informed againſt as a Sacramentarian, King *Henry* publicly diſputes with him; but *Lambert* not being convinced by the King's arguments, is burnt in *Smithfield*. *Novemb.*

Cardinal *Pole* having written bitterly againſt the King, ſeveral of his friends and relations are committed to the *Tower*, for keeping coreſpondence with him. — 3.

The intereſt of the Reformers declining, at Court, *Cranmer* and *Cromwell* project to marry the King with a Proteſtant, and accordingly caſt their eyes upon *Anne*, ſiſter to the Duke of *Cleves* and Ducheſs of *Saxony*.

Pope *Paul* III. publiſhes the bull of excommunication againſt *Dec.* 17.

Ann. C. gainſt King *Henry*, which had been drawn and ſigned ever ſince the year 1535.

King *Henry* enters into Negotiations with the Proteſtants in *Germany*, in order to raiſe the Emperor troubles in his own Dominions; but theſe Negotiations come to nothing.

Several Suffragan Biſhops are appointed; and a new oath is required from all religious perſons.

— 31. Some of the Cardinal *Pole*'s friends and relations above-mentioned, namely, *Henry Courtney* Earl of *Devonſhire*, and Marquiſs of *Exeter*, ſon of *Catharine*, daughter to King *Edward* IV, and *Henry Pole* Lord *Montacute*, the Cardinal's brother, are arraigned, and beheaded the 9th of *January* following.

1539. *Jan.* 9. As is alſo Sir *Edward Neville*; who had been tried the 3d of *January* with other inferior perſons: But theſe latter were hanged and quartered at *Tyburn*. And all for holding correſpondence with Cardinal *Pole*.

Mar. 3. Sir *Nicholas Carew*, Knight of the Garter, and Maſter of the King's horſe, is alſo beheaded for the ſame.

Reg. 31. Above a hundred of the richeſt Monaſteries are ſuppreſſed, or ſurrendered, within the courſe of this year.

King *Henry*, apprehenſive of an invaſion, viſits the coaſts of the Kingdom, commands forts and redoubts to be built in ſeveral places, fits out a fleet, and orders the militia to be muſtered.

April 28. A Parliament meets at *Weſtminſter*; which grants the King and his Heirs and Succeſſors, all the Monaſteries in *England* and *Wales*, with their whole revenues: Which, as given in, amounted to 152,517 *l.* 18 *s.* and 10 *d. per ann.*

They paſs an act, for aboliſhing of diverſity of opinions in certain articles concerning the Chriſtian Religion; generally called *the ſix articles*, or the *bloody ſtatute*.

The Author of it was *Stephen Gardiner*: But Archbiſhop *Cranmer* argues much againſt it before it paſſed; notwithſtanding which, the King aſſures him of his conſtant kindneſs, and orders him to ſet down his reaſons in writing.

An extraordinary act alſo is paſſed, importing, That the King, with the advice of his Council, might ſet forth Proclamations, which ſhould be obſerved as though they were made by act of Parliament.

Margaret Counteſs of *Salisbury* mother to Cardinal *Pole*, the Cardinal himſelf, the Marchioneſs of *Exeter*, and others are attainted, unheard, by Parliament.

July 1. *N. Shaxton* Biſhop of *Salisbury*, and *H. Latimer* Biſhop of

of *Worceſter*, reſign their Sees on account of the bloody ſtatute. *Ann. C.*

A ſtrict inquiry is made in every County after thoſe who rejected that ſtatute: Many are impriſoned; but the King pardons them all.

Edmund Bonner is tranſlated from the See of *Hereford* to that of *London*, vacant by the death of Dr. *John Stokeſley*. *October.*

King *Henry* endeavours to join with the *Smalcaldic* league, but *Gardiner* diverts him from it.

Bibles are ſet up in Churches, and the people are alſo allowed to have them in their houſes.

Hugh Feringdon, Abbot of *Reading*, *Richard Whiting*, Abbot of *Glaſtonbury*, and *John Beche*, Abbot of *St. John's Colcheſter*, are hanged and quartered for denying the King's Supremacy, or rather, for refuſing to ſurrender up their Monaſteries. *Novemb.*

The King's guard, of 50 Gentlemen Penſioners, is reſtored again. *Dec.* 25.

Anne, of *Cleves*, arrives in *England*; but the King does not like her. — 27.

However, for ſome political reaſon, he marries her; but is ſaid not to conſummate his marriage. 1540.

Thomas Cromwell is created Earl of *Eſſex*, and made Great Chamberlain of *England*. *Jan.* 6. *April* 18.

A Parliament meeting at the ſame time, grants the King four fifteenths, and a ſubſidy of 2 *s.* of lands, and 1 *s.* of goods, towards the charge of bulwarks; the Convocation grants him, moreover, a ſubſidy of 4 *s.* in the pound. *April* 18. *according to others* 12 *or* 28.

In this Parliament was an act made, for the true payment of tithes and offerings. *Reg.* 32.

And the Court of wards, and of firſt-fruits and tenths, were appointed by ſtatute.

The two Hoſpitals of the Knights of *St. John of Jeruſalem*, in *England* and *Ireland*, are ſuppreſſed, and their poſſeſſions granted to the King.

Commiſſioners are appointed to examine the controverted points of Religion; and all the decrees and ordinances they ſhould make, are confirmed by Parliament, provided they were not repugnant to the laws of the Realm.

King *Henry* not liking his Queen, *Anne* of *Cleves*, he is divorced from her, with her own conſent. *July* 6, &c.

She is ordered to be thenceforth called only the King's adopted ſiſter.

Thomas Cromwell, Earl of *Eſſex*, being diſgraced by the Duke of *Norfolk's* and *Gardiner's* procurement, is committed to the *Tower*. *July* 9.

Ann. C. He is attainted of hereſy and treaſon, without being admitted to make his defence.
— 19.
— 28. He is beheaded.
— 30. Three Proteſtants, *viz.* Dr. *Robert Barnes*, &c. are burnt
Aug. 6. in *Smithfield*; and three Papiſts are executed in the ſame place, about the Supremacy; as are ſix more, a few days after.
— 8. King *Henry* takes to his fifth wife the Lady *Catharine Howard*, daughter of Sir *Edmund Howard*, brother to the Duke of *Norfolk*.

The Papiſts, encouraged by this match, endeavour to ruin Archbiſhop *Cranmer*.

A neceſſary doctrine and erudition for any Chriſtian man is publiſhed, and the Miſſals are reformed.

Decemb. King *Francis* I. orders a fortreſs and a bridge to be built at *Ardres*, near *Calais*, which occaſions a quarrel between *England* and *France*.

Several Monaſteries are ſuppreſſed in the courſe of this year: The number of Monaſteries, firſt and laſt ſuppreſſed in *England* and *Wales*, were 645; together with 96 Colleges, 2374 Chantries and Free-Chapels, and 110 Hoſpitals.

— 17. The Abbey of *Weſtminſter* is converted into a Biſhop's See.

1541. The *Interim* is granted to the Proteſtants in *Germany*.

April. An inſurrection breaks out in *Yorkſhire*, which is ſoon quelled.

Reg. 33. *Margaret*, Counteſs-Dowager of *Salisbury*, who had been
May 27. attainted two years before, is executed: She was daughter of *George*, Duke of *Clarence*, and the laſt of the *Plantagenet* Family.

King *Henry* appoints an interview with his nephew, the King of *Scotland*, in order to engage him into his intereſt, and to perſuade him to renounce the Pope.

He goes to *York* for that purpoſe, and in his way thither receives preſents and ſubmiſſions from the places he paſſed through. But his nephew, King *James*, does not come; at which *Henry* is highly provoked.

Aug. 4. The Biſhoprics of *Cheſter*, *Glouceſter*, and *Peterborough*
Sept 3, 4. are founded.

Novemb. Queen *Catharine*'s leudneſs is diſcovered to the King by Archbiſhop *Cranmer*.

She is examined, and confeſſes her guilt.

1542. The affair being brought before the Parliament, which
Jan. 21. met *January* 16, the Queen and her Accomplices (particu-
Feb. 6, 8. larly *Elizabeth* [*Howard*] widow and relict of *Thomas Boleyn*,

Boleyn, Viſcount *Rochford*, who had been the cauſe of that Lord's, and Queen *Anne Boleyn*'s, death) are attainted. *Ann. C.*

Queen *Catharine Howard*, and the Lady *Rochford*, are beheaded. *Feb.* 13.

Ireland is erected into a Kingdom: Our Kings, before that time, were called only Lords of *Ireland*. *Jan.* 23.

All the local ſtatutes of Colleges and Hoſpitals are annulled by Parliament, in order to make way for their diſſolution.

The King grants *Antony Marlar* a privilege, to print the Bible in *Engliſh*. *Mar.* 12.

He takes a loan of money of all ſuch as were valued at 50*l.* in the ſubſidy-book. *Reg.* 34.

Pope *Paul* III. calls a Council at *Trent*, for the *November* following. *May* 22.

King *Henry* being determined to enter into a war with *Scotland*, endeavours to hinder the King of *France* by ſome treaty from aſſiſting the King of *Scots*.

He revives the old pretenſions of the Kings of *England* to the Sovereignty of *Scotland*, and publiſhes a declaration upon that head.

The Duke of *Norfolk* enters *Scotland* at the head of the *Engliſh* army, and burns ſeveral towns and villages: They ſtay there till about the middle of *November*, and then return to *Berwick*. *Oct.* 21.

Immediately after, 15,000 *Scots* make an irruption into *England*; but they are totally defeated, and above 800 of them taken priſoners. *Nov.* 25.

The Princeſs *Mary*, afterwards Queen of *Scots*, is born. *Dec.* 7.

Her father, King *James* V, dies for grief, at the late defeat of his army. — 14.

King *Henry* forms the project of uniting *Scotland* to *England*, by marrying his ſon *Edward* to the new Queen of *Scotland*.

The Parliament meets again at *Weſtminſter*, and grants the King a very large ſubſidy, for his intended war with *France*. The Clergy alſo grant him a ſubſidy of 6 *s.* in the pound, to be paid in three years. 1543. *Jan.* 22.

An act is paſſed, whereby people were allowed to keep in their houſes Bibles that were not of *Tindal*'s tranſlation: And ſpiritual perſons were not to be burnt for Hereſy till after the third offence: Nor was the puniſhment of the Laity, for the ſame, to be any more than perpetual impriſonment.

Ann. C. King *Henry* concludes a league with the Emperor *Charles*
Feb. 11. V. againſt *France*.

Cardinal *Beaton* forges a will for the late King of *Scotland*, wherein he appointed himſelf Regent during the Queen's minority.

March. But notwithſtanding that, *James Hamilton* Earl of *Arran* is declared Regent.

Re. 35. King *Henry* ſends an Ambaſſador to *Scotland*, to propoſe a marriage between their young Queen and his ſon Prince *Edward*.

July 1. A treaty is accordingly concluded for that purpoſe, and another for a firm peace between the two Kingdoms: But Cardinal *Beaton* renders theſe meaſures ineffectual.

He, and the Queen-Dowager, ſend for *Matthew Stewart*, Earl of *Lenox*, out of *France*, in order to oppoſe him to the Regent. But, to countermine their deſigns, the Regent throws himſelf into their arms, and abjures the Proteſtant Religion.

Thereupon, the Queen-Dowager and the Cardinal try to ſend back the Earl of *Lenox* to *France*; he takes up arms, but being ſoon after forced to make peace, the Cardinal obtains all the power under the Regent's name.

— 12. King *Henry* takes to his ſixth wife *Catharine Parr*, daughter of Sir *Thomas Parr* of *Kendal*, and widow of *John Neville* Lord *Latimer*.

— 28. Three Proteſtants are burnt at *Windſor*.

Aug. 3. War is proclaimed between *England* and *France*, and the Emperor.

— 23. *Mary* Queen of *Scots* is crowned.

A plot is formed againſt *Cranmer* by the enemies of the Reformation, in order to ruin him, but the King protects him, and ſhews him great marks of his eſteem.

This year, mortar-pieces and bombs were firſt made in *England*, by *Peter Baud*, *Ralph Hoge*, and *Peter van Collen*.

1544. The Parliament meets again at *Weſtminſter* (being the
Jan. 14. third Seſſion) and ſettles the Succeſſion to the Crown, firſt, on Prince *Edward* and his iſſue; and in failure of that, upon the Lady *Mary*, and the Lady *Elizabeth*, and the reſpective heirs of their bodies, lawfully begotten. But in caſe they ſhould all die without iſſue, the King was impowered to diſpoſe of the Crown by his Letters Patents under the Great Seal, or by his laſt Will made in writing, and ſigned with his hand.

By another act, the Lords and Commons remitted to the King

King all ſuch ſums of money as he had borrowed of them ſince *January* 1, *anno* 33, of his Reign. *Ann. C.*

King *Henry* ſends a great army, commanded by *Seymour* Earl of *Hertford*, and a numerous fleet under the command of *John Dudley* Lord Viſcount *Liſle*, to invade *Scotland*. *March.*

Thomas Lord *Audley* dies, and is ſucceeded in his office of Lord Chancellor by *Thomas* Lord *Wriotheſly*. *Reg.* 36. *April* 30.

The *Engliſh* army landing in *Scotland*, take *Leith*, plunder and burn *Edinburgh*, and many other Towns and Villages. *May.*

The Earl of *Lenox* joins with the *Engliſh*, and concludes a treaty with King *Henry*. — 17.

The *Engliſh* return to *Berwick*: But ſome of them, ſhortly after, invading *Scotland* again, take *Jedburgh*, *Kelſoe*, and *Coldingham*. — 18.

The Diet of *Spire* decrees, That the Proteſtants in *Germany* ſhould not be diſturbed in the exerciſe of their Religion.

The Litany is put out in *Engliſh*, and ordered by the King to be generally uſed in every Church. *June.*

According to the treaty with the Emperor, King *Henry* ſends an army to *Calais*, commanded by the Duke of *Norfolk*; who, with one of the Emperor's Generals, goes and lays ſiege to *Monſtreuil*.

Henry himſelf goes over with the reſt of his army, and finding the Emperor did not act ſincerely with him, he lays ſiege to *Boulogne*: *July* 14. — 26.

Which capitulates, after a long ſiege. *Sept.* 14.

In the mean time, the Emperor *Charles* V. concludes a ſeparate peace with *France*, without including King *Henry*, or even acquainting him with it. *Sept.* 18.

He returns to *England*, and moſt of his troops come back to *Calais*. — 30.

The *French* attempt to ſurprize *Boulogne*, but are diſappointed. *October.*

King *Henry* fortifies *Graveſend*, *Tilbury*, *Dover*, *Portſmouth*, and other maritime places.

Moſt part of the Colleges, Collegiate-Churches, and Hoſpitals, are ſurrendered to him.

The King exacts a benevolence of all his ſubjects, for his wars in *France* and *Scotland*.

The *French* make a ſecond attempt upon *Boulogne*, and are repulſed. 1545. *Jan.* 26.

A body of *Engliſh* make an irruption into *Scotland*, but

Ann. C. Reg. 37. their Commander, *Ralph* Lord *Eure*, and many others are ſlain.

France makes great preparations againſt *England*.

July 19, &c. The *French* land on the coaſt of *Suſſex*, and in the Iſle of *Wight*, but are ſoon beaten back. They have likewiſe a ſhort engagement with the *Engliſh* fleet, without much loſs on either ſide.

A body of *French* is ſent into *Scotland*, in order to make a diverſion on that ſide into *England*: They do nothing conſiderable; and the Earl of *Hertford*, entering *Scotland* with 12,000 men, ravages ſeveral places.

Aug. 24. *Charles Brandon* Duke of *Suffolk*, a friend to the Reformers, dies.

All the deſigns of the *French* againſt *Boulogne*, *Guiſnes*, and *Calais* prove abortive.

Sept. 9. The *Engliſh* land at *Treport* in *Normandy*, and burn that town, and ſome adjacent villages.

King *Francis* endeavours to make peace with *England*, through the mediation of the Princes of the *Smalcaldic* league.

Archbiſhop *Cranmer* procures ſome vacant Biſhoprics for his friends, and obtains a few alterations advantageous to Religion.

Nov. 23. A Parliament meets at *Weſtminſter*, which grants the King a ſubſidy of 4 *s.* in the pound of lands, and 2 *s.* and 8 *d.* of goods, to be paid in two years. The Clergy continue alſo for two years the ſubſidy of 6 *s.* in the pound, granted before.

This Parliament grants to the King the Colleges, Chantries, Hoſpitals, Guilds, *&c.* in the Kingdom, with their lands and revenues.

Dec. 13. The Council of *Trent* is opened.

1546. The Emperor *Charles* V. having entered into a league with the Pope, and preparing to attack the Proteſtants in *Germany*, they apply to King *Henry* for aſſiſtance, which they do not obtain.

Reg. 38. A perſecution is carried on in *Scotland* againſt the Reformed, by Cardinal *Beaton* and the Earl of *Arran*, and ſeveral are martyred, particularly *George Wiſhart*; but the Cardinal is ſoon after murdered.

King *Henry* and King *Francis*, both out of fear for the Emperor, are inclined to a peace; accordingly, a peace is

June 7. concluded between *England* and *France*.

King *Francis* pretends to be diſpoſed to promote the Reformation; and his Ambaſſador agrees with King *Henry*,

That

That, both in *England* and *France*, the Mass should be changed into a Communion. *Cranmer* is ordered to draw a form of it, but this comes to nothing. *Ann.* C.

Henry, who was now grown monstrously corpulent and troubled with a sore leg, grows excessively froward and cruel, and renews the persecution against the Protestants. Accordingly,

N. Shaxton, late Bishop of *Salisbury*, who had been long a prisoner, is condemned to the flames: But he abjures, and is pardoned. *July* 9. — 16.

Mrs. *Anne Ayscough*, and four other Protestants, are burnt in *Smithfield*.

Designs are also formed against Archbishop *Cranmer*: However, the King gives him a sensible mark of his affection, and severely rebukes his enemies and accusers.

Nay, *Gardiner*, and some others, contrive the ruin of the Queen, and draw up articles against her, but she escapes.

Immediately after, the fickle King begins to hate the enemies of the Reformation; particularly Bishop *Gardiner*, whom he excludes out of his Council, *&c.*

The two Universities of *Oxford* and *Cambridge* are preserved, notwithstanding the general surrender of all the Colleges. *October.*

King *Henry* founds a new *Christ's-Church* College in *Oxford*, and removes the See thither from *Osney*. *Nov.* 4.

He also founds *Trinity College* in *Cambridge*, the 19th of *December* following.

Thomas Howard Duke of *Norfolk*, and his son *Henry* Earl of *Surrey*, are committed to the *Tower* for High-treason. *Dec.* 12.

King *Henry* makes his will. — 30.

He gives to the City of *London St. Bartholomew*'s Hospital in *Smithfield*, the late dissolved Monastery of the *Grey-friars*, with the Parish-Churches of St. *Nicholas* in the *Shambles*, and St. *Ewine* in *Newgate-market* (now *Christ-Church-Parish*) for the relief of the poor: And grants, for the support of this foundation, a yearly revenue of 500 marks for ever. 1547. *Jan.* 3. — 13.

Henry Earl of *Surrey* is tried at *Guildhall*, and condemned. — 14.

He is beheaded. — 19.

His father, *Thomas Howard* Duke of *Norfolk*, is attainted by the Parliament, which met at that time. 18—24

Archbishop *Cranmer* was all the while at *Croydon*.

A warrant is signed, by Commissioners appointed under

the Great Seal, for the beheading of the Duke on *January* 29. But the King's death was his ſafety.

The Character *of* HENRY VIII.

A little before the King's death, his illneſs continually increaſed, and no man dared to warn him of his approaching end. Every one was afraid that a Prince who was always approached with trembling, would look upon this charitable warning as a crime, and puniſh it according to an Act of Parliament, by which thoſe who ſhould dare to foretell the King's death, were adjudged traitors. But at laſt Sir *Anthony Denny*, one of his Privy-Counſellors, had the courage and charity to warn him that he had but a few hours to live. The King thanked him, and expreſſed his great grief and horror for all the ſins of his paſt life. Whereupon, *Denny* asked him if any Clergyman ſhould be ſent for, and he ſaid, if any, it ſhould be the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*. But *Cranmer*, being then at *Croydon*, could not come till the King was ſpeechleſs. He had but juſt time to deſire him to give ſome ſign of his dying in the faith of Chriſt. The King ſqueezed his hand, and preſently after expired in the night between the 28th and 29th of *January* 1546-7, in the fifty-ſixth year of his age, having reigned thirty-ſeven years and nine months. His death was kept private three days. Probably the Council took time to conſult whether the Duke of *Norfolk* ſhould be executed. At laſt, after three days, the Lord Chancellor ſignified to both Houſes, that the King was dead and the Parliament thereby diſſolved.

The reader may ſee *Henry*'s character drawn at length by the Lord *Herbert*. But as his life and actions ſufficiently make him known, I ſhall only add what Biſhop *Burnet* ſays of him at the end of his firſt volume of the Hiſtory of the Reformation. King *Henry* VIII. is rather to be reckoned among the great than the good Princes. He exerciſed ſo much ſeverity on men of both perſwaſions, that the writers of both ſides have laid open his faults, and taxed his cruelty. But as neither of them were much obliged to him, ſo none have taken ſo much care to ſet forth his good qualities, as his enemies have done to enlarge on his vices. I do not deny that he is to be numbered among the ill Princes, yet I cannot rank him with the worſt.——King *Henry*'s body lies buried at *Windſor*, under a moſt ſtately tomb, begun in copper and gilt, but not finiſhed.

I. By Queen *Catharine* of *Arragon* he had, 1. two ſons, who lived but a very little while. 2. *Mary*, born *Feb.* 8, 1515. She was afterwards Queen of *England*. II. By *Anne Boleyne* he had, 1. *Elizabeth*, born *Sept.* 7, 1533, who ſucceeded her ſiſter Queen *Mary*. 2. A ſon ſtill-born, *Jan.* 29, 1535. III. He had by *Jane Seymour* Prince *Edward*, born *Octob.* 12, 1537. He ſucceeded his father by the title of King *Edward* VI.——King *Henry* had no iſſue by his three laſt Queens, *Anne* of *Cleves*, *Catharine Howard*, and *Catharine Parr*.

But by *Elizabeth*, daughter of Sir *John Blount*, Kt. and widow of Sir *Gilbert Tailbois*, he had a natural ſon, named *Henry Fitzroy*, whom he made Earl of *Nottingham*, Duke of *Richmond*, High-Admiral, Lieutenant of *Ireland*, &c. and who died *July* 24, 1536, aged 17 years.

An account of the MONEY *coined in this Reign.*

By Indenture of the 1ſt. and 23d. of *Henry* VIII, a pound-weight of gold of the old ſtandard, was to be coined into twenty-ſeven pounds, by tale; *viz.* into twenty-four Sovereigns, at 22 *s.* 6 *d.* a-piece, or forty-eight Rials at 11 *s.* 3 *d.* a-piece, or ſeventy-two Angels at 7 *s.* 6 *d.* a-piece, or eighty-one George-Nobles at 6 *s.* 8 *d.* a-piece, or one hundred and forty-four Half-Angels at 3 *s.* 9 *d.* a-piece, or one hundred and ſixty-two Forty-penny Pieces at 3 *s.* 4 *d.* a-piece; and a pound-weight of gold, of the fineneſs of twenty-two Carats only, was to be coined into one hundred Crowns and a half of the double Roſe, or two hundred and one Half-crowns, making by tale twenty-five pounds two ſhillings and ſixpence; and a pound-weight of ſilver of the old ſterling, was coined into one hundred and thirty-five Groats, or two hundred and ſeventy Half-groats, or five hundred and forty Stirlings (or Pence) or one thouſand and eighty Half-pence, or two thouſand one hundred and ſixty Farthings; ſo that every pound-weight of ſterling ſilver was coined into forty-five ſhillings by tale.——In the 34th of this Reign, a pound-weight of gold, of twenty-three Carats, fine, and one Carat, allay, was coined into twenty-eight pounds ſixteen ſhillings, by tale; by which Indenture there were coined Sovereigns at 20 *s.* a-piece, Half-Sovereigns at 10 *s.* Angels at 5 *s.* and Quarter-Angelets at 2 *s.* a-piece; and a pound-weight of ſilver of ten ounces fine, and two ounces allay, was coined into forty-eight ſhillings by tale, namely, into Teſ-

toons (which were 12*d.* a-piece) Groats, Half-Groats, Pence, Half-pence, and Farthings.—— In the 36th of *Henry* VIII, a pound weight of gold, of twenty-two Carats fine, and two Carats allay, was coined into thirty pounds by tale; *viz.* into thirty Sovereigns at 20*s.* a-piece, or ſixty Half-Sovereigns at 10*s.* a-piece, or one hundred and twenty Crowns at 5*s.* a-piece, or two hundred and forty Half-Crowns: And the King had two Carats of fine gold for coinage, which yielded him fifty ſhillings. Silver was coined by the ſame Indenture, of ſix ounces fine, and ſix ounces allay, into forty-eight ſhillings by tale. It was coined into Teſtoons, Groats, Half-Groats, Pence, Half-pence, and Farthings.—— In the 37th of this Reign, a pound-weight of gold of twenty Carats fine, and four Carats allay, was coined into thirty pounds by tale, as in the laſt; and the King had four Carats, which yielded him five pounds two ſhillings: And a pound weight of ſilver, of four ounces fine, and eight ounces allay was coined into forty-eight ſhillings by tale, which raiſed the pound-weight of fine gold to thirty-ſix pounds; and the pound-weight of fine ſilver to ſeven pounds four ſhillings.

The Gold Coins of *Henry* VIII. are Sovereigns, Rials, Half-Sovereigns, Angels, George-Nobles, Half and Quarter-Angels, Forty-penny Pieces, Crowns, and Half-Crowns: And the Silver Coins, Teſtoons, Groats, Half-Groats, Sterlings.

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

lings, Half-pence, Farthings; to which may be added Crown-Pieces of ſilver, which were firſt coined by this King. *Henry*'s Sovereign has on one ſide HENRIC. 8. D. G. AGL. FRANCIE Z. HIB. REX. the King in his Robes, crowned upon his Throne, with the Scepter and Ball. Reverſe, the arms of *France* and *England* quarterly, ſupported by a Lion and a Dragon, IHS. AVTE. TRANSIENS PER MED. ILLOR. IBAT. (*Fig.* 5.) The Angel of this King is like his Father's; a Half-Angel has this Inſcription on the reverſe, CRVX. AVE. SPES. VNICA. The Crown and Half-Crown of gold, have on one ſide a large Roſe and Crown betwixt H. I. crowned, HENRIC. VIII. RVTILANS. ROSA SIN. SPINA. Reverſe, the Arms of *France* and *England* quartered under a Crown; and H. I.—— DEI. G. R. ANGLIE Z. FRA. DNS. HIBERNIE. (*Fig.* 6.) As for the Silver Coins, there

there were two ſorts of Teſtoons or Shillings. That of fine ſilver exhibits the King half-faced, whereof one has CIVITAS EBORACI. The other Shilling, called the broad-faced Shilling, of a baſer allay, has on one ſide HENRIC. VIII. DI. GRA. AGL. FRA. Z. HIB. REX. Reverſe, POSVI, &c. a Roſe crowned, with H. R. likewiſe crowned. (*Fig.* 1.) The Groat has his head with the ſide-face, HENRIC. VIII. DI. GR. AGL. Z. FRANC. Reverſe, the arms, POSVI, &c. (*Fig.* 3.) Another has HENRIC. VIII. DI. GRA. REX. ANGLIE. Reverſe FRANCIE. ET. HIBERNIE REX. a crowned Harp between the letters H. and R. crowned (*Fig.* 7.) Some coined by Cardinal *Wolſey* at *York*, have a Cardinal's Hat under the Arms. His Pence and Half-pence give him ſeated on a Throne, with (and ſometimes without) the Globe and Scepter. H. D. G. ROSA SINE SPIA. (*Fig.* 2.) The Farthing has on one ſide a Portcullice (whereby it is diſtinguiſhed from Half-pence, which it was not before,) and a Croſs and Pellets on the other. (*Fig.* 4.)

Ann. C. The NOBILITY, created by Patent in HENRY VIII's Reign, was as follows.

1509. *Henry Stafford*, Earl of *Wiltſhire*.

1513. *May* 15. *Charles Brandon*, Viſcount *Liſle*.

1 *Feb. following.* ——— Duke of *Suffolk*.

7 *Nov.* *Margaret Plantagenet*, Counteſs of *Salisbury*.

1513-14. 1 *Feb.* *Charles Somerſet*, Earl of *Worceſter*.

1523. *Henry Marney*, Baron *Marney*.

1525. 18 *June.* *Henry Fitz-Roy*, Earl of *Nottingham*; and Duke of *Richmond*, and *Somerſet*.

Henry Brandon, Earl of *Lincoln*.

Thomas Manners, Earl of *Rutland*.

Henry Clifford, Earl of *Cumberland*.

Thomas Boleyn, Viſcount *Rochford*.

18 *July.* *Robert Ratcliffe*, Viſcount *Fitz-Walter*.

1524. 27 *April.* *Nicholas Vaux*, Baron of *Harrowden*.

1533. 26 *April.* *Arthur Plantagenet*, Viſcount *Liſle*.

1 *Sept.* *Anne Boleyn*, Marchioneſs of *Pembroke*.

——6. *Edward Seymour*, Viſcount *Beauchamp*.

—Earl

——— Earl of *Hertford*. *Ann. C.*
John Bourchier, Earl of *Bath*. 1537.
Thomas Cromwell, Baron of *Oukham*. 9 *July*.
——— Earl of *Eſſex*. 1540.
7 *April*.
Gregory Cromwell, the ſon, Baron *Cromwell*.
Thomas Audley, Baron *Audley* of *Walden*. 1538.
29 *Nov*.
William Paulet, Baron *St. John* of *Baſing*. 1538-9.
9 *Mar*.
John Ruſſel, Baron *Ruſſel*.
William Parr, Baron *Parr* of *Kendall*.
——— Earl of *Eſſex*. 1543.
23 *Dec*.
Henry D'aubeny, Earl of *Bridgewater*. 1539.
20 *July*.
John Dudley, Baron *Sumerai Baſſet* and *Tyes*, and Viſcount *Liſle*. 1542.
15 *Mar*.
William Parr, Baron *Parr* of *Horton*. 1543.
23 *Dec*.
Thomas Wriotheſley, Baron *Wriotheſley*. 1 *Jan*.
William Eure, Baron *Eure*. 24 *Feb*.
Thomas Poynings, Baron *Poynings*. 1544.

Knights of the Garter elected in the Reign of King HENRY VIII.

Thomas Darcy, Lord *Darcy*.
Edward Sutton, Lord *Dudley*.
Emanuel, King of *Portugal*.
Thomas Howard, Lord *Howard*, eldeſt ſon to *Thomas*, Duke of *Norfolk*, afterwards Earl of *Surrey*, and ſecond Duke of *Norfolk*.
Thomas Weſt, Lord *La Ware*.
Sir *Henry Marney*, Knight, afterwards Lord *Marney*.
George Nevil, Lord *Abergavenny*.
Sir *Edward Howard*, Knight, ſecond ſon to *Thomas* Duke of *Norfolk*, ſecond Duke of that family.
Sir *Charles Brandon*, afterwards Duke of *Suffolk*.
Julian de Medicis, brother to Pope *Leo* X.
Edward Stanley, Lord *Monteagle*, ſecond ſon to the Earl of *Derby*.
Thomas Dacres, Lord *Dacres* of *Gilleſland*.
Sir *William Sandys*, afterwards Lord *Sandys*.

Henry

Henry Courtney, Earl of *Devonſhire*.
Ferdinand, Prince and Infant of *Spain*, Archduke of *Auſtria*, afterwards Emperor of *Germany*.
Sir *Richard Wingfield*, Knight.
Sir *Thomas Bullen*, Knight, afterwards Viſcount *Rochford*, and Earl of *Wiltſhire* and *Ormond*.
Walter d'Evereux, Lord *Ferrers* of *Chartley*, afterwards Viſcount *Hereford*.
Arthur Plantagenet, Viſcount *Liſle*.
Robert Ratcliff, Viſcount *Fitz-Walter*, afterwards Earl of *Suſſex*.
William Fitz-Alan, Earl of *Arundel*.
Thomas Manners, Lord *Roos*, afterwards Earl of *Rutland*.
Henry Fitz-Roy, afterwards Earl of *Nottingham*, and Duke of *Richmond* and *Somerſet*.
Ralph Nevil, Earl of *Weſtmorland*.
William Blount, Lord *Mountjoy*.
Sir *William Fitz-William*, Knight, afterwards Earl of *Southampton*.
Sir *Henry Gilford*, Knight.
Francis I. King of *France*.
John Vere, Earl of *Oxford*.
Henry Percy, Earl of *Northumberland*.
Anthony Montmorency, Duke of *Montmorency*.
Philip Chabot, Earl of *Newblanch*.
James V. King of *Scotland*.
Sir *Nicholas Carew*, Knight.
Henry Clifford, Earl of *Cumberland*.
Thomas Cromwell, Lord *Cromwell*, afterwards Earl of *Eſſex*.
John Ruſſel, Lord *Ruſſel*, afterwards Earl of *Bedford*.
Sir *Thomas Cheney*, Knight.
Sir *William Kingſton*, Knight.
Thomas Audley, Lord *Audley* of *Walden*, and Lord Chancellor of *England*.
Sir *Anthony Brown*, Knight.
Edward Seymour, Earl of *Hertford*, afterwards Duke of *Somerſet*.
Henry Howard, Earl of *Surrey*.
Sir *John Gage*, Knight.
Sir *Anthony Wingfield*, Knight.
John Sutton (alias *Dudley*) Viſcount *Liſle*, afterwards Earl of *Warwick*, and Duke of *Northumberland*.
William Paulet, Lord *St. John* of *Baſing*, afterwards Earl of *Wiltſhire*, and Marquiſs of *Winchester*.

William

K. EDWARD VI

William Parr, Lord *Parr* of *Kendal*, afterwards Earl of *Eſſex*, and Marquiſs of *Northampton*.
Sir *John Wallop*, Knight.
Henry Fitz-Alan, Earl of *Arundel*.
Sir *Anthony St. Leger*, Knight.
Francis Talbot, Earl of *Shrewsbury*.
Thomas Wriotheſly, Lord *Wriotheſly*, afterward Earl of *Southampton*.

BOOK XVI.

The Reigns of EDWARD VI, *and Queen* MARY; *Containing the ſpace of about twelve years.*

21. EDWARD VI.

EDWARD VI. ſucceeds the King, his Father, being but nine years and three months old; but he was a perſon of excellent qualities. He is proclaimed. *Ann. C.* 1547. *Reg.* 1, *Jan.* 29.

King *Henry* VIIIth's will is opened; and it is there found, that he had nominated 16 perſons to be his Executors, Regents of the Kingdom, and Governors to his ſon. Beſides theſe, King *Henry* had appointed a Privy-Council of 12 perſons to be aſſiſting to the Regents. —31. *Feb.* 1.

Edward Seymour, Earl of *Hertford*, is choſen Protector, and made Duke of *Somerſet*. — 17.

About 5 or 6000 *l.* a year, of the lands belonging to the Chantries, are alienated to find the revenues and ſalaries aſſigned to the new created Lords.

The Protector procures to himſelf the offices of Lord-Treaſurer, and Earl-Marſhal, vacant by the attainder of *Thomas Howard*, Duke of *Norfolk*. *Feb.* 10. — 17.

His brother, *Thomas Seymour*, is made High-Admiral, and created Baron of *Sudley*.

King *Henry* VIII. is buried at *Windſor*. — 16.

King *Edward* VI. is crowned. — 20.

A general pardon is publiſhed, with a few exceptions.

The Lord Chancellor *Wriotheſley*, created, a few days before, Earl of *Southampton*, is confined to his houſe, for oppoſing the Reformation, and the Protector's deſigns.

The Great Seal is taken from him, and given to Sir *William Paulett*, Lord *St. John*, Maſter of the King's Houſehold. *Mar.* 6.

The

Aug. C. The Protector is confirmed in his office by Letters Patent under the Great Seal.

— 11. Two new treaties are signed between *England* and *France*;

— 31. but, before their ratification, *Francis* I, King of *France*, dies; and *Henry* II, who succeeded him, refuses to ratify them.

Fifty thousand crowns are privately given by the *English* Council to the Princes of the Protestant League in *Germany*.

April 11. The Service begins to be read in *English* in the King's Chapel; and the Protector and the Council resolve to push the Reformation; for which end they appoint a general visitation of all the Churches; and, soon after, Images are taken out of the Churches.

The Protector prepares to carry the war into *Scotland*.

Aug. 4. Conferences are, in the mean time, set on foot for a

Sept. 3. peace, but they proving ineffectual, the Protector enters *Scotland*, and takes some Castles.

He offers a peace to the Regent of *Scotland*, who rejects his offer.

The *English* army moves forward, and approaches the

Sept. 10. *Scots*; whereupon, they coming to an engagement, the *Scots* are defeated, near *Pinkey*, or *Musselburgh*; in which 18,000 of them are slain, and 1500 taken prisoners.

— 18. The Protector, being informed that his brother, the Admiral, was caballing against him, returns in great haste to *England*, having employed but 16 days in his expedition.

— 11. *Edmund Bonner*, Bishop of *London*, and *Stephen Gardiner*,

— 25. Bishop of *Winchester*, are committed to the *Fleet*.

The Princess *Mary* complains of the progress of the Reformation.

Richard, Lord *Rich*, is made High-Chancellor.

Oct. 24. The Protector is invested with new privileges.

Nov. 3. The Parliament meets at *Westminster*, and grants the

— 4. King tunnage and poundage, for life, together with the subsidy of wools and wool-fells.

In this Parliament a statute is enacted, repealing several others, passed in the late, and some former Reigns, and confirming the order of Succession, as settled by *Henry* VIII.

The law of the six articles is therein repealed; and likewise statute 5 *Richard* II, and 2 *Henry* V, against the *Lollards*.

Private Masses are abolished, and the Cup in the Communion restored to the People.

Power is given to the King to nominate to the vacant Bishoprics, by his Letters Patents.

A very

A very remarkable act is paſſed againſt Vagabonds. *Ann. 65.*

All the lands deſigned for the maintenance of Chantries, Chapels, and Colleges, &c. and all revenues for Obits, Anniverſaries, Lights in Churches, together with all Guild-lands, are given to the King.

A general pardon is granted, in which were excepted the priſoners in the *Tower*: And therefore *Gardiner* has the benefit of it.

The Admiral cabals againſt the Protector, his brother. He makes his addreſſes to the Princeſs *Elizabeth*, where, not meeting with ſucceſs, he courts and marries *Catharine Parr*, the Queen Dowager.

The Emperor, *Charles* V, defeats, and takes priſoner, *John Frederic*, Elector of *Saxony*.

He alſo cauſes the Landgrave of *Heſſe* to be detained priſoner, through an abominable fraud.

The Proteſtant party grows hereby very weak in *Germany*.

Peter Martyr, *Bucer*, *Ochinus*, *Fagius*, and ſeveral other foreign Proteſtants come to *England*.

The Protector, upon a complaint from the King of *France*, orders the fortifications of *Bullenberg* to be diſcontinued.

A great progreſs is made in the Reformation; and the Council forbids the carrying of candles on *Candlemas-Day*, and other ſuperſtitious uſes. About this time alſo the book of Homilies is drawn up. 1548. *January.* *February.* *Reg.* 2.

Stephen Gardiner is ſent to the *Tower* for oppoſing the Reformation.

The Protector tries in vain to make a truce with *Scotland*, and appoints *Francis Talbot* Earl of *Shrewsbury* to be his Lieutenant in the war with *Scotland*.

The Regent of *Scotland* beſieges *Broughty* Caſtle, but is not able to take it: In the mean time, the *Engliſh* become maſters of *Hadington* and *Lauder* Caſtles.

The *Scots*, having received from *France* an aid of 6000 men, beſiege *Hadington*. *June* 28.

Mary Queen of *Scotland* is ſent to *France*, for fear ſhe ſhould be forced to be delivered to the *Engliſh*.

The Earl of *Shrewsbury* raiſes the ſiege of *Hadington*, and retires to *England*, after having offered the *Scots* battle.

Deſſe Deſpanvilliers, General of the *French* ſuccours, attempts to ſurprize *Hadington*, but without ſucceſs; whereupon he makes an inroad into *England*, as far as *Newcaſtle*. *Septemb.*

Deſſe, uſing the *Scots* ill, is recalled, and *De Thermes* ſent to command in his room.

Queen

Aug. 6. Queen *Catharine Parr* dies in child-bed.

The Emperor and the Pope quarrel about the tranſlation of the Council of *Trent* to *Bologna*.

An *Interim* is granted to the Proteſtants in *Germany*.

Maurice is inveſted with the Electorate of *Saxony*, of which *John Frederic* had been deprived, for being a Proteſtant.

Nov. 24. The Parliament, after ſeveral prorogations, meets again, and forwards the Reformation.

The Liturgy, which had been newly compiled, is now confirmed by the Act of Uniformity, and every Parſon, *&c.* ordered to uſe it.

By another act, all poſitive laws, made againſt the marriage of Prieſts, are taken away.

An act is alſo made for the payment of tithes. Another for the true making of malt, *&c.*

This Seſſion, a relief granted to the King, was confirmed: As was alſo a ſubſidy of 6*s.* in the pound, given by the Clergy, to be paid in three years.

1549. The Admiral (*Thomas Seymour*) continues his practices againſt the Protector, and endeavours to ſupplant him.

Reg. 3. His wife, the Queen-Dowager, dying, as is ſaid above, he renews his addreſſes to the Princeſs *Elizabeth*, but in vain.

Jan. 19. He is ſent to the *Tower*, and, refuſing to anſwer, is at-
Feb. 25. tainted by the Parliament, and beheaded; for which his
Mar. 20. brother, the Protector, is ſeverely cenſured.

The new Liturgy is eſtabliſhed in all the Churches: The Princeſs *Mary* refuſes to comply with it.

April 12. *Joan Bocher*, an Anabaptiſt, is condemned to be burnt; but the King ſigned the warrant for her execution with great reluctance.

May. June. July. The people being diſcontented at the ſuppreſſion of the Monaſteries, and many ways oppreſſed by the Rich, take occaſion, from a proclamation for incloſures, to commit many riots in *Somerſetſhire*, *Lincolnſhire*, *Kent*, *Eſſex*, *Suffolk*, and *Norfolk*, and other Counties, and to pull down incloſures.

The Protector publiſhes thereupon a proclamation againſt all new incloſures, and grants a general pardon:

But the proclamation not being duly executed, the
June 10. Malecontents gather together in *Devonſhire* and *Cornwal*, to the number of 10,000, and ſet *Humphrey Arundel* at their head. *John* Lord *Ruſſel* being ſent out againſt them, with a few forces, they ſend him their demands, which are rejected; whereupon they beſiege *Exeter*, but the Lord

Ruſſel

Ruſſel beats them, relieves *Exeter*, and puts an end to the inſurrection in *Devonſhire*. *Ann. C. Aug.* 6.

Arundel, and *Boyer* Mayor of *Bodmin*, are hanged.

The Malecontents in *Norfolk* flock together to the number of 20,000, headed by one *Robert Kett* a Tanner, of great ſubſtance.

William Parr, Marquiſs of *Northampton*, is ſent againſt them, with 1100 men; he marches to *Norwich*, and is driven out thence, with the loſs of 130 of his men. *July* 31.

John Dudley, Earl of *Warwick*, marches againſt them, with the army deſigned for *Scotland*, and diſperſes the Rebels: *Kett* their Captain is taken, and hanged. *Aug.* 27.

An inſurrection breaks out at the ſame time in *Yorkſhire*, but the Rebels accept of a pardon: Some of the Ringleaders, renewing afterwards the ſedition, are executed.

The Protector grants a general pardon for all offences committed before the 21ſt of *Auguſt*, at which the Nobility are offended.

During theſe troubles, the Lords Lieutenants of Counties were firſt appointed.

Henry II, King of *France*, enters the territory of *Boulogne*, without declaring war: His troops are repulſed at the attack of *Bullenberg*. *Auguſt.*

The *French* and *Engliſh* fleets have an engagement near *Jerſey* and *Guernſey*, which Iſlands the *French* attempted to ſeize. *Sept.* 8.

Henry II. beſieges *Boulogne*, but is forced to turn the ſiege into a blockade.

De Thermes takes *Brunghty* Caſtle from the *Engliſh*.

The Protector cauſes *Hadington* to be demoliſhed. — 15.

He propoſes to the Council the reſtoring *Boulogne* to *France*; which propoſal is received with indignation.

William Paget is ſent Ambaſſador to the Emperor *Charles* V, to try to make an Alliance with him for the ſecurity of *Boulogne*.

Edmund Bonner, Biſhop of *London*, is committed to the *Marſhalſea* for a Sermon preached on the 1ſt of this month, and deprived the firſt of *October*. — 21.

The Lord *St. John*, Preſident of the Council, and eight of the Counſellors, ſeparate from the reſt, and (as the King's Council) meet at *Ely-Houſe* in *Holborn*, where they lay the blame of all miſcarriages on the Protector, and contrive his ruin. *Oct.* 6.

The Protector removes the King from *Hampton-Court* to *Windſor*, and cauſes proclamation to be made in ſeve- — 7.

Ann. C. ral towns near *Windſor*, for men to come and defend the King, pretending he was in danger.

Seven Counſellors more go and join thoſe at *Ely-Houſe*.

— 8. They win the Common-Council of *London* to their ſide, who grant them an aid of 500 men.

— 9. Five Counſellors more forſake the Protector; whereupon, he is declared, by the majority of the Council, unworthy of being Protector.

The Council publiſh a proclamation, and write to the King to inform him of their proceedings: The King approves their conduct.

— 11. The Protector is taken into cuſtody.

— 12. The Counſellors, who were the Protector's enemies, go in a body to the King at *Windſor*.

Oct. 14. The Duke of *Somerſet* is accuſed before them of ſeveral crimes, and ſent to the *Tower*.

Thereupon, ſix Lords are appointed Governors of the King's perſon; but *John Dudley*, Earl of *Warwick*, who was the chief author of the Duke of *Somerſet*'s ruin, takes upon him the principal adminiſtration of the Government.

Thomas Wriotheſley, Earl of *Southampton*, withdraws from Court, and dies the 30th of *July* following.

— 18. A ſecond Ambaſſy is ſent to the Emperor *Charles* V, to perſuade him to take *Boulogne* into his protection: His anſwer determines the Council to make peace with *France*.

— 28. The Earl of *Warwick* is made High-Admiral, and Great Maſter of the King's Houſhold.

Nov. 4. A new Parliament meets, which makes a ſevere act againſt unlawful Aſſemblies; but repeals part of the act againſt Vagabonds.

By this Parliament, the relief, granted to the King out of ſheep and clothes, was releaſed, and the relief for goods continued: And a ſubſidy was granted to his Majeſty of 1 *s.* in the pound of goods, from Denizens, and of every Alien 2 *s.* in the pound.

A Form for conſecrating Archbiſhops, Biſhops, Prieſts, and Deacons, was now appointed.

— 10. Pope *Paul* III. dies; in his room is choſen Cardinal *Pole*, who loſes the Pontificate by a piece of nicety.

1550. *Jan.* 2. *Reg.* 4. An act of attainder is paſſed againſt *Edward Seymour*, Duke of *Somerſet*, grounded upon his confeſſion, ſubſcribed with his own hand, in the *Tower*: And he is fined, and condemned to loſe all his places.

February. An act is paſſed, confirming the new Liturgy, and ordering, That all Maſs-books whatſoever, and Images, ſhall be utterly aboliſhed.

The

The Parliament is prorogued. *Ann. C.*

During this Seſſion, the eldeſt ſons of Peers were firſt — 2.
permitted to ſit in the Houſe of Commons.

Julius III. is choſen Pope.

The Earl of *Warwick* reſolves to give up *Boulogne*, and employs *Guidotti*, an *Italian* Merchant, in tranſacting that affair.

Both Courts agree to ſend Plenipotentiaries to ſome place in *Picardy*; accordingly, Conferences for a peace are held at *Boulogne*.

The treaty between the two Crowns is ſigned; but the *Mar.* 24.
Earl of *Warwick* avoids ſigning the ratification of it, in order to eſcape the public odium.

However, the people are extremely enraged at the reſtitution of *Boulogne*; but, in order to divert them, the Earl of *Warwick* calls to a ſtrict account all thoſe that had managed the King's money.

The Duke of *Somerſet* is admitted again into the Privy- *Apr.* 18.
Council.

Polydore Virgil, Author of the *Hiſtory of England*, retires into *Italy*.

The Emperor, *Charles* V, tries to force all the Proteſtants to ſubmit to the determinations of the Council of *Trent*.

This year, the City of *London* purchaſed of the King all the Liberties of *Southwark*: And the Biſhoptic of *Weſtminſter* was united to that of *London*.

Stephen Gardiner, Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, is deprived. 1551.

A *Confeſſion of Faith*, comprized in XLII Articles, is *Reg.* 5.
drawn up. The Princeſs *Mary* refuſes to ſubmit to them, *Feb.* 13.
nd would have gone out of the Kingdom, but is prevented.

The Sweating-ſickneſs rages in *England*, from *April* till *October*. *Henry* and *Charles*, ſons of *Charles Brandon*, Duke of *Suffolk* die of it.

The Earl of *Warwick* forms the project of marrying the Princeſs *Elizabeth* to ſome foreign Prince, of excluding *Mary* from the Succeſſion, and of marrying one of his ſons to *Jane Grey*, eldeſt daughter of *Henry Grey* Marquiſs of *Dorſet*, by *Frances Brandon*, who was the next in Succeſſion after *Henry* VIIIth's two daughters.

King *Edward* ſends an Ambaſſy to *Henry* II, to carry him the order of the Garter, and to propoſe a marriage between Himſelf and the Princeſs *Elizabeth Henry* IId's daughter.

Maurice Elector of *Saxony*, intending to free *Germany* from the Emperor *Charles* the Fifth's yoke, ſends Ambaſſa-

A Deſcription of the Monument of EDWARD VI.

He was buried under the fine altar at the head of Henry VII's Mouſoleum. It was deſtroyed in the civil wars. This exceeding curious piece of work ſeems to have been executed by the ſame artiſt that performed the other admirable braſs works in this chapel.

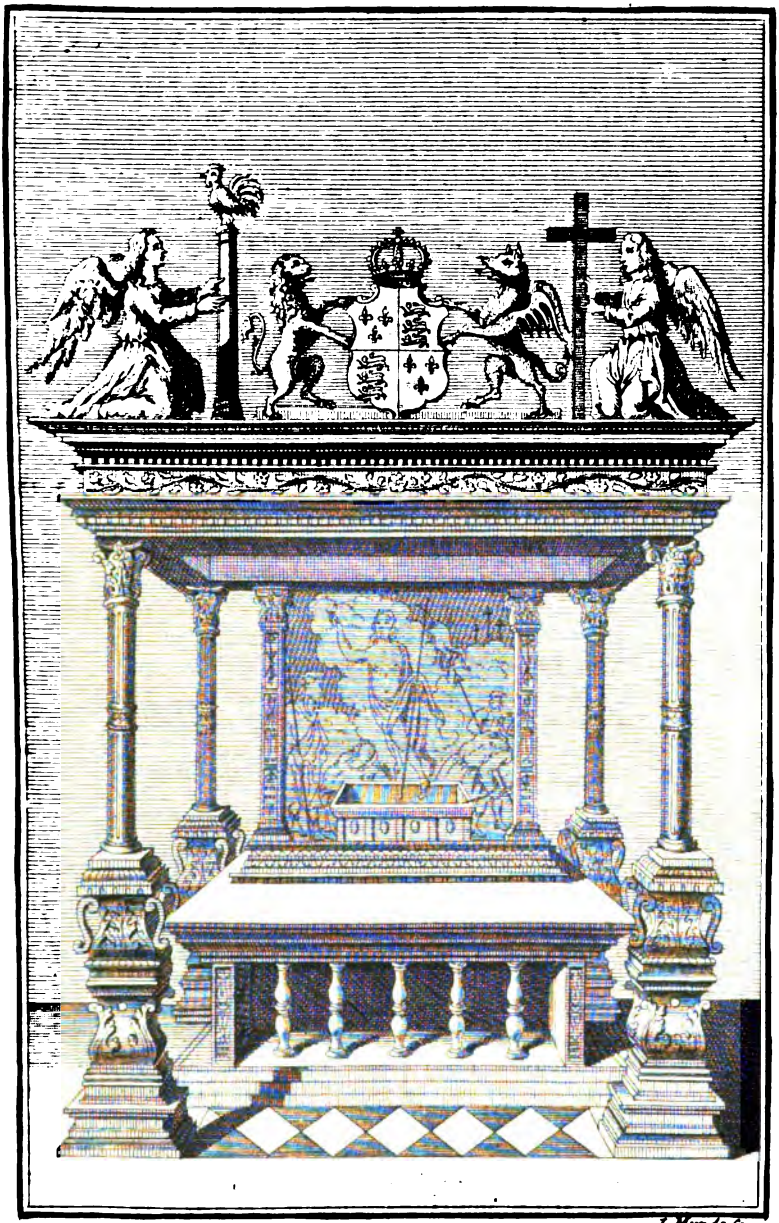
Flete nefas magnum, ſed toto flebitis orbe,
Mortales; veſter corruit omnis honor.
Nam Regum decus, Juvenum flos, ſpeſq; bonorum,
Delitiæ ſæcli, & gloria gentis erat.
Dignus Apollineis lachrimis doctæq; minervæ:
Floſculus heu miſerè concidit ante diem.
Te tumulo dabimus Muſæ, ſupremaq; flentes
Munera, Melpomene triſtia fata canet.

The above epitaph was wrote by Jerome Cardan, and with ſome liberty is rendered in Engliſh:

Let the whole world their common loſs deplore,
For EDWARD dies, and glory is no more.
He was the good man's hope, youth's brighteſt flower,
Joy of the age, and pride of ſovereign power:
For him Apollo and Minerva moan,
Their blooming hope untimely dead and gone.
Whilſt theſe laſt gifts the weeping nine beſtow,
Melpomene laments in ſtrains of woe,
And hails thee fleeting to the ſhades below.

An Account of the MONEY *coined in this Reign.*

By Indentures of the 1ſt and 2d of *Edward* VI, a pound-weight of gold, of twenty Carats fine, and four Carats allay, was coined into thirty pounds by tale, out of which the King had a great profit; and a pound of ſilver of four ounces fine, and eight ounces allay, was coined into forty-eight ſhillings; after which rate, every pound of fine ſilver made in current money ſeven pounds four ſhillings; and the King's profit on every pound-weight was four pounds four ſhillings.—— In the 3d year of this King, a pound-weight of Gold of twenty-two Carats fine, and two Carats allay, was to be coined into thirty-four pounds by tale, into Sovereigns at 20 *s.* a-piece, Half-Sovereigns at 10 *s.* a-piece, Crowns at 5 *s.* and Half-Crowns at 2 *s.* 6 *d.* a-piece: And a pound-weight of Silver of ſix ounces fine, and ſix ounces allay,



J. Mynde sc.

The Monument of K. EDWARD VI.

allay, was to be coined into ſeventy-two ſhillings, which were to go for 12 *d.* a-piece by tale; of which the Merchant, for every pound-weight of fine Silver, received three pounds four ſhillings, and the King above four pounds gain.—— In the 4th year of this Reign, a pound-weight of Gold of the old ſtandard, of twenty-three Carats, and three grains and a half fine, was coined into twenty-eight

pounds ſixteen ſhillings by tale; namely, into Sovereigns, at 24 *s.* a-piece, Half-Sovereigns at 12 *s.* Angels at 8 *s.* and Half-Angels at 4 *s.* a-piece.—— In the 5th of this Reign, a pound-weight of Silver of three ounces fine, and nine ounces allay, was coined into ſeventy-two ſhillings, at 12 *d.* a-piece; and the Merchant received for every ounce of fine Silver

Silver, which he ſhould bring to the Mint, ten ſhillings of ſuch money; by which means twelve ounces of fine Silver was exorbitantly raiſed to fourteen pounds eighteen ſhillings. —— In the 6th of this Reign, a pound-weight of Gold, of the old ſtandard, aforeſaid, was coined into thirty-ſix pounds by tale; namely, twenty-four Sovereigns at 30*s.* a-piece, ſeventy-two Angels at 10*s.* a-piece, or one hundred and forty-four Half-Angels: And a pound-weight of Crown Gold of twenty-two Carats fine, and two Carats allay, was coined into thirty-three pounds by tale; namely, thirty-three Sovereigns at 20*s.* a-piece, or ſixty-ſix Half-Sovereigns at 10*s.* a-piece, or one hundred and thirty-two Crowns, or two hundred and ſixty-four Half-Crowns: And a pound-weight of Silver, conſiſting of eleven ounces, one penny-weight fine, and nineteen penny-weight allay, was coined into three pounds by tale; namely, twelve Crowns, or twenty-four Half-Crowns, or ſixty Shillings, or one hundred and twenty Six-pences, or two hundred and forty Three-pences, or ſeven hundred and twenty Pence, or one thouſand four hundred and forty Half-pence, or two thouſand eight hundred and eighty Farthings.

Ann. C. The NOBILITY, created in this Reign, was as follows:

1546-7. 15, 16. *February.* *Edward Seymour*, Earl of *Hertford* —— Baron *Seymour*, and Duke of *Somerſet*.

16 *Feb.* *William Parr*, Earl of *Eſſex* —— Marquiſs of *Northampton*.
John Dudley, Viſcount *Liſle* —— Earl of *Warwick*.
Thomas Seymour, Baron *Seymour* of *Sudley-Caſtle*.
Edmund Sheffield, Baron *Sheffield* of *Butterwike*.
Richard Rich, Baron *Rich*.
William Willoughby, Baron *Willoughby* of *Parham*.
Thomas Baron *Wriotheſly* —— Earl of *Southampton*.

1548-9. 23 *Jan.* *George Darcy*, Baron *Darcy* of *Aſton*, reſtored by patent.

1549. 19 *Jan.* *William Paulet*, Earl of *Wiltſhire*.

1551. 11 *Oct.* —— Marquiſs of *Wincheſter*.

1549. 19 *Jan.* *John* Baron *Ruſſel*, Earl of *Bedford*.

2 *Feb.* *Walter Devereux*, Baron *Ferrers* of *Chartley*, Viſcount *Hereford*.

1550. 3 *Dec.* *William Paget*, Baron *Paget* of *Beaudeſert*.

Thomas

Q MARY I
G. Vertue Sculp.

Ann. C.

Thomas Darcy, Baron *Darcy of Chiche*. 1551.

William Herbert, Baron *Herbert* of *Caerdiff*, next day, Earl of *Pembroke*. 5 *April*. 10 *Oct.*

Henry Grey, Duke of *Suffolk*. 11 *Oct.*

John Dudley, Earl of *Warwick* —— Duke of *Northumberland*.

Knights of the Garter elected in the Reign of King EDWARD VI.

Henry Grey, Marquiſs of *Dorſet*, afterwards Duke of *Suffolk*.

Edward Stanley, Earl of *Derby*.

Thomas Seymour, Lord *Seymour* of *Sudley*.

Sir *William Paget*, Knight, afterwards Lord *Paget*.

Francis Haſtings, Earl of *Huntingdon*.

George Brooke, Lord *Cobham*.

Thomas Weſt, Lord *la Ware*.

Sir *William Herbert*, Knight, afterwards Lord *Herbert* of *Cardiff*, and Earl of *Pembroke*.

Henry II. King of *France*.

Edward Clinton, alias *Fines*, Lord *Clinton*, afterwards Earl of *Lincoln*.

Thomas Darcy, Lord *Darcy* of *Chiche*.

Henry Nevil, Earl of *Weſtmoreland*.

Sir *Andrew Dudley*, Knight.

22. MARY.

MARY, *Elizabeth*, *Mary* Queen of *Scotland*, and *Jane Grey*, pretend all four to the Crown, but *Mary* and *Jane Grey* remain the only competitors. 1553. *Reg.* 1.

Mary being at *Hoddeſdon* in her way to *London*, and hearing of the King's death, and of the Duke of *Northumberland*'s deſign to ſecure her, withdraws to *Kenninghall* in *Suffolk*; from whence ſhe writes a letter to the Privy Council, and claims the Crown. *July* 9.

But not thinking herſelf quite ſafe there, ſhe retires to *Framlingham-Caſtle* nearer the ſea, from whence ſhe might upon occaſion eſcape out of the Kingdom, and takes the title of Queen; ſhortly after, ſhe is proclaimed at *Norwich*, and ſends a circular letter to all the Nobility requiring their aſſiſtance. 13.

John

Ann. C. *John Dudley* Duke of *Northumberland*, and *Henry Grey* Duke of *Suffolk*, give *Jane* notice of her being Queen; ſhe accepts the Crown with reluctance, and withdraws to the *Tower*, with the Council.

9. The Council returns no favourable anſwer to *Mary*'s letter, inſiſting much upon her illegitimacy

10. *Jane* is proclaimed: The people expreſs no joy at it. The Counties of *Norfolk* and *Suffolk* declare for *Mary*; and deſire her not to alter the Religion her brother had eſtabliſhed: She poſitively promiſes them to leave Religion in the ſame ſtate ſhe found it.

11. *Jane* ſends *Richard Shelley* Ambaſſador to the Emperor, who refuſes him audience.

The Council raiſes troops to oppoſe *Mary*.

Henry Fitz-Alan, Earl of *Arundel*, breaks the Duke of *Northumberland*'s meaſures, by perſuading Queen *Jane* to put him at the head of her troops, inſtead of her father, the Duke of *Suffolk*.

14. The Duke of *Northumberland* goes from *London* to head 6000 men, who were aſſembled at *Newmarket*: He marches to *Cambridge*, and from thence to *St. Edmundsbury*; but his army is much diminiſhed by deſertions.

16. Biſhop *Ridley* preaches at St. *Paul*'s in favour of *Jane*, and ſhews the danger the Reformation would undergo under Queen *Mary*'s Adminiſtration.

Sir *Edward Haſtings* declares for *Mary*, with 4000 men, and gets her proclaimed at *Buckingham*.

Six men of war declare likewiſe for her, at *Yarmouth*.

18. The Duke of *Northumberland*, after advancing as far as St. *Edmundsbury*, returns to *Cambridge*, from whence he ſends to the Council for a ſpeedy ſupply.

July 19. Some of the Counſellors find means to get out of the *Tower*; and aſſembling at *Baynard*'s Caſtle, they declare for *Mary*, and get her proclaimed at *London*: *Henry Grey*, Duke of *Suffolk*, delivers up the *Tower* to them.

Jane lays down her Dignity, after having enjoyed it about nine days.

The Duke of *Northumberland* is ordered to diſmiſs his army; but he prevents the orders, and proclaims Queen

20. *Mary* at *Cambridge*.

21. He is apprehended by the Earl of *Arundel*, and carried to

25. the *Tower*, with three of his ſons, and ſeveral others:

26. Whereupon, the whole Kingdom declares for *Mary*.

27. *Jane Grey*, the Duke of *Suffolk*, Biſhop *Ridley*, and ſeve-

28. ral others, are made priſoners in the *Tower*; but the Duke of

of *Suffolk* is releaſed, being looked upon as uncapable of creating any diſturbance. *Ann. C.* 31.

Queen *Mary* makes her entry into *London*. *Aug.* 3.

Thomas Howard, Duke of *Norfolk*, Biſhop *Gardiner*, and *Bonner*, the Ducheſs of *Somerſet*, and the Lord *Courtney*, are releaſed out of the *Tower*, and the latter made, ſhortly after, Earl of *Devonſhire*. 5.

The Queen being determined to reſtore Popery, reſolves to ſend for Cardinal *Pole*, as Legate, to reconcile *England* to the Pope: But *Gardiner* oppoſes it, and gets the Emperor to diſſuade Queen *Mary* from that reſolution. The Queen gives him the Great Seal. 23. 10. 12.

King *Edward*'s funeral is ſolemnized.

Queen *Mary* declares, that ſhe would not force men's conſciences in matters of Religion.

Bourn, Biſhop *Bonner*'s Chaplain, is like to be murdered by the People, for reflecting, in a Sermon of his, upon the memory of King *Edward* VI. He is reſcued by *Bradford* and *Rogers*, two Proteſtant Miniſters. 13.

The Queen iſſues out a Proclamation, which diſcovers her intentions, with regard to Religion; forbidding all aſſemblies of the people, and preaching without her ſpecial licenſe. *Aug.* 18.

John Dudley, Duke of *Northumberland*, *William Parr*, Marquiſs of *Northampton*, *Ambroſe Dudley*, Earl of *Warwick*, Sir *Andrew Dudley*, Sir *John*, and Sir *Henry Gates*, and Sir *Thomas Palmer*, are brought to their trials, and condemned. 19.

The Duke of *Northumberland*, Sir *John Gates*, and Sir *Thomas Palmer*, are executed. 22.

Deputies from *Suffolk*, who came to petition the Queen on account of her late Proclamation, are ill received at Court, and *Dobbe*, one of them, is ſet in the pillory, for having ſpoken too freely of the Queen's promiſe, Not to alter Religion.

Bradford and *Rogers*, the two Miniſters that had reſcued *Bourn*, are impriſoned.

The Biſhops depoſed in King *Edward*'s time, *viz. Bonner*, *Gardiner*, *Tonſtal*, *Day*, and *Heath*, are reſtored.

Many Proteſtant Clergymen are impriſoned, and the Maſs is reſtored in ſeveral places.

Sir *James Hales*, one of the Juſtices of the Common-Pleas, above-mentioned, is impriſoned for charging the Juſtices of Peace, in one of the circuits, to ſee to the execution of King *Edward*'s laws; and the apprehenſion of further

Ann. C. further punishment renders him melancholy, so that he afterwards drowns himself.

Peter Martyr, being insulted by the Popish party at *Oxford*, leaves that place, and retires to Archbishop *Cranmer*, at *Lambeth*.

Sept. 12. *Cranmer* is cited into the Star-Chamber, for a writing, wherein he declares, he had no intention of abjuring his Religion; and is dismissed, without punishment.

14. He is summoned before the Council, accused of High-
15. treason, and sent to the *Tower*, with *Latimer*.

The Reformed, who were Strangers, are permitted to leave the Kingdom; but the *English* are not.

The Queen rewards her friends, particularly *Henry Fitz-Alan*, Earl of *Arundel*, Sir *Edward Hastings*, and *Henry Ratcliffe*, Earl of *Sussex*.

Oct. 1. Queen *Mary* is crowned.

An Act of Grace is published, but clogged with many exceptions.

4. The Queen remits to her subjects the subsidy granted by the last Parliament of King *Edward* VI.

Robert Holgate, Archbishop of *York*, is sent to the *Tower*, on a general accusation. And, six days before that, *John Vesey*, Bishop of *Exeter*, is restored to his See, of which he had been deprived in the last Reign.

The Court finds means of getting a Parliament at their devotion, by all sorts of unfair dealing, and violence.

5. *John Taylor*, Bishop of *Lincoln*, and *John Harley*, Bishop of *Hereford*, are expelled the House of Lords for refusing to kneel at the Mass.

5. The Parliament meets, and passes an act, limiting Treason, to what was declared to be such, by statute 25 *Edward* III. but doth not meddle with Religion.

21. It is prorogued, till the 24th of *October*.

24. In their second Session, the divorce between King *Henry* VIII, and *Catharine* of *Arragon*, is repealed.

And likewise all the statutes of King *Edward* VI, which established the Reformation: And the Mass is ordered to be used throughout the Realm, after *December* 20.

By another act, molesting or disturbing a Minister in the Church, is made imprisonment.

And another confirms the College of Physicians, in *London*.

Nov. 13. *Jane Grey*, *Guilford Dudley*, her husband; *Ambrose*, another son of the late Duke of *Northumberland*, and Arch-

bishop

bishop *Cranmer*, are brought to their trials, at *Guildhall*, and condemned as Traitors. *Ann. C.*

The attainder of *Thomas Howard*, Duke of *Norfolk*, is reversed; but that of the late Duke of *Northumberland*, and of his three sons, Sir *John*, *Ambrose*, and *Andrew*, Knights, and of Archbishop *Cranmer*, *William*, Marquis of *Northampton*, and Sir *John Gates* and Sir *Thomas Palmer*, Knights, is confirmed.

Commendone is sent to *England* by Cardinal *Dandini*, the Pope's Legate at *Brussels*. The Queen desires him to intercede with the Pope to send over Cardinal *Pole*, as his Legate; but *Gardiner* opposes it, for his own ends.

The Emperor, *Charles V.* proposes to Queen *Mary* a marriage between her and his son, *Philip*, Prince of *Spain*: The Queen approves of it.

Cardinal *Pole* is detained in *Germany*, for fear he should obstruct the marriage.

The House of Commons petitions the Queen not to marry a foreign Prince: whereupon she dissolves the Parliament. *Dec.* 6.

The Convocation of the Clergy establishes Transubstantiation. A public Disputation is held upon it, between the Popish and Protestant Clergy.

The Mass begins again to be sung in *Latin*, throughout *England*. 21.

The Emperor sends an Ambassy to *London*, to conclude the marriage. 1554.

The treaty for it is signed. *January.* 12.

William Parr, Marquis of *Northampton*, is pardoned. 13.

Robert Dudley, fifth son of the late Duke of *Northumberland*, is arraigned and condemned for High-treason. 15.

The Queen suspends the act against the *German* Merchants, in the *Still-Yard*, to please the Emperor.

The people murmur against her marriage; and *Henry Grey*, Duke of *Suffolk*, in *Kent*, Sir *Thomas Wyat*, in *Warwickshire*, and Sir *Peter Carew*, in *Cornwall*, form the design of causing a general insurrection, to hinder that marriage.

Carew is discovered, and flies into *France*.

Wyat repairs to *Maidstone*, and thence to *Rochester*, with a handful of men; and refuses to lay down his arms.

Five hundred of the City Trained-bands, commanded by *Alexander Brett*, which the Duke of *Norfolk* was leading against *Wyat*, desert the Duke, and join *Wyat*, who advances as far as *Deptford*. 25. 31.

Ann. C. The Queen diſpatches two meſſengers to him: He makes them unreaſonable demands, which are rejected.

Feb. 3 He comes to *Southwark*; but finding the bridge guarded againſt him, he went and paſſed the *Thames* at *Kingſton*, and

6. thence marched to *London*.

He enters *Weſtminſter*, and advances towards the City;

7. but finding *Ludgate* ſhut againſt him, he ſurrenders, and is ſent to priſon.

11. The Duke of *Suffolk*, having been betrayed and taken, is brought to the *Tower*.

12. *Jane Grey*, and *Guilford Dudley*, her huſband, are executed.

14, 15, *Bret*, with 58 more of the Rebels, are hanged; but

18, 20. The Queen pardoned 600 that had been concerned in the inſurrection.

21. *Henry Grey*, Duke of *Suffolk*, is beheaded.

Mar. 4. Queen *Mary* gives Chancellor *Gardiner* a particular order to purge the Church of all married Biſhops and Prieſts. She moreover grants a Commiſſion to him, and others, to deprive *Holgate*, Archbiſhop of *York*, and *Farrar*, *Bird*, and *Bush*, Biſhops of St. *David's*, *Cheſter*, and *Briſtol*, for being married: And two days after, *Taylor*, *Hooper*, and *Harley*, Biſhops of *Lincoln*, *Gloucester*, and *Hereford*, for

13. being Proteſtants.

Mar. 15. Sir *Thomas Wyat*, at his trial, accuſes the Princeſs *Eliza-*

Mar. 18. *beth*, and *Edward Courtney*, Earl of *Devonſhire*; whereupon they are both committed to the *Tower*; but *Wyat* clears them, upon a ſecond examination.

The Maſs is reſtored every where.

April 2. The Parliament meets again, and is entirely at the Court's devotion, having been bribed by *Gardiner*.

They enact, That the Regal Office, and all prerogatives, *&c.* thereunto annexed, are as fully in the Queen, as they were in any of her Progenitors, Kings of *England*.

The Biſhopric of *Durham* is reſtored to its antient rights.

The Parliament confirms the treaty of marriage between the Queen and *Philip*.

April 11. Sir *Thomas Wyat* is beheaded.

April 17. Sir *Nicholas Throckmorton* being tried as an accomplice in the late inſurrection, and acquitted, his Jury is ſeverely fined. This proved fatal to his brother, Sir *John Throckmorton*, who was brought in guilty, though there were no better proofs againſt him than againſt Sir *Nicholas*.

16, 17, 18. *Cranmer*, *Ridley*, and *Latimer*, are carried to *Oxford*, to maintain there a public Diſputation about the Euchariſt.

They

They are interrupted, and not suffered to be heard: Upon their refusing to make Abjuration, they are excommunicated. *Ann. C.* 20.

The Princess *Elizabeth* is removed from the *Tower* to *Woodstock*, and treated with rigour. *May* 19.

The Parliament is dissolved.

Philip sets out from the *Groin*, and brings with him 27 chests of treasure. 25. *Reg.* 2.

He lands at *Southampton*, and draws his sword upon his landing. *July* 16. 19.

Queen *Mary* goes to meet him as far as *Winchester*, where the marriage is solemnized.

Philip obtains a pardon for the Princess *Elizabeth*, and some others, particularly for *Robert Holgate*, Archbishop of *York*, and the Earl of *Devonshire*; but his grave manner, and reserved air, disgusts the *English*. 25.

Thomas Howard, Duke of *Norfolk*, dies. *Septemb.*

A new Parliament meets. *Nov.* 11.

The Court sends for Cardinal *Pole* over, and his attainder is reversed by Parliament.

The Cardinal arrives in *England*, as the Pope's Legate; and comes to *London*, three days after. 21.

He makes a speech to the Parliament, at which the Queen is so moved, that she fancies she felt a child stir in her womb.

The two Houses of Parliament petition the King and Queen for a Reconciliation of the Kingdom with the Pope: In pursuance of which, Cardinal *Pole* grants them a full absolution, and also absolves the Kingdom from all censures. 29.

Several acts are passed by the Parliament; particularly, one restoring the authority of the Pope; and repealing all articles and provisions made against the See of *Rome*, since the 20th year of King *Henry* VIII, with five restrictions, ratified by the Legate.

Another, to revive the antient statutes of *Richard* II, and *Henry* IV and V, against Heretics.

And another, authorizing *Philip* to assume the title of King of *England*, during his marriage with the Queen, and making it treason to attempt upon his life.

The Court deliberates upon the properest measures to be taken against the Reformed: *Pole* is for gentle, and *Gardiner* for rigorous methods; the latter prevails.

Queen *Mary* sends an Embassy to *Rome*, with offers of

Ann. C. ſubmiſſion to the Pope, from the King, Queen, and the three Eſtates of the Realm.

1555. The Archbiſhop of *York*, Sir *John Rogers*, Sir *James*
Jan. 18. *Crofts*, Sir *Nicholas Throckmorton*, and ſeveral others, are diſcharged from the *Tower*.

A reſolution being taken to proſecute the Reformed with the utmoſt rigour, *Gardiner* readily undertakes to put the laws in execution againſt them.

Feb. 4. Accordingly, *John Rogers* is burnt in *Smithfield*.

8. *Laurence Saunders* at *Coventry*.

9. Biſhop *Hooper* at *Gloueſter*, and Dr. *Rowland Taylor*, at *Hadley*.

But *Gardiner* finding this office very odious, he transfers his Commiſſion to perſecute the Reformed to *Edmund Bonner*, Biſhop of *London*, who executes it with great fury.

The perſecution cauſing an univerſal conſternation all over the Kingdom, the Biſhops throw the blame of thoſe
10. cruel proceedings upon the Court; but *Philip* orders his Confeſſor to preach againſt perſecution.

At this, the Biſhops are ſo amazed, that they do not, for ſome time, commit any to the flames; but they ſoon renew their cruelties againſt the Proteſtants.

Mar. 23. Pope *Julius* III. dies.

28. Queen *Mary* reſtores the Abbey-lands, and other poſſeſſions, taken from the Churches and Monaſteries, in the two laſt Reigns.

29. *John Laurence* is burnt at *Colcheſter*; as is, the next day, *Robert Ferrar*, Biſhop of St. *David's*, at *Caermarthen*; and many others, this, and the following month, in diverſe places.

April 9. *Marcellus* II. is choſen Pope.

The Princeſs *Elizabeth* is releaſed from her confinement at *Woodſtock*.

Pope *Marcellus* II. dies, 22 days after his exaltation: Upon his death, *Mary* forms the deſign of raiſing Cardinal
May 23. *Pole* to the Papacy; but *Paul* IV. is choſen Pope.

June 7. He privately erects *Ireland* into a Kingdom; then gives audience to the *Engliſh* Ambaſſadors, and demands of them the reſtitution of the goods of the Church, and of *Peter-pence*.

The Privy-Council orders the Juſtices of Peace, particularly thoſe in *Norfolk*, to proceed againſt the Reformed, to whom they were thought too indulgent.

The Queen who thought herſelf with child, has a falſe conception;

conception; whereupon King *Philip* grows weary of her, *Ann. C.*
and goes over into *Flanders*.

A pretended conſpiracy is diſcovered, in *Derſetſhire* and *Eſſex*, but it comes to nothing.

A ſtrict inquiry is made after thoſe who had viſited, and plundered the Churches and Monaſteries.

Pope *Paul* IV. makes a league with *France* againſt *Spain*. *October.*

Nicholas Ridley, Biſhop of *London*, and *Hugh Latimer*, 16.
late Biſhop of *Worceſter*, are burnt at *Oxford*; and many others, in divers places, during the courſe of this year.

The Parliament meets, and confirms the Queen's reſig- 21.
nation of the firſt-fruits and tenths to the Pope.

They likewiſe make an act for the mending of high-ways, and chuſing ſurveyors.

The Commons begin to oppoſe the Court; however, they grant the Queen a ſubſidy, *viz.* from every perſon worth from 5 *l.* to 10 *l.* eight pence in the pound; from 10 *l.* to 20 *l.* twelve-pence in the pound, and from 20 *l.* and upwards, ſixteen-pence. Strangers to pay double.—The Clergy granted 6 *s.* in the pound, to be paid in three years.

Stephen Gardiner Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, and High-Chan- *Nov.* 12.
cellor, dies.

The Parliament is diſſolved. *Dec.* 9.

Pope *Paul* IV. ſends a bull to erect *Ireland* into a Kingdom.

The Emperor *Charles* V. reſigns all his *Spaniſh* Dominions to his Son *Philip*, and the Imperial dignity to his brother *Ferdinand*.

This year, the Heralds were incorporated.——And coaches came firſt in uſe in *England*.

Nicholas Heath Archbiſhop of *York* is made High-Chan- 1556.
cellor. *Jan.* 1.

A five years truce is concluded between *France* and *Spain*. *Feb.* 5.

Thomas Cranmer Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* is degraded: 14.
He ſigns ſix abjurations, notwithſtanding which he is burnt, *Mar.* 21.
at *Oxford*.

Cardinal *Pole* is made Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*. 22.

The perſecution of the Reformed is carried on with the *Reg.* 4.
utmoſt barbarity.

Queen *Mary* repairs old Monaſteries, particularly that of *Weſtminſter*, and erects new ones.

She gives a Commiſſion to Biſhop *Bonner*, and ſome others, to raze out of the public records all that had been

Ann. C. done by King *Henry* VIII. againſt the Monks and the Pope.

Pope *Paul* IV. prevails with *Henry* II. King of *France*, to break the truce he had concluded, in the beginning of this year, with *Spain*.

1557. Cardinal *Pole* viſits both the Univerſities, and cauſes the bones of *Bucer* and *Fagius* to be burnt at *Cambridge*.

January. The wife of *Peter Martyr* is alſo dug out of her grave at *Oxford*, and buried in a dunghill.

The Magiſtrates grow remiſs in the perſecution; whereupon the Council writes circular letters to all the towns to inflame their zeal.

Queen *Mary* grants a Commiſſion tending to erect a kind of Inquiſition in *England*; after which inſues a dreadful perſecution.

The Duke of *Guiſe* marches into *Italy* to conquer *Naples*; whereupon, King *Philip*, coming to *England*, prevails

Mar. 20. upon Queen *Mary* to declare againſt *France*.

Apr. 27. *Thomas*, ſecond ſon of the Lord *Stafford*, lands in *Scotland* with *French* troops; and from thence paſſes into *England*, where he aſſumes the title of Protector of *England*, and takes *Scarborough-Caſtle*; but being taken priſoner, he

May 28. is carried to *London*, and executed.

June 7. The Queen declares war againſt *France*; and 8000 *Engliſh* under the conduct of *William Herbert*, Earl of *Pembroke*, go and join the *Spaniſh* army in the *Low-Countries*.

17.

July 7. King *Philip* himſelf departs from *England*, and returns to *Bruſſels*.

15. *Anne* of *Cleves*, fourth wife of King *Henry* VIII. dies at

Reg. 5. *Chelſea*.

Aug. 10. The Duke of *Savoy* General of the *Spaniſh* army beſieges

27. St. *Quintin*; and having defeated the *French* at the battle of St. *Laurence*, makes himſelf maſter of St. *Quintin*.

The Pope recalls Cardinal *Pole* from his legation, and appoints *Peyto*, the Queen's Confeſſor, to ſucceed him; but the Queen forbids *Peyto*'s ſetting foot in *England*.

The Duke of *Guiſe* returning to *France*, the Pope is unable to act alone againſt King *Philip*, and therefore makes a peace with *Spain*, and reſtores *Pole* to his office of Legate.

The *Scots*, through the ſollicitations of *Henry* II. King of *France*, make an irruption into *England*.

Philip gives Queen *Mary* notice of a deſign formed againſt *Calais*.

1558. *Calais* is accordingly beſieged by the Duke of *Guiſe*, and

Jan. 1. taken,

taken, as are alſo *Guiſnes* and *Hames*; and all in leſs than *Aug. C.*
fifteen days: Which occaſions great murmurings among the people.

Philip preſſes the Queen to make a vigorous effort for the recovery of *Calais*, before *France* had time to repair and fortify it.

The Parliament meets, and grants the Queen a ſubſidy 20.
of 4 *s.* in the pound of lands (8 *s.* of Strangers) and 2 *s.* and 8 *d.* of goods from every perſon worth 5 *l.* —— And likewiſe a fifteenth. —— The Clergy granted at the ſame time 8 *s.* in the pound, to be paid in four years.

An act is made, for confirmation of all Letters Patents, *&c.* made by the King and Queen, or by the Queen ſince the beginning of her Reign; or ſeven years after the paſſing of this act.

Ambroſe and *Robert Dudley*, two ſons of the late Duke of *Northumberland*, are reſtored in blood.

The Parliament is prorogued. *Mar.* 7.

Ferdinand I. is declared Emperor, upon the reſignation 14.
of *Charles* V.

Francis the Dauphin marries *Mary* Queen of *Scotland*; *April* 28.
the States of that Kingdom conſent he ſhould take the title of King of *Scotland*.

The King of *Sweden* demands the Princeſs *Elizabeth* in marriage; But ſhe excuſes herſelf.

The perſecution is kindled afreſh; and, during this reign, there were 284 Proteſtants inhumanly burnt.

Edward Lord *Clinton* puts to ſea with 140 ſail, in order to make an attempt upon *Breſt*; but finding it too difficult, *June.*
he only burns *Conqueſt*, and then retires. *Reg.* 6.

The Emperor *Charles* V. dies. *Sept.* 17.

A peace begins to be negotiated at *Cambray* between *October.*
France, *England*, and *Spain*.

The Parliament meets again, and makes ſome difficulty *Nov.* 5.
of granting a ſubſidy, that was required.

Queen *Mary* dies, after having reigned five years, four 17.
months, and eleven days: And was buried in King *Henry* the VIIth's Chapel at *Weſtminſter*.

Cardinal *Pole* dies ſixteen hours after her.

The Character *of Queen* MARY.

The exceſſive bigotry of Queen *Mary* is evident from the Hiſtory of her Reign. To this ſhe joined a temper cruel and vindictive, which ſhe endeavoured to compound with zeal

Ann. C. for Religion. But when it was not poſſible to unite them, ſhe plainly ſhewed, ſhe was inclined to cruelty, as well by nature as zeal. She had the misfortune to be encouraged in this diſpoſition by all who approached her. King *Philip* was naturally moroſe. *Gardiner* was one of the moſt revengeful men living. *Bonner* was a fury; and the other Biſhops were choſen from amongſt the moſt cruel and barbarous of the Clergy. This was the quality by which alone a man was thought worthy of the Epiſcopal Dignity. The perſecution therefore againſt the Proteſtants in this Reign, has nothing which ought to ſeem ſtrange. Dr. *Burnet* ſays, *Mary* had a generous diſpoſition of mind. It were to be wiſhed, he had given us ſome paſſages of her life, where this generoſity appeared. For my part (ſays *Rapin*) I find but one action to approve in her whole Reign. This was her rejecting the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador's project, to make herſelf abſolute at the expence of the laws and liberties of the Nation. She diſcovered no great capacity in the Government of her Dominions; and the loſs of *Calais*, though there was not ſomething more odious, would be an everlaſting blot upon her Reign.

An Account of the MONEY *coined in this Reign.*

By an Indenture of the firſt of Queen *Mary*, a pound weight of Gold, of the old Standard, was coined into thirty-ſix pounds; and a pound weight of Silver, eleven ounces fine, was coined into three pounds by tale.

The Gold Coins of this Queen, are, Sovereigns at 30 *s.* Half-Sovereigns at 15 *s.* Angels at 10 *s.* and Half-Angels at 5 *s.* a piece.——The money before her marriage has her head half-faced, crowned, MARIA D. G. ANG. FRA. Z. HIB. REGI. Reverſe, the arms of *France* and *England* quartered, VERITAS. TEMPORIS. FILIA. (*Fig.* 1). Thoſe after her marriage have only her head as before, but her husband's name in the Legend, PHILIP. Z. MARIA. D. G. REX. Z. REGINA. Reverſe, POSVIMVS. DEVM. ADIVTO. NOS.——Her Sovereign, (called by Mr. *Evelyn*, a Ryal, and which, he ſays was ſcattered at her Coronation) has, on one ſide, the Queen in her Robes, with Crown, Scepter, and Ball, ſitting upon her Throne; at her feet a portcullice, MARIA. D. G. ANG. FRA. Z. HIB. REGINA. MDLIII. Reverſe, a large full blown Roſe, filling up the ſpace, with the arms of *France* and *England*, quartered in the center, A. DNO. FACTV.

FACTV. EST. ISTVD. Z. EST. MIRA. IN. OCVL. NRIS. The Angel has on the Reverſe, the Queen's arms in a ſhip, with a croſs for the maſt, and the ſtar and letter M. on each ſide, inſcribed, A. DNO. FACTVM. EST. ISTVD. *Camden* mentions a Crown of Gold of this Queen whereon was, MVNDI. SALVS. VNICA. —— The ſilver moneys of Queen *Mary* are, Shillings, Sixpences, and Groats; to which Biſhop *Nicolſon* adds, Half-Groats, and Pennies; but *Thoresby* ſays, he never ſaw or heard of any of theſe laſt. Upon the Shillings of *Philip* and *Mary* are both their heads facing each other under a Crown,

1

2

PHILIP. ET. MARIA. D. GR. ANG. FR. NEAP. PR. HISP. 1554. Reverſe, the arms of *Spain* and the Queen's, impaled, crowned, and XII. POSVIMVS. &c. There is another ſort of theſe Shillings, wanting the date. (See *Fig.* 2.) Another, PHILIP. ET MARIA. D. G. REX. ET. REGINA. ANG. Reverſe, as the former. The Emperor *Charles* V. reſigning *Spain* to his ſon *Philip* in 1555, occaſioned an alteration in *Philip*'s ſtyle, his and the Queen's title, being now upon the Great Seal, *Rex & Regina, Angl. Hiſpaniar. Franc. utriuſque Sicilie*, &c. The *Iriſh* Shilling, before the Queen's marriage gave her head crowned, MARIA. D. G. ANG. FRA. Z. HIB. REGINA. Reverſe, a Harp betwixt M. and R. all crowned, VERITAS. TEMPORIS. FILIA. MDLIII.

Ann. C.

The NOBILITY, created in this Reign, was as follows:

1553. 3 *Sept.* *Edward*, Baron *Courtney*,——Earl of *Devonshire*.

1553-4. 17 *Feb.* *Edward North*, Baron *North*, of *Kirtling*.

11 *Mar.* *Thomas Howard*, Baron *Howard* of *Effingham*.

1554. 5 *April.* *John Williams*, Baron *Williams* of *Tame*.

8 *April.* *John Bruges*, Baron *Chandos*.

2 *Sept.* *Anthony Brown*, Viscount *Montacute*.

1557. 30 *April.* *Thomas Percy*, Baron *Percy*——and the next day restored Earl of *Northumberland*.

19 *Jan.* *George Hastings*, Baron *Hastings* of *Loughborough*.

Knights of the Garter elected in the Reign of Queen MARY.

Philip King of *Spain*, of that name the second, afterwards King of *England*.
Henry Ratcliffe, Earl of *Sussex*.
Emanuel Philibert, Duke of *Savoy*.
William Howard, Lord *Howard* of *Effingham*.
Anthony Brown, Viscount *Montacute*.
Sir *Edward Hastings*, Knight, afterwards Lord *Hastings*, of *Loughborough*.
Thomas Ratcliff, Earl of *Sussex*.
William Grey, Lord *Grey* of *Wilton*.
Sir *Robert Rochester*.

BOOK XVII.

The Reign of Queen ELIZABETH: *Containing the space of forty-four years and four months.*

23. ELIZABETH.

1558. *Reg.* 1. *Novemb.* MARY Queen of *Scotland*, and *Frances* Duchess of *Suffolk*, are *Elizabeth*'s competitors to the Crown. The House of Lords declare for *Elizabeth*; and the Commons concur with them in owning her for Queen.

Whereupon *Elizabeth* is proclaimed: She was then 25 years old. She

Q ELIZABETH

She comes attended to *London*, from *Hatfield*, by a numerous train of Lords and Ladies. *Ann. D. Nov.* 19.

Ambaſſadors are ſent by her to all the principal Courts of *Europe*.

She forms a Council, in which ſhe leaves thirteen of Queen *Mary*'s Counſellors who were all zealous *Roman* Catholics; but adds to them eight new ones equally attached to the Proteſtant Religion.

Sir *Nicholas Bacon* is made Lord-Keeper of the Great Seal, in the room of Archbiſhop *Heath*.

Philip II. King of *Spain* makes her an offer of marriage, which ſhe objects againſt: But reſolves, however, to preſerve his friendſhip, if poſſible.

Queen *Elizabeth* examines before her Cabinet-Council, which were the propereſt methods to reſtore the Reformed Religion.

The Liturgy is reviſed; and the Queen allows, by a Proclamation, the Goſpels and Epiſtles, the Lord's Prayer, Creed, Litany, and Ten Commandments to be read in *Engliſh*; but forbids all preaching on controverſial ſubjects, *&c.*

The funeral of Queen *Mary* is ſolemnized. *Dec.* 13.

Some Gentlemen in *Scotland* form an Aſſociation, under the name of *Congregation*, for the defence of the New, or Reformed Religion. The Queen-Regent gives them permiſſion to celebrate Divine Service in their own way.

Several eminent Proteſtants, in *England*, are promoted to honours. 1559. *January*.

Queen *Elizabeth* is crowned by *Owen Oglethorp*, Biſhop of *Carliſle*; the reſt of the Biſhops refuſing to aſſiſt at that ſolemnity. 15.

The Parliament meets, and makes an act, for reviving ſeveral ſtatutes, againſt the Pope, and for the Supremacy of the Crown, that had been repealed by Queen *Mary*. 23.

As alſo an act for the Uniformity of the Common-Prayer, and Service in the Church, and Adminiſtration of the Sacraments.

And another for recognition of the Queen's title to the imperial Crown of this Realm.

By clauſe 18, in the firſt of theſe ſtatutes, the High-Commiſſion-Court is erected.

The tenths, firſt-fruits, and impropriated tithes, are reſtored to the Crown, by another act.

This Parliament grants her Majeſty a ſubſidy of 2*s.* 8*d.* in the pound of goods, and 4*s.* of lands, to be paid at two ſeveral

Aug. 6. The ill ſucceſs of *Philip* II. againſt *Dragut*, King of *Tripoli*, obliges him to recall his forces out of the *Netherlands*.

Catharine de Medici, Mother to *Charles* IX. prevails with the King of *Navarre* to yield the Regency to her.

Mary of *Scotland* quits the title of Queen of *England*.

Queen *Elizabeth* preſſes her to ratify the treaty of *Edinburgh*, but ſhe returns an evaſive anſwer; for which reaſon, when Queen *Mary* was preparing to return to *Scotland*, and ſent to Queen *Elizabeth* for a ſafe-conduct, ſhe refuſed to give her one.

1561. *Mary* arrives in *Scotland*, and is received there with great
Aug. 21. demonſtrations of joy.

The *Roman* Catholics form the deſign of reſtoring their Religion in *Scotland*, and ſupplanting *James Stewart*, the Queen's natural brother, who ſupported the Reformation.

Queen *Mary* ſends an Ambaſſador to Queen *Elizabeth*, to deſire her friendſhip; and, at the ſame time, She and the *Scots* Nobility ſend a letter to Queen *Elizabeth*, to perſuade her to declare Queen *Mary* her preſumptive Heir. *Elizabeth* is offended at that propoſal, and calls upon Queen *Mary* to ratify the treaty of *Edinburgh*.

James Stewart, Prior of St. *Andrew's*, is created Earl of *Murray*, and *John Areskin* Earl of *Marr*.

Reg. 4. Queen *Elizabeth* refuſes to receive a Nuncio from the Pope.

Being in danger from all ſides, ſhe provides a good fleet, and makes all other preparations for her defence and ſecurity.

Orders the penſions to be regularly paid to the Monks, with ſatisfaction for the arrears due to them.

This year, gun-powder was firſt made in *England*; and a fine mine of copper diſcovered in *Cumberland*.

1562. The Counteſs of *Lenox*, holding a ſecret correſpondence with Queen *Mary* of *Scotland*, ſhe and her huſband are impriſoned.

Arthur Pole and his brother, and Sir *Anthony Forteſcue*, form a conſpiracy againſt the Queen. They are tried, and condemned; but the Queen grants them a pardon.

Catharine Grey is ſent to the *Tower*, and her marriage with *Edward Seymour* Earl of *Hertford* annulled: She dies in priſon nine years after.

The Huguenots ſend to Queen *Elizabeth* to deſire her aſſiſtance; ſhe concludes a treaty with them.

Septemb. The *Engliſh* troops ſent to their aſſiſtance, enter *Dieppe*, and take poſſeſſion of *Havre de Grace*.

The

The King of *Navarre*, General of the Huguenots, takes *Rouen* by ſtorm; but he dies of a wound which he received at the ſiege of that place. *Ann. C.*

A battle is fought at *Dreux*, between the Catholics and Huguenots.

A plot againſt *James Stewart* Earl of *Murray*, contrived by the Duke of *Chatelerault*, and the Earls of *Huntly* and *Bothwell*, is diſcovered.

George Gordon, Earl of *Huntly*, forms the deſign to carry off Queen *Mary*, and force her to marry *George* his eldeſt ſon; the Earl of *Murray* ſaves her.

The Earl of *Huntley* perſiſting in his deſign, and having aſſembled ſome forces, is defeated by the Earl of *Murray*, and taken priſoner: He dies ſhortly after.

George Gordon his ſon, is condemned to die; but the ſentence is not executed.

A new Parliament meets at *Weſtminſter*; which grants the Queen a ſubſidy, and two fifteenths and tenths: The Clergy alſo give a ſubſidy of ſix ſhillings in the pound to be paid in three years. —— The following ſtatutes were then enacted, 1563. *Jan.* 12.

For the aſſurance of the Queen's Royal Power [or Supremacy] over all eſtates and ſubjects within her Dominions.

For the maintenance of the Navy. —— For puniſhment of wilful perjury. —— Againſt clipping and filing of coins. For the puniſhment of vagabonds called *Egyptians*. —— For tranſlating the Bible and Common-Prayer-book into *Welſh*, &c.

The Duke of *Guiſe* is ſlain by *Poltrot*, at the ſiege of *Orleans*.

The Huguenots make a peace with the King of *France*, without taking any notice of Queen *Elizabeth*.

Havre de Grace is beſieged and taken by *Charles* IX.

A truce, and, at length, peace is concluded between *France* and *England*.

The *Engliſh* forces, which had ſerved in *France*, return to *England*, and bring the plague along with them. *July.*

The Cardinal of *Lorrain* propoſes to Queen *Mary* a marriage between Her and the Archduke *Charles*: She asks Queen *Elizabeth*'s advice about it, who perſuades her to marry an *Engliſhman*: She deſiſts from her marriage with the Archduke. *Reg.* 6.

Frances Brandon, Ducheſs of *Suffolk*, dies; ſhe was daughter to *Charles Brandon*, Duke of *Suffolk*, by *Mary* ſecond ſiſter to King *Henry* VIII.

The

Ann. C. The peace between *France* and *England* is signed at *Troyes*
1564. in *Champagne*.

April 11. Queen *Elizabeth* sends to *Charles* IX. the Order of the Garter.

The commerce between *England* and the *Low-Countries*, having been interrupted for some time, is set again in the same state it formerly was in. It amounted yearly to above twelve millions of gold.

August. Queen *Elizabeth* visits the University of *Cambridge*, and makes a *Latin* oration there.

Queen *Mary* forms the design of marrying *Henry Steuart* Lord *Darnley*, son to the Countess of *Lenox*, grand-daughter to King *Henry* VIII.

She contrives means to draw him into *Scotland*, as well as his father *Mathew*, Earl of *Lenox*, who had been forced to withdraw into *England*.

Both she, and Queen *Elizabeth*, act towards each other with great dissimulation.

Sept. 29. *Robert Dudley* is made Earl of *Leicester*, and becomes the Queen's greatest favourite.

Queen *Elizabeth*, at a Conference held at *Berwick*, about Queen *Mary*'s marriage, gets her Deputies to propose the Earl of *Leicester* to that Queen for a husband: The
Reg. 7. proposal is received with great coldness.

The Emperor *Ferdinand* I. dies, and is succeeded by his son *Maximilian* II.

1565. *David Rizzo*, a musician of *Turin*, becomes Queen *Mary*'s favourite, which proves the chief cause of her ensuing misfortunes.

February. The Lord *Darnley* arrives in *Scotland*, and contracts a friendship with *Rizzo*.

The Earl of *Murray*'s credit declines at Court: He joins with several Lords and others to prevent the Queen's marriage with the Lord *Darnley*, but in vain.

Queen *Mary* obtains a dispensation from the Pope for her marriage, and gets it also approved by the Lords of her Court: She asks the approbation of Queen *Elizabeth*, who endeavours to divert her from her purpose.

Queen *Elizabeth* recalls the Earl of *Lenox*, and his son the Lord *Darnley*, who excuse themselves from returning
June 22. to *England*: Whereupon the Countess of *Lenox* is committed to the *Tower*.

July 29. *Mary*, Queen of *Scotland*, marries *Henry Steuart* Lord *Darnley*.

Several Lords (particularly the Duke of *Chatelerault*, and the

the Earls of *Murray*, *Argyle*, *Rothes*, and *Glencairn*) dissatisfied with it, take arms; and, being pursued by her from place to place, are forced to fly into *England*. *Ann. C.*

Queen *Mary* refuses to give audience to an Ambassador sent by Queen *Elizabeth*, to demand, that the Lord *Darnley* should be delivered up to her: but, however, returns an answer to her letter.

Queen *Mary* conceives an extreme aversion for the King her husband, and lives in a scandalous familiarity with *Rizzo*; whereupon that King privately recalls the fugitive Lords to *Scotland*.

The Courts of *France* and *Spain* have an interview at *Bayonne*, wherein they resolve to extirpate the Heretics. *July.* *Reg.* 8.

Pope *Pius* IV. dies: And is succeeded by *Pius* V. *Decemb.*

The States of *Scotland* meeting at *Edinburgh*, *Rizzo* 1566.
presses them to condemn the fugitive Lords. *January.*

Charles IX. sends an Ambassy to Queen *Elizabeth*.

Henry King of *Scotland* causes *Rizzo* to be assassinated, for *March* 9.
his scandalous familiarity with the Queen. And she is put under a guard.

The King forsakes *Rizzo*'s murderers, who are obliged to treat with the Queen; but she deceives them, and escapes to *Dunbar*.

Queen *Mary* re-assumes her authority, and pardons the fugitive Lords.

Rizzo's murderers fly into *England*: The Queen causes his body to be buried in the sepulchre of the Kings.

James Hepburn, Earl of *Bothwell*, comes to be in great credit with *Mary* Queen of *Scots*.

Queen *Mary* forms the project of dethroning Queen *Elizabeth*; her designs are found out by means of a spy, who being discovered, is arrested.

James, Queen *Mary*'s son, afterwards King of *England* and *Scotland*, is born.

Queen *Mary* uses the King her husband ill, and lives in *June* 19.
a scandalous manner with *Bothwell*; She refuses to ratify the treaty of *Edinburgh*.

The King is treated in so injurious a manner, that he resolves to withdraw to *Glasgow* to the Earl his father. He is poisoned as he was going away, but overcomes the poison.

Henry Fitz-Alan Earl of *Arundel*, quits *England*; and several *English* go into *Hungary* to war against the *Turks*.

Queen *Elizabeth* visits the University of *Oxford*. *Aug.* 31.

The Parliament meets, and forms the resolution of get- *Sept.* 30.

Ann. C. ting Queen *Mary* declared Queen *Elizabeth*'s presumptive heir.

Nov. 5. The House of Lords sends the Lord-Keeper *Bacon* to Queen *Elizabeth* to beseech her to marry, or appoint a successor. She makes an ambiguous speech to both Houses, in order to shift off their demands; and prorogues the Parliament.

The most remarkable statutes, made during this Session, were,

An act declaring the making and consecrating of the Archbishops and Bishops of this Realm, to be good, lawful, and perfect.——Another act declaring, that whereas there was but one Sheriff for *Surrey* and *Sussex*——one for *Essex* and *Hertfordshire*,——one for *Somerset* and *Dorset*, one for *Warwick* and *Leicester*——one for *Nottingham* and *Derby*——and one for *Oxford* and *Berkshire*,——each of those Counties should, for the future, have one Sheriff a-piece.

There was now granted a subsidy, and one tenth, and a fifteenth; and the Clergy granted a subsidy of 4 *s.* in the pound, to be paid in three years.

Reg. 9. Several great men in the *Low-Countries* form a Confederacy against the setting up of the Inquisition there.

Lewis, Count of *Nassau*, presents a petition to the Governess upon that affair, being accompanied with 400 men: And this was the origin of the name *Gueux*, or Beggars, given to the Protestants.

1567. Queen *Mary* orders the Prince, her son, to be removed from *Stirling* to *Edinburgh*.

The King, her husband, resolves to withdraw into *France*, or *Spain*; she caresses him, and persuades him to retire to *Edinburgh*.

Feb. 9. The Earl of *Murray* goes from Court, to see his wife, who was dangerously ill.

Feb. 10. *Henry Steuart*, King of *Scotland*, is stifled or strangled in his bed; *Bothwell* is accused of causing him to be murdered. The Earl of *Murray* is, by some, charged with it.

The Queen commands him to be interred near *Rizzo*.

The Earl of *Murray* returns to Court, two days after the murder.

Queen *Mary*, in order to get *Edinburgh* Castle into her hands, suffers the Earl of *Marr* to carry away the Prince, her son, to *Stirling*.

Matthew Steuart, Earl of *Lenox*, accuses *Bothwell* of being the cause of the King his son's death, and demands justice against him; but *Bothwell* is acquitted, by a number of

of Lords, dependent on him, whom he drew together to be an Affize. *Ann. C.*

Several perſons endeavour to diſſuade Queen *Mary* from marrying *Bothwell*, but ſhe ſuffers herſelf to be carried off by him.

Whereupon, *Bothwell* gets himſelf divorced from his wife, who was daughter of the Earl of *Huntley*; and procures the Lords of the Court to ſign a paper, in which they approved of his marriage with the Queen; immediately after which they are married. *May* 15.

The Queen and *Bothwell* form a league, for their own defence, with ſeveral Lords; but the Earl of *Murray* refuſes to ſign it, and retires into *France*.

The Earls of *Argyle*, *Morton*, *Marr*, *Athol*, *Glencairn*, and the Baron of *Boyd*, ſign a Confederacy to puniſh the King's murderers, and to diſſolve the Queen's marriage.

They project to ſeize the Queen and *Bothwell* in *Edinburgh*, but they eſcape to *Borthwic*, and then to *Dunbar*; however, the Confederates advance to *Edinburgh*, which declares for them.

The Queen and *Bothwell* march with ſome troops towards that City, in order to ſurprize the Confederates; but, when the two armies were come near one another, the Queen, afraid of being deſerted by her troops, capitulates with the Confederates, and puts herſelf into their hands; As for *Bothwell*, he retires to *Dunbar*.

The Queen is conducted to *Edinburgh*, and then ſhut up in *Loch-levin* Caſtle.

A Caſket of *Bothwell*'s is intercepted, in which were found papers that diſcovered the whole plot againſt the late King.

Bothwell retires to the Iſles of *Orkney*, and turns Pirate.

The Queen is obliged to reſign the Crown to Prince *James*, her ſon; and, being allowed to appoint a Regent, ſhe nominates the Earl of *Murray*. *June* 24.

James VI, King of *Scotland*, is inaugurated. *June* 29.

Some Lords meet together at *Hamilton* Caſtle, and form a party for the Queen.

The Earl of *Murray* arrives in *Scotland*, and loads the Queen with reproaches. *Aug.* 11.

He is elected Regent, and invites the *Hamiltonians* to come and join with the reſt of the States, but they refuſe to come in. 20.

The government of *Edinburgh* Caſtle is taken from *Balfour*, and conferred on the Laird of *Grange*.

Ann. C. A new tranſlation of the Bible, commonly called the *Biſhops Bible*, was publiſhed this year.

1569. Some *Engliſh* Lords, who looked upon Secretary *Cecil* as the Queen of *Scots* moſt dangerous enemy, contrive his ruin; but Queen *Elizabeth* protects him.

John Story, an *Engliſhman*, the Duke of *Alva*'s ſpy in the *Low-Countries*, is decoyed on board a ſhip, and brought to *England*, where, after a long impriſonment, he is hanged.

Hoſtilities are committed between Queen *Elizabeth* and *Philip* II, who tries to raiſe Rebellions in *England* and *Ireland*.

Mar. 13. The battle of *Jarnac* is fought, wherein the Prince of *Condé*, General of the Huguenots, is ſlain. Some time after, the Duke of *Deuxponts* leads an army into *France* to their aſſiſtance; but, dying there, he leaves the command of the army to Count *Manſfeldt*.

Septemb. The Huguenots beſiege *Poitiers*, but are forced to raiſe
October. the ſiege. Moreover, they are defeated at the battle of *Moncontour*.

Aug. 27. Queen *Elizabeth* makes an Alliance with the Czar, and obtains ſeveral privileges for the *Ruſſia* Company.

Queen *Mary*'s friends project a match between her and *Thomas Howard* Duke of *Norfolk*. Queen *Mary* conſents to it: And the project is alſo communicated to the Kings of *France* and *Spain*, who approve of it.

Queen *Elizabeth*, being informed of it by the Earl of *Leiceſter*, commands the Duke of *Norfolk* not to think of that marriage; he promiſes to deſiſt from it.

But, ſhortly after, having received from *Scotland* a ful-
Octob. ler account of his ill deſigns, the Queen ſends him to the *Tower*: And his accomplices are baniſhed the Court, except the Earl of *Leiceſter*.

Novemb. *Thomas Percy* Earl of *Northumberland*, and *Charles Nevil* Earl of *Weſtmoreland*, break out into a Rebellion: For fear they ſhould releaſe Queen *Mary*, *Elizabeth* orders her to be removed to *Coventry*.

Reg. 12. Upon the approach of the Queen's troops, the two Earls fly out of the Kingdom, and the Rebels diſperſe: Some are taken and hanged for a terror, and the reſt pardoned.

The Duke of *Alva* ſends *Ciapine Vitelli* into *England*, under pretence of demanding the money ſtopped by the Queen, but in reality to be at hand to command the Rebels.

Some commotions are raiſed in *Ireland* by two of the Earl of *Ormond*'s brothers, but are ſoon allayed.

James

James Hamilton Duke of *Chatelerand* tries to ſeize the Regency of *Scotland*, but miſcarries in his attempt: He, and — *Maxwell* Lord *Herris*, are ſent to priſon. *Ann. C.*

Queen *Mary* writes to the States of *Scotland*, to deſire that her marriage with *Bothwell* might be annulled, that ſhe might be at liberty to marry the Duke of *Norfolk*.

Queen *Elizabeth* writes to them in behalf of Queen *Mary*; which was all but artifice. They return no anſwer to Queen *Mary*'s letter, but ſend one to Queen *Elizabeth*'s.

The Regent *Murray* orders *Lidington* to be apprehended, who is reſcued by the Laird of *Grange*, but however kept confined.

Queen *Elizabeth* lends Admiral *Coligny* money upon the Queen of *Navarre*'s jewels; and gives leave that a company of a hundred Gentlemen Volunteers ſhould be raiſed in *England*, to ſerve in the Huguenots army.

The Duke of *Alva* continues his oppreſſions in the *Low-Countries*, and ſets up an Inquiſition there.

The Regent of *Scotland* apprehends *Thomas Percy*, Earl of *Northumberland*, and impriſons him in *Loch-levin*. 1570. *January.*

James Stewart Earl of *Murray*, and Regent of *Scotland*, is aſſaſſinated. 23.

Walter Scot and *Thomas Carr* ravage the borders of *England*, in order to occaſion a war between the two Kingdoms. 24.

Leonard Dacres, having raiſed an inſurrection in the North, is defeated, and flies into *Flanders*. *Feb.* 22.

The Laird of *Lidington* is ſet at liberty, and labours for Queen *Mary*, by endeavouring to unite all the *Scots* into one party againſt *England*: But Queen *Elizabeth* avoids the ſnare, by complaining only of the authors of the late Invaſion, and not of the whole Nation.

Queen *Mary*'s party endeavours, however, to incenſe Queen *Elizabeth* againſt the whole Nation, by publiſhing libels and ſlanders: She takes no notice of them, and prepares an army. To amuſe her, and the reſt of the *Scots*, is the buſineſs of *Mary*'s adherents, till the arrival of ſuccours they expected from *France* and the *Netherlands*.

The Laird of *Grange* ſets the Duke of *Chatelerand*, and the reſt of the priſoners of the Queen of *Scots* party at liberty: They hold an aſſembly at *Linlithgow*, and afterwards at *Edinburgh*, of which latter they try in vain to become maſters. *April* 9.

Upon the *Engliſh* army's approach, they offer to make Queen *Elizabeth* their umpire: She conſents to be mediatrix

Ann. C. trix between the two parties, reſerving to herſelf the puniſhment of the violators of the peace.

The *Engliſh* army, commanded by *Thomas Ratcliff* Earl
17. of *Suſſex*, entering *Scotland*, ravages the lands of thoſe who were concerned in the late incurſion into *England*.

May. The States ſummoned in the King of *Scotland*'s name meet at *Edinburgh*, and ſend to Queen *Elizabeth*, to beſpeak her favour.

Queen *Mary*'s adherents beſiege *Glaſgow*; but Sir *William Drury*, Governor of *Berwick*, forces them to raiſe the ſiege.

The States of *Scotland* chuſe an *Inter-rex*; and the choice falls upon *Matthew Stewart*, Earl of *Lenox*; who, ſhortly after, by Queen *Elizabeth*'s recommendation, is elected Regent.

He takes *Brechin* Caſtle from *George Gordon*, Earl of *Huntley*, and diſperſes his troops: Queen *Mary*'s party obtains a truce.

The Laird of *Grange* forms a third party in *Scotland*, in order to reſtore Queen *Mary* to the Throne.

At the ſame time, ſeveral plots are formed in *England* to free Queen *Mary*, eſpecially one in *Norfolk*.

27. The Pope's bull againſt Queen *Elizabeth* dated *February*, 25, 1569, is fixed up in *London*, by *J. Felton*, who is executed for the ſame.

John Leſley, Biſhop of *Roſs*, Queen *Mary*'s Ambaſſador, is confined for being the chief promoter of all theſe plots.

Aug. 4. Notwithſtanding them, *Thomas Howard*, Duke of *Norfolk*, is diſcharged from the *Tower*, though he was conſidered as the head of Queen *Mary*'s party.

Queen *Elizabeth* feigning to be deſirous of reſtoring Queen *Mary*, ſends Secretary *Cecil* to make captious propoſals to her; ſhe returns to them only a general anſwer, and deſires that they may be communicated to the heads of her party in *Scotland*: Her adherents ſend particular anſwers to thoſe propoſals.

The Court of *France*, notwithſtanding all their pretences, is not inclined to reſtore Queen *Mary* for fear of uniting thereby the Crowns of *England* and *Scotland*.

J. Leſley, Biſhop of *Roſs*, ſollicits in vain the Pope, and the Kings of *France* and *Spain* in Queen *Mary*'s behalf.

Aug. *Charles* IX. King of *France* grants the Huguenots a peace only on purpoſe to amuſe them.

Reg. 13. *Catharine de Medicis* propoſes to Queen *Elizabeth* a match between her, and her ſon *Charles* IX; and upon

her

her refuſal, ſhe propoſes her ſecond ſon *Henry* Duke of *Anjou*, *Ann. C.*

William Cecil is created Baron of *Burleigh*. 1571. *Feb.* 25.

A conference is held at *London* between the two *Scotch* factions; Queen *Elizabeth* prolongs the negotiation: And at length the conference breaks up without any thing being done. *Feb.* *March.* *April.*

A Parliament meets at *Weſtminſter*, which grants the Queen two fifteenths and tenths, and a ſubſidy of 2*s.* 8*d.* in the pound. The Clergy grants alſo a ſubſidy of 6*s.* to be paid in three years. *Apr.* 2. 4.

The Acts now made, were: One declaring it High-treaſon, to intend deſtruction, or bodily harm, to the Queen, or to levy war, *&c.* againſt her. Another, againſt the bringing in, and putting in execution, Bulls, *&c.* from the See of *Rome*. One againſt uſury. Another, injoining every Eccleſiaſtical perſon that takes a living to declare his aſſent to, and ſubſcribe the XXXIX Articles, and to read them in his Church; and directing alſo, what other things are required upon an admiſſion to a benefice. An Act confirming the convictions and attainders of *Charles* Earl of *Weſtmoreland*, and 57 others, *&c.*

The Earl of *Lenox*, Regent of *Scotland*, takes *Dunbarton*, by ſurprize; *James Hamilton* Archbiſhop of St. *Andrew's*, who was accuſed of being concerned in the late King's murder, being taken therein, is hanged.

Queen *Elizabeth's* Miniſters engage her to negotiate her marriage with the Duke of *Anjou*; Sir *Francis Walſingham* being ſent Ambaſſador to *France*, for that purpoſe a negotiation is accordingly ſet on foot; but both parties equally diſſembled. At laſt, they cannot agree upon the article of Religion. *March.* *Sept.*

Queen *Mary's* adherents become maſters of *Edinburgh*; where the heads of them convene the States of their faction; and, at the ſame time, the Earl of *Lenox* aſſembles thoſe of the King's party in the ſuburbs of the ſame city. *May.*

The Lords of this laſt party meet again at *Stirling*, and the Queen's at *Edinburgh*. *Aug.*

The eſtates of the Queen's party form the project of carrying away by force the Lords of the King's party aſſembled at *Stirling*, which they ſucceſsfully put in execution, and take the Regent and Earl of *Morton* priſoners: But the Earl of *Marr*, ſallying out of the Caſtle with the Garriſon, compells them to retire.

Ann. C. The Earl of *Morton* eſcapes; but *Matthew Stewart* Earl of *Lenox*, the Regent, being carried away, is murdered upon the road, in cold blood. In his room, *John Erſkin*, Earl of *Marr*, is choſen Regent.

Sept. The negotiation about Queen *Elizabeth*'s marriage with the Duke of *Anjou* breaks off.

Queen *Mary* diſpatches *Ridolpho* to the Pope and the King of *Spain*, to implore their aſſiſtance: The Duke of *Norfolk* is alſo engaged again in her intereſt, and reſumes the project of marrying her.

Ridolpho's intrigues being partly diſcovered, by letters ſent by him to *England*, *J. Leſley* Biſhop of *Roſs*, who was found to be deeply concerned therein, is arreſted.

7. The Court diſcovers the Duke of *Norfolk*'s deſigns; and
Oct. 10. he being committed again to the *Tower*, confeſſes part of what he was accuſed of.

24. The Biſhop of *Roſs* is brought before the Council, and charged with having attempted to diſturb the peace of the
26. Kingdom. He is ſent to the *Tower* and examined.

Queen *Elizabeth* informs the Court of *France* of the
Reg. 14. reaſons that induced her to commit the Duke of *Norfolk* to the *Tower*.

Charles IX. careſſes very much the Huguenots; and concludes a marriage with the Princeſs *Margaret* his ſiſter, and the King of *Navarre*.

Queen *Elizabeth* refuſes to aſſiſt *William* Prince of *Orange*.

1572. Died Sir *William Petre*, who had been Secretary and
Jan. 13. Privy-Counſellor to four Kings and Queens of this realm, and ſeven times Ambaſſador abroad.

16. The Duke of *Norfolk* is tried, and condemned to death for High-treaſon.

Mar. 10. Died Sir *William Paulet* Marquis of *Winchester*, and Lord High-Treaſurer.

May 8. The Parliament meets again: And paſſes an Act making it highly penal to go about to enlarge a priſoner condemned for High-treaſon.

April 11. A league offenſive and defenſive is ſigned at *Blois* between *England* and *France*.

Thomas Howard Duke of *Norfolk* is beheaded.

June 2. Queen *Elizabeth* ſends ſome Privy-Counſellors to exa-
7. mine *Mary* Queen of *Scots*, upon the points that had appeared againſt her at the Duke of *Norfolk*'s trial.

15. She ſwears to the league with *France*.

Sir *William Cecil* is made Lord Treaſurer.

The

The maſſacre of St. *Bartholomew's*, wherein Admiral *Chaſtillon* and the Huguenots are butchered at *Paris*. *Ann. C.* *July* 13.

Charles IX. makes offers to Queen *Elizabeth* to renew the league with a freſh oath; propoſes a match between her and the Duke of *Alenſon*; and deſires her to ſtand godmother to his daughter. The Queen conſents only to the laſt. *Aug.* 24.

Thomas Percy Earl of *Northumberland*, is betrayed by the Earl of *Morton*, for a ſum of money, and beheaded. 22.

Queen *Elizabeth* ſuſpects the Court of *France* with regard to *Scotland*; and the more, becauſe *Charles* IX. ſolicits her to ſend the Queen of *Scots* into *France*.

The Count *de la Marck* take the *Brille* in *Holland*, whereupon the whole Province of *Holland* throws off the *Spaniſh* yoke, as do alſo ſeveral towns in *Zealand*.

The Duke of *Medina-Celi*, ſent from *Spain* with a Fleet to ſecure the *Netherlands*, is defeated by the Confederates.

Lewis Count of *Naſſau* ſurprizes *Mons*; but the ſuccours ſent by *Charles* IX. to the Count of *Naſſau* being defeated by the Duke of *Alva*, *Mons* is retaken by that Duke. And *Frederico de Toledo*, his ſon, takes *Zutphen*, *Naarden*, and other places. *Sept.* 19.

John Erſkin, Earl of *Marr*, Regent of *Scotland*, enters into a negotiation with Queen *Mary*'s party, in order to put an end to the troubles in *Scotland*: But dying, *James Douglaſs* Earl of *Morton* is choſen Regent in his room. He was entirely devoted to *England*. *Reg.* 15. *Oct.* 29. *Nov.* 24.

The Court of *France* ſends *Verac* into *Scotland*, with money to ſupport Queen *Mary*'s party; and to endeavour to ruin the Earl of *Morton*.

A marriage is propoſed again between Queen *Elizabeth* and *Henry* Duke of *Alenſon*. 1573.

The Count of *Montgomery* ſails from *England* with ſuccours for the relief of the *Proteſtants* blockaded up in *Rochelle*, and Queen *Elizabeth* evades the complaints made to her by the Court of *France* about it.

The Regent of *Scotland* ſigns a treaty of peace with the Duke of *Chatteleraud*, the Earls of *Huntly* and *Argyle*, and moſt of the reſt of the Queen's party; and it is ratified by the States of the Kingdom.

The Laird of *Grange*, Governor of *Edinburgh* Caſtle, who was not included in the treaty, offers to ſurrender that Caſtle, in order to obſtruct all agreement, till the arrival of forces from *France*. But the Regent, who knew his deſign, makes a treaty with Queen *Elizabeth*; from whom having *April.*

Ann. C. May. having obtained a ſupply of troops and artillery, he beſieges and makes himſelf maſter of *Edinburgh* Caſtle.

The Governor of it, Sir *William Kirkaldy*, Laird of *Grange*, and ſome others there taken, are hanged. And *Lidington*, another of the Queen's adherents, dies in priſon.

Verac, the *French* Ambaſſador to *Scotland*, is forced by a ſtorm into *Scarborough*, and ſent to *London*.

June 25. The ſiege of *Rochelle* is raiſed.

Queen *Catharine de Medicis* diſcovers herſelf to *Walſingham* about the Queen of *Scots*, before ſhe was aware.

John Leſley Biſhop of *Roſs*, promoter of all the plots in favour of Queen *Mary*, is driven out of *England*.

Auguſt. *Walter d'Evereux* Earl of *Eſſex*, obtains leave to go and conquer the country of *Clandeboy* in *Ireland* at his own expence; but has no ſucceſs, becauſe he was privately croſſed by the Earl of *Leiceſter*.

Reg. 16. The Court of *France* preſſes Queen *Elizabeth*, about her marriage with the Duke of *Alenſon*; and deſires ſhe would permit him to come and ſee her, but ſhe deſires him to put off his journey.

The Duke of *Anjou* is choſen King of *Poland*.

1574. *Catharine de Medici* orders a guard to be ſet upon the Duke of *Alenſon*, and the King of *Navarre*, for fear they ſhould deprive their brother, the Duke of *Anjou* and King of *Poland*, of the Crown, which ſhe endeavoured to ſecure to him.

May 30. *Charles* IX. King of *France* dies: The Duke of *Anjou*, King of *Poland*, ſucceeds him by the name of *Henry* III.

The Confederates in the *Low-Countries* ſeize *Middleburgh*. But *Lewis* Count of *Naſſau*, who was leading an army to his brother the Prince of *Orange*, is defeated upon the Heath of *Moker*, and ſlain, with his brother *Henry*, and *Chriſtopher* Count *Palatine*.

Reg. 17. The *Spaniſh* troops mutinying, ſurprize and plunder *Antwerp*.

Charles Steuart, Earl of *Lenox*, marries *Elizabeth Cavendiſh* unknown to the Queen, for which both their mothers are impriſoned.

1575. *Henry* III. makes war againſt the Huguenots, and renews with Queen *Elizabeth* the league of *Blois*, in order to tie her hands.

But, notwithſtanding that, ſhe ſupplies underhand the Prince of *Condé* with money, to pay the army Prince *Caſimir* Count *Palatine* was levying for the Huguenots.

Matthew

Matthew Parker, Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, dies; pure was ſucceeded by *Edmund Grindall*. *Ann. C. May* 17.

A tumult ariſes on the borders of *Scotland* between the *Engliſh* and *Scots*, but is appeaſed. *July. Reg.* 18.

James Hamilton, Duke of *Chateleraud*, and Earl of *Arran*, dies. 1576.

The Parliament meets again, according to its prorogation: And grants the Queen two tenths and fifteenths, and a ſubſidy. The Clergy alſo give a ſubſidy of 6 *s.* in the pound, to be paid in three years. *Feb.* 8.

Lewis de Zuniga, Commander of *Requeſens*, and Governor of the *Low-Countries*, dies; ſhortly after, the *Spaniſh* troops mutinying, plunder *Aloſt*. Whereupon a league is concluded at *Bruſſels* to expel the *Spaniſh* troops. But they being joined by the *Germans*, plunder *Maeſtricht* and *Antwerp*.

The Duke of *Alenſon* drawing together an army in favour of the Huguenots: The King of *France* grants them an advantageous peace; but it was only with a view to ruin them. *May* 9.

Martin Frobiſher ſails from *England*, to try to diſcover a paſſage to *China* by the North of *America*. *June* 15.

Walter Devereux, Earl of *Eſſex*, dies in *Ireland*. The Earl of *Leiceſter* privately marries his widow, daughter of Sir *Robert Knolles*. *Sept.* 22.

Francis, Duke of *Alenſon*, is drawn off from the Huguenots, and takes the title of Duke of *Anjou*. *Oct.* 1. *Reg.* 19.

The Union, or Pacification of *Ghent*, is formed: As alſo the beginning of the League, or Holy Union, in *France*.

Don *John* of *Auſtria* comes into the *Low-Countries*, full of the ambitious project of making himſelf maſter of thoſe Countries; and alſo of *Scotland* and *England*, by marrying *Mary* Queen of *Scots*. 1577. *January*.

A perpetual edict is publiſhed for driving the *Spaniſh* troops out of the *Low-Countries*, purſuant to the Pacification of *Ghent*.

Don John ſurprizes the Caſtle of *Namur*: But the Archduke *Matthias* being elected Governor-General of the *United Provinces*, and the Prince of *Orange* declared his Lieutenant: The States proclaim war againſt *Don John*.

They ſend alſo an Ambaſſy to Queen *Elizabeth*, who lends them 100,000 *l.* ſterling.

She writes to King *Philip* II. to excuſe herſelf for ſo doing.

The Huguenots of *France* finding a reſolution was taken to extirpate them, enter into a Counter-League: And the former *Reg.* 20.

Ann. C. former edict of Pacification being revoked, hoſtilities are renewed on both ſides; but, ſhortly after, King *Henry* III. grants the Huguenots a peace.

1578. Pope *Gregory* XIII. wants to help his natural ſon *Jacomo Boncompagno* to the Crown of *Ireland*.

This project was firſt formed by *Thomas Stukely*, an *Engliſh* Fugitive, who perſuaded the Pope, and *Philip* II. King of *Spain*, to undertake the conqueſt of that Kingdom. For that purpoſe, the Pope gives him men and ſhips, with which he ſails from *Civita Vecchia*, and comes to *Liſbon*. But Don *Sebaſtian* King of *Portugal*, prevailing upon him to accompany him to *Africa*, in his expedition againſt the *Moors*; they are both ſlain at the battle of *Alcazar*.

Several Companies of *Engliſh* Volunteers go and ſerve the *States* of the *United-Provinces*.

Don John defeats the army of the *States* at the battle of *Gemblours*, and takes ſeveral places from them; notwithſtanding which, the *States* reject a peace offered to them by *Philip* II.

The City of *Amſterdam* joins the Confederates; and the Government of that City, as alſo of *Haerlem*, *Utrecht*, and other places, is put into the hands of the Reformed.

Francis Duke of *Anjou* is choſen Protector of the *Belgic* Liberties.

Both he, and Prince *Caſimire* bring the Confederates ſuccours, but they prove of no ſervice to them, by reaſon of diſcords that aroſe among the *States*.

Thereupon, the Duke of *Anjou* returns to *France*.

Oct. 1. *Don John* of *Auſtria* dies. *Alexander Farneſe*, Prince of *Parma*, takes upon him the command of his army.

The Duke of *Anjou* preſſes his marriage with Queen *Elizabeth*; ſhe receives his Envoys very graciouſly, but gives him no poſitive anſwer.

The Earls of *Argyle* and *Athol*, being diſſatisfied with the Earl of *Morton*, Regent of *Scotland*, perſuade King *James* VI. to take the reins of the Government, which he accordingly doth.

He ſends Queen *Elizabeth* notice of it; and demands of her at the ſame time the eſtates belonging to his grandfather *Matthew Stewart*, Earl of *Lenox*, and deſires her to renew the Alliance with *Scotland*. She evades the former part of his demand.

Reg. 21.

The Earl of *Morton* becomes maſter of *Stirling*, and of the King's perſon, and reſumes his authority of Regent.

Shortly

Shortly after, the Earl of *Athol*, Chancellor of *Scotland*, *Ann. C.* dies.

Prince *Caſimire*, whoſe troops were paid by Queen *Eliza-* 1579.
beth, comes to *England*, and is careſſed in an extraordinary *Jan.* 22.
manner by the Queen: He is made Knight of the Garter.

Sir *Nicholas Bacon*, Lord Keeper of the Great Seal, dies.

He is ſucceeded by Sir *Thomas Bromley*, Lord Chancellor. *Feb.* 20.

Simié, the *French* Envoy, promotes the Duke of *Anjou*'s *April* 25.
marriage, and tries to ruin the Earl of *Leiceſter*: A piſtol is
fired in the Queen's Barge, when ſhe was on the *Thames* *July* 17.
with *Simie* and others.

The Duke of *Anjou* comes and pays a viſit to Queen *Eli-*
zabeth incognito.

Eſme Stewart, Baron of *Aubigny*, and *James Stewart* of *Ogbiltry*, King *James*'s two Favourites, ſet him againſt the Earl of *Morton*, and try to make him fall out with *England*.

Negotiations for a peace in the *Low-Countries* are ſet on foot at *Cologne*, and come to nothing.

The Prince of *Orange* cauſes the union of *Utrecht* to be *Reg.* 22.
ſigned between *Holland*, *Zealand*, *Frieſeland*, and *Utrecht*; 1580.
to which *Ghent* and *Ypres* afterwards accede; and the Prince *January.*
is made Governor of *Flanders*.

The Prince of *Parma* takes *Maeſtricht*; and afterwards *Mechlin*, *Liſle*, and *Valenciennes* declare for him.

Sir *Thomas Greſham*, founder of *Greſham-College*, and of *Nov.* 21.
the *Royal Exchange*, dies.

Queen *Elizabeth* forbids by a proclamation the building of any new houſes within three miles of the gates of the City of *London*.

The Parliament meets again, according to its prorogati- *Jan.* 16.
on; and grants the Queen a ſubſidy, and two fifteenths. The Clergy grant at the ſame time a ſubſidy of 6 *s.* 8 *d.* to be paid in three years. Among other acts, one paſſed, making it High-treaſon to be reconciled to the *Romiſh* Religion.

Four Prieſts ſent to *England* from the *Engliſh* Seminaries at *Rheims* and *Rome*, are executed.

Robert Parſons and *Edmund Campian*, Jeſuits, come to preach ſedition in *England*, being the two *firſt* of that Order that were ſent into the Kingdom. The Queen, hearing of it, iſſues out a proclamation, commanding all thoſe, who had any children beyond ſea, to call them home.

Some of the *Family of Love* come out of *Holland* to *England*.

Seven hundred *Spaniards* and *Italians*, ſent by the Pope

Ann. C. granted to them; whereupon thoſe Lords are forced to quit the Court.

Reg. 26. Queen *Elizabeth* ſends Sir *Francis Walſingham* to give King *James* advice about the managament of his affairs; The Ambaſſador brings back no very ſatisfactory anſwer.

This year died *Edmund Grindal*, Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, and was ſucceeded by *John Whitgift*.

1584. A Conſpiracy is formed in *Scotland* againſt *James Stewart* Earl of *Arran*, who was grown extremely proud and inſolent, and perſecuted his enemies without mercy. The Conſpirators take *Stirling*.

But *William Ruthven* Earl of *Gowry*, who was in the plot, being apprehended, the Conſpirators are diſheartened, and leave the Kingdom. The Earl is beheaded at *Edinburgh*.

Queen *Elizabeth* ſends *William Daviſon* into *Scotland* to win the Earl of *Arran* to her intereſts; he ſucceeds in his Negotiation.

William Carey Lord *Hunſdon*, for *England*, and *James Stewart* Earl of *Arran*, for *Scotland*, meet upon the borders, and make a private treaty, whereby the Earl of *Arran* engaged to keep the King unmarried for three years.

Queen *Elizabeth* diſcovers Queen *Mary's* ſecrets by means of the Maſter of *Grey*, Ambaſſador from *Scotland*.

A Conſpiracy is diſcovered in favour of Queen *Mary*: *Francis Throckmorton*, one of the Conſpirators, is arreſted. But ſome of the others, particularly *Thomas* Lord *Paget*, and *Charles Arundel*, fly into *France*.

Several books are handed about, wherein Queen *Elizabeth* is ſlandered to the higheſt degree, and taxed with having put many Catholics to death without cauſe. Thereupon the Queen ſends for the Judges, and blames them for their ſeverity: They affirm, that no perſon had been made to ſuffer for his Religion, but only for dangerous practices againſt the State.

However, *Elizabeth* forbids the putting any perſon to the rack; and orders ſeventy Prieſts to be tranſported out of *England*, ſome of whom were under ſentence of death.

Mendoza, the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador, is diſcovered to have been in the plot for freeing Queen *Mary*. He is deſired to come before the Council; where making but a poor defence, he is ordered to depart the Kingdom. And the Queen ſends Sir *William Wood* to *Spain*, to inform King *Philip* of what had paſſed; but he refuſes to give her Ambaſſador audience.

Francis

G. Vertue Sculp: 1749

Francis Throckmorton is executed. *Ann. C.*

Queen *Elizabeth* renews the Negotiation with *Mary* Queen of *Scots*, in order to discover more fully the designs of her enemies; but the Negotiation is broken off. *July* 10.

Another plot is discovered between the Pope, the King of *Spain*, and the Duke of *Guise*, for invading *England*; whereupon, a general association of men of all degrees and conditions is formed in *England*, to prosecute to the death those that should attempt any thing against the Queen.

Queen *Mary* thinking herself thereby meant, and consequently in danger, sends some proposals to Queen *Elizabeth*, who rejects them; and taking *Mary* out of the Earl of *Shrewsbury*'s hands, commits her to the custody of Sir *Drugeon Drury* and Sir *Amias Paulet*.

Francis Duke of *Anjou* dies. And the same day *William* Prince of *Orange* is assassinated at *Balthazar Gerard*. The *States* confer the Government of *Holland* and *Zealand* on *Maurice* his second son. *June* 10.

The Duke of *Guise* projects to seize the Throne of *France*, and renews the league.

The Duke of *Parma* lays siege to *Antwerp*. In this distress, the *States* resolve to put themselves under the protection of *France*; but King *Henry* III. refusing to accept of their offer, they apply to Queen *Elizabeth*. *Reg.* 27.

A new Parliament meets at *Westminster*, which grants the Queen one entire subsidy, and two fifteenths. The Clergy grant, at the same time, a subsidy of 6 *s.* in the pound, to be paid in three years. In this Session, an act was made against Jesuits, Seminary Priests, &c. declaring it High-treason for them to come into the Realm, and felony for any one to relieve them. And another act, injoining, That no Juryman shall be returned upon trials, but what hath an estate of 4 *l.* a year, at least of freehold. *Nov.* 23.

The Parliament confirms also the general Association, and enacts, That 24 Commissioners at least, appointed by the Queen, should examine the offences of such as should make any open Invasion or Rebellion within the Realm, or attempt hurt to the Queen's person, by, or for pretending a title to the Crown.

The Duke of *Guise* signs a private league with the King of *Spain*, to exclude *Henry* of *Bourbon* King of *Navarre*, and to raise the Cardinal of *Bourbon* to the Throne, after the death of *Henry* III. *Dec.* 31.

William Parry conspires to kill Queen *Elizabeth*, for which he is executed. 1585.

Ann. C. Pope *Gregory* XIII. dies; he is ſucceeded by *Sixtus V.* who excommunicates the King of *Navarre* and the Prince of *Condé*.

April 25. *Philip Howard*, Earl of *Arundel*, is apprehended as he was going out of the Kingdom, and committed to the *Tower*.

June 21. *Henry Percy*, Earl of *Northumberland*, ſhoots himſelf in the *Tower*, where he had been committed for being an accomplice in *Throckmorton*'s plot.

Queen *Elizabeth* being threatened from all quarters, ſends Sir *Thomas Bodley* into *Germany* and *Denmark*, to endeavour to perſuade the Proteſtant Princes to make a league defenſive with *England*.

She ſends *Edward Wotton* into *Scotland*, to break the match between King *James* and the King of *Denmark*'s eldeſt daughter.

July 16. *Francis*, Lord *Ruſſel*, being killed on the borders of *Scotland*, the Earl of *Arran* is confined, on that account, to his houſe, and Queen *Elizabeth* demands a ſolemn reparation for that murder.

But not having immediate ſatisfaction, ſhe permits the *Scotch* Fugitives, who had retired to *England*, to return to *Scotland*.

Upon their return to *Scotland*, they ſeize the King's perſon, and are reſtored to their eſtates; however, the Earl of *Arran* eſcapes their hands.

Edward Wotton forms the project to bring King *James* away to *England*, but miſſing his aim, he privately retires.

Colonel *Steuart* begins a treaty at *Copenhagen*, about King *James*'s marriage with one of the Princeſſes of *Denmark*.

Queen *Elizabeth* refuſes the Sovereignty of the *United Provinces*, offered her by the *States*: However, ſhe makes a treaty with them, whereby ſhe engages to ſend them ſuccours; and, for ſecurity of her being reimburſed, *Fluſhing*, *Rammekins*, and the *Brill*, are delivered to her.

Robert Dudley, Earl of *Leiceſter*, is appointed General of the *Engliſh* auxiliary forces.

Queen *Elizabeth* publiſhes a manifeſto, to juſtify her conduct in aſſiſting the *States*.

Septemb. Moreover, to prevent King *Philip*, ſhe ſends a large fleet into *America* to annoy the *Spaniſh* Settlements; and that fleet takes St. *Jago*, one of the *Cape Verd* Iſlands, the Capital of St. *Domingo*, and *Carthagena*; and burns St. *Antonio*, and St. *Helena* in *Florido*: They return to *England* with a very large booty.

Sir

Sir *Walter Raleigh* carries the firſt *Engliſh* Colony to *Virginia*. *Ann. C.*

Ralph Lane brings the firſt Tobacco to *England*.

John Davis, who endeavoured to find a paſſage to *China* by the North of *America*, diſcovers a new Streight in the Northern Seas, under the Polar Circle. *Reg.* 28.

Henry III. is compelled, by the intrigues of the Duke of *Guiſe*, to forſake the Duke of *Navarre*, to publiſh an edict againſt the Huguenots, and to join with the Duke in extirpating them.

The Prince of *Condé* being thereupon forced to fly to *England*, Queen *Elizabeth* ſupplies him with 50,000 crowns, and lends him 10 ſhips, with which he raiſes the blockade of *Rochelle*.

The family of the *Bourks* raiſes, this, and the following year, great diſturbances in *Ireland*, which are appeaſed by the good conduct of Sir *Richard Bingham*.

The Earl of *Leiceſter* goes over to *Holland*, and is declared by the *States* Governor and Captain-General of *Holland*, *Zealand*, and the *United-Provinces*, and inveſted with almoſt an abſolute power. *Decemb.* 1586. *January.* *Feb.* 6.

Queen *Elizabeth*, afraid of being further engaged than ſhe intended, complains bitterly to the *States* for inveſting the Earl with that title, and ſeverely reprimands him for accepting of it.

She propoſes to King *James* a league for the defence of the Proteſtant Religion. The *French* Ambaſſador uſes all his endeavours to obſtruct it; but, notwithſtanding that, a treaty of Alliance and ſtrict Friendſhip between the two Crowns is ſigned at *Berwick*. *May.* *June.* *July* 5.

A conſpiracy, formed by *William* (and *Gilbert*) *Gifford*, *John Savage*, *John Ballard*, *Anthony Babington*, and others, to aſſaſſinate Queen *Elizabeth*, is diſcovered. *July.*

Queen *Mary* approves of the deſign, as it tended to her deliverance, and keeps a correſpondence with *Babington*, one of the Conſpirators.

By *Babington*'s perſuaſion, ſix perſons engage with him to aſſaſſinate Queen *Elizabeth*.

But *Gilbert Gifford* diſcovers the whole conſpiracy to Sir *Francis Walſingham*, who makes uſe of him to deliver Queen *Mary*'s letters, and bring back her anſwers.

All the Conſpirators are apprehended at the ſame time: They impeach one another, and diſcover the whole buſineſs. Whereupon, Queen *Mary*'s papers are ſeized, and *July.*

Ann. C. her two Secretaries, *Naue* and *Curle*, apprehended, and conducted to *London*.

An artifice is uſed to get ſeveral papers, relating to Queen *Mary*, out of the *French* Ambaſſador's hands.

Sept. 20, Fourteen of the Conſpirators are executed.

21. Queen *Elizabeth* ſends Sir *Edward Wotton* to the King of *France*, with authentic copies of Queen *Mary*'s letters.

The *Engliſh* Court being now reſolved to try and condemn Queen *Mary*, as the prime cauſe of theſe repeated conſpiracies, Queen *Elizabeth* appoints, for that purpoſe, 42 Commiſſioners, to whom were joined five of the Judges of the Realm.

Oct. 11. Thirty-ſix of the Commiſſioners meeting at *Fotheringhay* Caſtle, where Queen *Mary* was then in cuſtody, ſend her Queen *Elizabeth*'s letter; but ſhe peremptorily denies that Queen *Elizabeth* had any juriſdiction over her, and diſputes two whole days the authority of her Judges.

14. Being prevailed upon, at laſt, to plead, the Judges meet in the Hall of *Fotheringhay* Caſtle; and Queen *Mary*, appearing before them, puts herſelf upon her trial.

She offers to anſwer in full Parliament, provided ſhe might be declared the next Heir to the Crown.

25. The Court adjourns to *Weſtminſter*; and, meeting again in the Star-Chamber, pronounces ſentence againſt Queen *Mary*. It contained, in general, that *Mary* had broken the ſtatute paſſed laſt year.

The Judges declare, the ſame day, that the ſentence paſſed againſt Queen *Mary* did not prejudice the Rights of King *James*, her ſon.

Oct. 29. A new Parliament meets, which, having confirmed the ſentence againſt the Queen of *Scots*, as juſt, true, and ho-

Nov. 12. nourable, petitions Queen *Elizabeth* to put it in execution:

Reg. 29. She returns an ambiguous anſwer, the drift whereof was to let them know, that ſhe was extremely troubled and irreſolute.

14. She deſires the two Houſes to find out ſome expedient, whereby the Queen of *Scots* life might be ſaved, and her own ſafety provided for; but both Houſes inſiſt upon their demand: The Queen anſwers them in a ſpeech of the ſame nature as her former.

The Parliament is prorogued to the 15th of *February* following.

Queen *Mary* is informed of her ſentence, and receives the news of it with great firmneſs of mind.

L'An-

L' Aubeſpine, the *French* Ambaſſador, ſollicits in vain in her behalf. *Ann. C.*

The ſentence paſſed againſt her is publiſhed in *London*, and throughout the Kingdom. *Dec.* 6.

Queen *Mary* writes to Queen *Elizabeth*, deſiring of her certain favours about her death, burial, and domeſtics.

James, King of *Scotland*, intercedes for his Mother, but to no purpoſe.

Henry III, King of *France*, ſends an Ambaſſador to intreat, ſeemingly, Queen *Elizabeth* in Queen *Mary*'s behalf; but, privately, to ſollicit her death; as the Maſter of *Gray*, ſent by King *James*, had done before.

The Earl of *Leiceſter* having been inveſted with ſo exorbitant a power, as we have ſeen above, forms a project deſtructive of the liberties of the *United-Provinces*. He returns to *England*, *November* 23, this year, after a fruitleſs campaign.

L' Aubeſpine, the *French* Ambaſſador, bribes an Aſſaſſin to murder Queen *Elizabeth*: This being made public, the people loudly call for Queen *Mary*'s death. 1587.

Queen *Elizabeth* delivers to Secretary *Daviſon* a writ, ſigned with her own hand, commanding him to draw a warrant under the Great Seal for the Queen of *Scots* execution; but withal, ſhe enjoins him to acquaint no man therewith. *Feb.* 1.

The next day, ſhe ſends him word, not to draw the warrant; whereupon, being told, that it was drawn, and under ſeal already, ſhe is angry, and blames *Daviſon* for making ſuch haſte; mean while, ſhe leaves the warrant in his hands.

Daviſon, puzzled at the Queen's contrary proceedings, imparts what was done, to one of the Council, who informs the reſt of the Counſellors of the matter.

The Council unanimouſly reſolves to put the warrant in execution; and it is given to *Beal*, who ſets out for *Fotheringhay*, with two Executioners.

After *Beal*'s departure, the Queen tells *Daviſon*, ſhe had changed her mind; and yet no care is taken to call *Beal* back, though there was ſeven days between his departure, and Queen *Mary*'s execution.

Thus, through Queen *Elizabeth*'s negligence, or the forwardneſs of her Miniſters, *Mary Stewart*, Queen of *Scotland*, beheaded. *Feb.* 8.

Queen *Elizabeth* appears ſo extremely diſpleaſed at it, that ſhe drives the Privy-Counſellors from her preſence,

Ann. C. and commands them to be examined in the Star-Chamber.

A few days after, ſhe writes a letter to King *James*, to clear herſelf; and cauſes *Daviſon* to be tried for contempt and diſobedience to her orders: He is condemned in a fine of 10,000 *l.* and to be impriſoned during the Queen's pleaſure.

Feb. 15. King *James* was, at firſt, for revenging the death of the Queen, his Mother; but the great dependance, he had upon Queen *Elizabeth*, ſoon ſtifles his reſentment.

April 12. The Parliament meets again, and grants the Queen a ſubſidy, and two fifteenths. The Clergy grant, at the ſame time, a ſubſidy of 6 *s.* in the pound, to be paid in three years; and, moreover, a ſubſidy of 3 *s.* in the pound.

Sir *Thomas Bromley*, Lord Chancellor, dies, and is ſucceeded by Sir *Chriſtopher Hatton*.

The Queen, hearing the *Spaniard* was making great preparations to invade *England*, ſends Sir *Francis Drake* with a good fleet upon the coaſt of *Spain*: He goes to *Cadix*, where he burns above a hundred veſſels, and two galleons: Then returning to *Cape St. Vincent*, he does great damage along the coaſt, and plunders and burns ſeveral ſhips in the mouth of the *Tajo*: From thence he ſails to the *Azores*, and takes a rich carack.

Thomas Cavendiſh plunders at the ſame time the coaſts of *Chili* and *Peru*.

The *States* of the *United-Provinces* ſend Ambaſſadors to *England*, to complain of the Earl of *Leiceſter*, and give the command of their army to Count *Maurice* of *Naſſau*.

June 25. The Earl of *Leiceſter* returns to *Holland*, to oblige the Duke of *Parma* to raiſe the ſiege of *Sluys*, but does not ſucceed. Finding himſelf miſtruſted, he reſolves to ſeize the Sovereignty of the *Low-Countries* by force, and for that purpoſe, attempts to make himſelf maſter of ſeveral places at once; but his attempt upon *Leyden* being diſcovered, the Queen is obliged to recall him.

Nov. 10. *Peregrine Bartu*, Lord *Willoughby* of *Eresby*, is ſent in his room, but with no other authority than the command of the *Engliſh* troops.

Philip II, King of *Spain*, prepares to invade *England*; At the ſame time, to amuſe Queen *Elizabeth*, he deſires her to be mediatrix for a peace between *Spain* and the *Netherlands*: Negotiations are ſet on foot for that purpoſe; but the preparations that were making in *Spain* cauſe them to be broken off.

Pope

Pope *Sixtus* V. ſides with *Philip* II. againſt *England*; and thunders out a bull againſt Queen *Elizabeth*, abſolving her ſubjects from their oath of allegiance, and giving her Kingdoms to the firſt that ſhould ſeize them. *Ann. C.*

Whilſt *Philip* is carrying on his preparations againſt *England*, the Duke of *Parma* cauſes an army of 30,000 men to advance towards the coaſt of the *Low-Countries*, in order to join the *Spaniſh* fleet, and make a deſcent in *England*. *Reg.* 30.

Queen *Elizabeth* puts herſelf in a poſture of defence, both by ſea and land, and careſſes the King of *Scotland*. 1588.

The Duke of *Guiſe*'s faction prepare to attack King *Henry* III, and chain the ſtreets, which was called the Barricadoes of *Paris*. *May.*

The *Spaniſh Invincible Armada* (deſigned for invading *England*) after three years preparation, ſails out of the *Tajo*, under the command of *Alfonzo Perez de Guzman*, Duke of *Medina Sidonia*; conſiſting of 132 ſhips, beſides 20 caravels for the ſervice of the army, and 10 ſalves with 6 oars a-piece. *May* 19.

They had not been long at ſea, before they were diſperſed by a violent ſtorm: But being rejoined, they ſail all together from the *Groyne*. *July.* 12.

They enter the Channel, and from that day till the 27th, have ſeveral ſharp engagements with the *Engliſh* fleet. 20.

The *Spaniſh* Vice-Admiral's ſhip is diſabled. 21.

One of their galleons is taken, and another of their ſhips burnt. 22.

Four of their ſhips are taken, and three ſunk. 23.

The *Engliſh* and *Dutch* ſhips, that were ſtationed on the coaſt of *Flanders*, hinder the Duke of *Parma* from putting to ſea.

The *Spaniſh Armada* comes to anchor off *Calais*, intending for *Dunkirk*, where they were to be joined by the Duke of *Parma*: But the *Engliſh* Admiral ſends eight fire-ſhips among them, which puts the whole *Spaniſh* fleet into ſuch conſternation, that they cut their cables, and are diſperſed. Some of their ſhips fall into the hands of the *Engliſh* and *Zealanders*. 27. 28.

The *Spaniards* would have fain retreated through the Streights of *Calais*, but the wind being boiſterous and contrary, they reſolve to return to *Spain* by the North of *Scotland*. 31.

On the coaſts of *Scotland* and *Ireland*, they loſe 19 ſhips, and 5394 men.—And in the whole loſt 35 ſhips, and above *Auguſt.* *Septemb.*

Ann. C. above 13,000 men. Whereas the *Engliſh* loſt only one ſhip, and about 100 men.

The Queen hath a public thankſgiving for this great deliverance.

Sept. 4. *Robert Dudley* Earl of *Leiceſter* dies.

Reg. 31. The Duke of *Parma* beſieges *Bergen-op-zoom*; but the brave defence of the Lord *Willoughby*, the Governor, conſtrains him to raiſe the ſiege.

Decemb. *Henry* III, King of *France*, cauſes the Duke of *Guiſe*, and his brother the Cardinal of *Lorrain*, to be aſſaſſinated.

Frederic II, King of *Denmark*, being informed, that King *James* had ſome thoughts of marrying *Catharine*, ſiſter to the King of *Navarre*, gives his eldeſt daughter (whom King *James* had demanded) in marriage to the Duke of *Brunſwick*.

1589. *George Gordon* Earl of *Huntley*, and the Earl of *Bothwel*,

January, ſon of *John Prior* of *Coldingham*, form a conſpiracy againſt *James* King of *Scotland*.

Feb. 4. A new Parliament meets at *Weſtminſter*, which grants the Queen two ſubſidies of 2 *s.* 8 *d.* in the pound, and four fifteenths, and a tenth. The Clergy give two ſubſidies of 6 *s.* in the pound, to be paid yearly by 2 *s.* in the pound. Among other things, it was then enacted, That no perſon ſhall build, maintain, or uphold any cottage, unleſs he lays to it four acres of land at leaſt.

April 14. *Philip Howard* Earl of *Arundel* is condemned to die for treaſon, but is pardoned.

Queen *Elizabeth* perſuades Sir *Francis Drake* and Sir *John Norris* to undertake an expedition againſt *Spain*, chiefly

April 18. at their own charge. They ſail from *Plymouth*, land at the *Groyne*, and carry the lower-town by ſtorm: *Conde de Andrada*, who was marching to the relief of the place, is defeated, with the loſs of 3000 men.

Being joined by the Earl of *Eſſex*, with ſome ſhips he

May 16. had armed at his own charge, they ſail towards *Portugal*, and take *Peniche*, which they reſtore to *Don Antonio*. In the mean time, Sir *John Norris* marches by land to *Lisbon*, and takes the Suburbs of St. *Catharine*; but, *Drake* not being able to come up the *Tagus* with the fleet, *Norris* thinks fit to retire. However, *Drake* takes the town of *Caſcaes*, and blows up the Caſtle.

June. In the *Tajo*, the *Engliſh* ſeize ſixty veſſels laden with corn and naval ſtores, belonging to the *Hans-Towns*; for which thoſe towns ſend great complaints to Queen *Elizabeth*; but ſhe maintains they were lawful prizes.

In

In their return to *England*, the *Engliſh* take and burn *Vigo*. *Ann. C.*

The Leaguers in *France* ſtir up almoſt the whole Kingdom to a revolt againſt King *Henry* III, who is forced to call in the King of *Navarre* and the Huguenots to his aſſiſtance. He lays ſiege to *Paris*; but is ſtabbed in the belly, with a dagger, by *James Clement*, a *Jacobin* Monk. *Aug.* 1.

Before he expires, he nominates the King of *Navarre* for his Succeſſor, who takes the name of *Henry* IV, and was the firſt of the Houſe of *Bourbon*.

The new King applies to Queen *Elizabeth* for aſſiſtance againſt the Leaguers: She ſends him both men and money; but the Duke of *Mayenne* cauſes the old Cardinal of *Bourbon* to be proclaimed King. *Septemb.*

King *James* marries *Anne*, the King of *Denmark*'s ſecond daughter: In her paſſage to *Scotland*, ſhe being forced by a ſtorm on the coaſt of *Norway*, King *James* goes thither to her, and ſtays till the *May* following. *Reg.* 32.

Queen *Elizabeth* manages her revenues with admirable oeconomy.

Sir *Francis Walſingham*, Secretary of State, and Chancellor of the Duchy of *Lancaſter*, dies. 1590. *Apr.* 6.

Henry IV. gains the battle of *Ivry* againſt the Duke of *Mayenne*; after which, he blocks up *Paris*, and takes the Suburbs: But the Duke of *Parma* conſtrains him to raiſe the blockade, which having done, he returns into the *Low-Countries*.

In the mean time, Count *Maurice* takes *Breda* by ſurprize, and makes ſome farther progreſs.

The Duke of *Mercœur*, of the Houſe of *Lorrain*, becomes maſter of *Bretagne*, by the help of the *Spaniards*. *Reg.* 33.

King *Henry* IV, being hard preſſed by the Leaguers and *Spaniards*, makes a treaty with Queen *Elizabeth*, who ingages to ſend 3000 men into *Bretagne* and *Picardy*, to hinder the *Spaniards* from ſettling there. 1591. *June* 25.

Theſe not ſufficing, ſhe ſends 4000 more, under the command of *Robert Devereux*, Earl of *Eſſex*, to be employed only in the ſiege of *Roan*; but King *Henry*, inſtead of that, deſigning to ſend them into *Champagne*, the Earl of *Eſſex* returns to *England*, leaving, however, his troops behind him. *July.*

The Queen, thus diſappointed, complains of King *Henry*, who cauſes *Roan* to be inveſted, to ſatisfy her: Whereupon, the Earl of *Eſſex*, purſuant to his ſolemn promiſe to *Henry*, though contrary to the Queen's expreſs order, repairs *Septemb.*

Aug. C. pairs to the ſiege. The Queen is very angry with the Earl for ſo doing; but he ſoon returns to *England*, and pacifies her.

King *Henry* ſends *Du Pleſſis Mornay* to Queen *Elizabeth*, to demand a further ſupply of 5000 men; but he can obtain nothing more from her.

The Duke of *Parma* raiſes the ſiege of *Rouen*.

Thomas Howard, the Duke of *Norfolk*'s ſecond ſon, goes to the *Azores* to wait for the *Spaniſh* plate-fleet, homeward
Reg. 34. bound, from *America*; but does not ſucceed in his deſign. However, the *Engliſh* take ſeveral *Spaniſh* ſhips, and particularly one, in which they found 22,000 indulgences for the *Spaniards* of *America*.

Nov. 20. Sir *Chriſtopher Hatton*, Lord Chancellor, dies, and is ſucceeded by Sir *John Puckering*, Lord-Keeper, the 28th of *May*, 1592.

This year, *Edmund Coppinger*, *Henry Arthington*, and *William Hacket*, three blaſphemous Sectaries, under pretence of a further Reformation, cauſe great diſturbances in the Kingdom; *Hacket* is hanged, and *Coppinger* dies in *Bridewell*.

1592. Queen *Elizabeth* makes a new treaty with *Henry* IV. in purſuance of which ſhe ſends 4000 men into *Bretagne*, under the command of Sir *John Norris*: But *Henry* IV. deceives her, by cauſing her troops to ſerve in *Normandy*, inſtead of *Bretagne*; at which the Queen is highly angry.

July. The Earl of *Bothwell* makes a freſh attempt to become maſter of King *James*'s perſon; but being diſcovered, he is forced to fly into *England*.

Sir *Walter Raleigh* ſets ſail for *America*, and takes a *Spaniſh* carrac with five decks, that was coming back from the *Indies*, richly laden, worth 150,000 *l.*

Sept. 6. The *Thames* was dried up at *London*, ſo that a man might
Reg. 35. ride through it.

Alexander Farneſe, Duke of *Parma*, dies.

1593. A new Parliament meets at *Weſtminſter*, which grants
Feb. 19. three ſubſidies of 2 *s.* 8 *d.* in the pound, of goods, and 4 *s.* of lands; together with ſix fifteenths and tenths, amounting, in all, to 280,000 *l.* At the ſame time, the Clergy advance two whole ſubſidies of 4 *s.* in the pound, to be paid in two years. This Parliament, among other acts, paſſes a ſevere one againſt all perſons which ſhould obſtinately refuſe to repair to ſome Church, or uſual place of common Prayer. And another, for reſtraining of Popiſh Recuſants to ſome certain places of abode.

Queen

Queen *Elizabeth* hearing, that King *James* was ruled by *Ann. C.*
ſuſpicious perſons, and that the *Spaniards*, aſſiſted by the Catholics, were contriving ſome plots, ſhe ſends the Lord *Borough* to give King *James* advice, and to enquire into thoſe plots.

King *James* demands the Earl of *Bothwell*; Queen *Elizabeth* refuſes to give him up, but baniſhes him out of *England*: He thereupon withdraws to his own houſe in *Scotland*, and has even the boldneſs to come into the King's preſence, who finding him ſupported by a ſtrong party, is forced to grant him a pardon.

King *James* is ſuſpected of favouring the Catholics, and keeps about his perſon men who ſeemed to have no zeal for the Proteſtant Religion.

King *Henry* IV. changes his Religion: He endeavours to excuſe himſelf for it to Queen *Elizabeth*, who writes him a very ſharp letter.

The King of *Spain*'s great preparations induce Queen *October.*
Elizabeth to conclude a league offenſive and defenſive with King *Henry*, though he had given her great reaſon to complain, for his non-performance of the treaties ſhe had concluded with him.

Richard Heſquet is hanged for perſuading *Ferdinand Stanley*, Earl of *Derby*, to take the title of King; but the Earl, who had diſcovered his treaſon, dies ſhortly after, of a ſtrange kind of poiſon.

The Count *de Fuentes*, and *Don Diego d'Ibarra*, govern *Reg.* 38.
the *Low-Countries*, after the Duke of *Parma*'s death; and project to invade *England* with a *Spaniſh* army, by the way of *Scotland*.

They bribe two *Portugueſe*, and *Roderigo Lopez*, a *Jew*, 1594.
Queen *Elizabeth*'s Phyſician, to poiſon her; but it being found out, *Lopez* and his accomplices are executed.

It is diſcovered, that *Ibarra* had ſuborned *Patrick Cullen*, *Edmund York*, and *Richard Williams*, to aſſaſſinate her, and others to ſet the fleet on fire: *Cullen* is hanged, and the reſt ſome time after. The Queen complains of theſe plots to the Archduke *Erneſt*, but has no redreſs.

Henry IV. becomes maſter of *Paris*, and then carries the *Mar.* 22.
war into *Bretagne*. Sir *Martin Forbiſher* is wounded there at the ſiege of *Crodon*, and dies ſhortly after his return to *Plymouth*. Sir *John Norris* is recalled from thence, and ſent into *Ireland*.

Queen *Elizabeth*, hearing that the *Spaniſh* faction was very powerful at the Court of *Scotland*, ſends the Lord

Ann. C. *Touch* to ſollicit King *James* to proceed againſt the Catholics: He brings no very ſatisfactory anſwer.

Bothwell enters *Scotland* with ſome troops, and ſurprizes
Reg. 37. the town of *Leith*; but having ſome diſadvantage in the firſt engagement with the King's troops, he retires to the borders: Queen *Elizabeth* forbids any to harbour or conceal him.

King *James* is ſo well pleaſed with this, that he alters his conduct, and proceeds vigorouſly againſt the Catholics:
1595. Whereupon they form the project of placing the Crown of *England* upon the head of *Iſabella*, Infanta of *Spain*; and *Philip* prepares to ſecond them. This produces a hearty union between King *James* and Queen *Elizabeth*.

Hugh O Neal Earl of *Tir-Oen* rebels in *Ireland*, in expectation of aſſiſtance from the *Spaniards*.

Henry IV, having declared war againſt *Spain*, demands ſuccours from Queen *Elizabeth*, who complains of him, and refuſes his requeſt.

Febr. *Edmund York* and *Richard Williams* are executed.

April. *Ferdinand de Velaſco*, Conſtable of *Caſtile*, enters *Franche-Comté* with a large army: At the ſame time, the Count *de Fuentes* invades *Picardy*, and becomes maſter of *Catelet*; then he beſieges *Dourlens*, beats the *French*, who came to its relief, and takes the town by ſtorm. Shortly after, he alſo becomes maſter of *Cambray*.

King *Henry*, being thus hard preſſed, ſends *Lomenie* to Queen *Elizabeth*, to demand a powerful aid; which ſhe refuſing, the Ambaſſador ſpeaks haughtily to her.

The *Spaniards* make a deſcent in *Cornwal*, and burn
July. *Mouſe-hole*, *Neulin*, and *Penſance*.

King *Henry* IV. accuſes the *States* of the *United Provinces* of violating their Alliance with him, and threatens to make a ſeparate peace: Wherefore, to appeaſe him, they ſend him money, troops, and corn.

At this Queen *Elizabeth* being diſpleaſed, demands to be reimburſed for the charges ſhe had been at upon their account: But they accommodate matters with her for a time.

The *Hans-Towns* carry their complaints againſt Queen *Elizabeth* to the diet of the Empire, for the plundering of their ſhips in the *Tajo* in 1589.

Sir *Walter Raleigh* makes a ſecond expedition into *Amer-*
Reg. 38. *ica* at his own charge. The Queen ſends, at the ſame time, 26 ſhips there, under the command of Sir *Francis Drake* and Sir *John Hawkins*: They have but little ſucceſs, and the two laſt die in the expedition.

A jealouſy

A jealouſy ariſes between Sir *John Norris*, and the Lord *Ruſſel* Lieutenant of *Ireland*, which ſtops the progreſs of the *Engliſh* arms in that Kingdom, and is the cauſe of the Earl of *Tir-Oen*'s obtaining a truce. *Ann. C.*

King *Henry* IV. beſieges *La Fere*: In the mean time, Cardinal *Arbert* Archduke of *Auſtria*, goes and lays ſiege to *Calais*. 1596.

In this diſtreſs, King *Henry* demands aſſiſtance of Queen *Elizabeth*, who ſends accordingly a body of men to *Dover*, under the command of the Earl of *Eſſex*; but before they could paſs over into *France*, *Calais* and *Ardres* were taken by the *Spaniards*. *April.*

Sir *Thomas Egerton* is made Lord Chancellor, in the room of Sir *John Puckering* deceaſed. *May* 6.

Queen *Elizabeth* lends King *Henry* a ſum of money, on the ſecurity of his Ambaſſadors.

She fits out a fleet againſt *Spain* of 150 ſail (among which were 24 *Dutch* ſhips) under the command of Sir *Charles Howard*: The land-forces were commanded by *Robert Devereux* Earl of *Eſſex*.

The *Engliſh* fleet arrives before *Cadiz*: At their approach, the *Spaniſh* ſhips retire to the *Puntals*; but the *Engliſh*, attacking them with great reſolution, force the *Spaniards* to ſink them, and eſcape to ſhore. Whereupon, the *Spaniſh* Admiral ſhip, with two others, are burnt, two are taken, and moſt of the others run a-ſhore. *June* 20.

At the ſame time, Sir *Walter Raleigh* burns a fleet of merchant-ſhips at *Port-Real*: And the Earl of *Eſſex*, having made himſelf maſter of *Cadiz*, plunders and burns that town, with ſome adjacent villages.

It was next propoſed, to go to the *Azores*, and wait for the *Indian* carracs; but the majority being againſt it, the *Engliſh* fleet returns to *England*. *Auguſt.*

Sir *Thomas Bodley* is recommended by the Earl of *Eſſex* to the Queen to be Secretary of State; but, without any regard to his recommendation, Sir *Robert Cecil* is made Secretary, and *Francis Vere* Governor of the *Brill*.

Queen *Elizabeth* renews her applications to the *States* of the *United-Provinces* for payment of her arrears; they put her off.

A league offenſive and defenſive is concluded between *France* and *England*, to which the *United-Provinces* accede. *Auguſt.* *Septemb.*

Philip II. makes another effort to conquer *England*, and fits out a fleet for that purpoſe; but his fleet is diſperſed by a tempeſt. *Reg.* 39.

Prince

Ann. C. Prince *Maurice* defeats the *Spaniards* at the battle of
1597. *Turnhout*. But, on the other ſide, *Hernand Tellez Per-*
January. tacarrero ſurprizes *Amiens*.

Mar. 10. Queen *Elizabeth*, having received advice of an intended
May. expedition of the *Spaniards* againſt *Ireland*, equips a fleet of ſix-ſcore veſſels, under the command of the Earl of *Eſſex*, and Sir *Walter Raleigh*, in order to go and ſeize the iſles of *Azores*: They return to *England* without doing any thing of moment.

At the ſame time, a *Spaniſh* fleet that was ſailing towards *England*, in order to make a deſcent upon *Cornwal*, is diſperſed by a ſtorm.

May. King *Henry* IV, having reſolved to recover *Amiens*, forms the ſiege of that place; and ſummons Queen *Elizabeth* to ſend the 4000 men ſtipulated by the treaty.

She offers to ſend them, provided he would pay them; whereupon, King *Henry* threatens to make a peace without her. But the Queen juſtifies her conduct from the words of the treaty; and at length lends *Henry* money inſtead of
Sept. troops. *Amiens* is retaken by the *French*.

The diſpute between *England* and the *Hanſe-Towns* being revived, Queen *Elizabeth* prohibits all commerce between them and *England*.

Oct. 24. King *Henry* privately negotiates a peace with *Spain*; whereupon Queen *Elizabeth* calls a Parliament, which per-
Reg. 40. ceiving the danger of an immediate invaſion, grants the Queen three ſubſidies of 2*s.* 8*d.* in the pound, of goods, and 4*s.* of lands, with ſix fifteenths and tenths. The Clergy grant at the ſame time, three ſubſidies of 4*s.* in the pounds to be paid at three ſeveral days. The chief acts, now made, were, One for puniſhment of rogues, vagabonds, and ſturdy beggars. Ano-
1598. ther for erecting hoſpitals and working-houſes for the poor.

Feb. Queen *Elizabeth* ſends Ambaſſadors to *France*; but, before their arrival, King *Henry* had concluded a peace with *Spain*; of which the Ambaſſadors highly complain; and
May 2. the Queen herſelf writes him a very ſevere letter.

Notwithſtanding all that, King *Henry*'s Plenipotentiaries ſign the treaty at *Vervins*, in which his Allies the *Engliſh* and *Dutch* were not included: He ratifies it, the 12th of *June* following.

Aug. 4. *William Cecil*, Baron *Burleigh*, Lord Treaſurer, dies; and was ſucceeded in that high office by *Thomas Sackville*, Lord *Buckhurſt*.

Aug. 16. Queen *Elizabeth* being reſolved to continue the war with *Spain*, makes a new treaty with the States of the *United Provinces*.

King

King James makes an almoſt open demand to be declared Queen *Elizabeth*'s preſumptive heir; and writes a letter to the Pope, which is ſhewn to Queen *Elizabeth*. *Ann. C.*

Hugh O Neal, Earl of *Tir-Oen*, cauſes in the mean time great diſturbances in *Ireland*, and becomes formidable there. *Sept.* 13.

Philip II. King of *Spain* dies.

He aſſigned the Sovereignty of the *Low-Countries*, as a portion to the Infanta *Iſabella* his daughter, when ſhe married the Archduke *Albert*; *Philip* III. his ſon ſucceeds him.

Queen *Elizabeth* gives the Earl of *Eſſex* a box on the ear, for his inſolent behaviour in Council; but he is ſoon after readmitted to favour. *Reg.* 41.

Edward Squire having conſpired to deſtroy Queen *Elizabeth*, by poiſoning the pummel of her ſaddle, is arraigned, and executed. *Nov.* 9. 13.

The Province of *Munſter* in *Ireland* revolts; and the *Iriſh* fancy, that, with the aſſiſtance of the Pope and *Spaniard*, the Earl of *Tir-Oen* would free them from the *Engliſh* yoke. 1599.

Thereupon *Robert Devereux* Earl of *Eſſex* is made Lord-Lieutenant of *Ireland*; and ſets out for that Kingdom with a very numerous army; but acts directly contrary to his inſtructions, for he treats with the Earl of *Tir-Oen*, and grants him a truce, till *May* the the next year. *Mar.* 12. *March.*

At this the Queen is ſo incenſed, that ſhe ſuſpects the Earl of *Eſſex* of ill deſigns, and writes him a very angry letter.

This letter makes ſuch impreſſion on him, that he reſolves to return to *England* with the flower of his army, and be revenged on his enemies; but *Henry Wriothesly* Earl of *Southampton* diſſuades him from ſo dangerous a reſolution.

However, attended with a few officers, he comes to *England* without leave, to juſtify himſelf before the Queen; and defending himſelf very ill, is confined at the Lord-Keeper's. *Sept.* 28. *Oct.* 2.

He writes an apology, wherein he vindicates himſelf but very poorly.

Mean while, the Earl of *Tir-Oen* hearing the Earl of *Eſſex* was under arreſt, breaks the truce, and does great miſchief to the *Engliſh* inhabitants in *Ireland*.

The friends and relations of the Earl of *Eſſex* loudly complaining of his treatment, railing againſt the miniſtry, and inciting the people to an inſurrection in his favour, the Queen aſſembles the Privy-Council, and gets them to examine *October.*

Ann. C. Reg. 42. examine the Earl's conduct; they unanimously condemn it. Whereupon, he gives himſelf up to devotion.

The Archduke *Andrew* propoſes a peace to Queen *Elizabeth*, only with a deſign to amuſe her.

1600. The Earl of *Tir-Oen* reduces the whole Province of *Ulſter* to his obedience; and tries to become maſter of *Feb.* the whole Kingdom: But *Charles Blount*, Lord *Mountjoy*, the new Lieutenant of *Ireland*, and Sir *George Carew* Preſident of *Munſter*, going over thither, ſtop his progreſs.

May. A conference is held at *Boulogne* for a peace between *England* and *Spain*; but it comes to nothing.

The *Eaſt-India*-Company is founded by the Queen, and inveſted with large privileges.

July 2. Prince *Maurice* defeats the Archduke *Albert*, at the battle of the *Dunes*, or *Nieuport*.

Pope *Clement* VIII. ſends two briefs into *England*, one addreſſed to the *Romiſh* Clergy, and the other to the People; in which he forbids them to acknowledge, after the death of *Elizabeth*, any Prince who would not ſwear to ſupport the Popiſh Religion with all his might; theſe briefs were aimed at King *James*.

Aug. 5. The *Ruthvens*, ſons to the late Earl *Gowry*, conſpire to murder the ſaid *James* King of *Scotland*, but he eſcapes: In the attempt, the two *Ruthvens* are killed; their accomplices are condemned to death; and by an act of Parliament, all that bore the name of *Ruthven*, are obliged to quit it.

The Queen content with having humbled the Earl of *Eſſex*, permits him to retire to his own houſe, under the free cuſtody of Sir *Richard Berkley*.

But his friends and domeſtics proclaiming his innocence, and prejudicing the Nation againſt the Queen, by aſſerting ſhe proſecuted him unjuſtly; ſhe cauſes him to be examined before the Privy-Council; where he is accuſed of want of reſpect to the Queen, and of contempt to her orders:

Reg. 43. He owns himſelf guilty, and is condemned to be ſuſpended from his offices of Earl-Marſhal and Maſter of the Ordnance, to be removed from the Council-board, and to be impriſoned during the Queen's pleaſure.

This ſentence he receives with ſo much humility, that the Queen leaves him at full liberty, but forbids him the Court.

Shortly after, the Queen having refuſed him the continuation of the Farm of the *Sweet Wines*, he forms the dangerous deſign of reſtoring himſelf to favour by force; and

and of deſtroying all his enemies at Court: And by cabal- *Ann. C.*
ling, and entertaining diſaffected perſons, puts himſelf ab- 1601.
ſolutely out of the Queen's favour.

He writes to *James*, King of *Scotland*, that a deſign was laid to deprive him of the Crown of *England*, and to place it upon the head of the Infanta of *Spain*.

He forms a Council conſiſting of *Presbyterian* Miniſters, of *Papiſts*, and Swordſmen; with this Council he reſolves to ſeize the Palace and the Queen's perſon.

The Privy-Council ſends for him at the Lord-Treaſurer's *Feb.* 7.
houſe, but he excuſes himſelf from going, and determines to excite an inſurrection in *London*.

The Queen ſends to him the Lord-Keeper *Egerton*, *Edward Somerſet* Earl of *Worceſter*, Sir *William Knowles*, and Sir *John Popham*; but he detains them priſoners, and marches into the City to raiſe an inſurrection.

There he meets with no aſſiſtance, nor incouragement; *Feb.* 8.
and being proclaimed a traitor, returns to his own houſe, by water, with great difficulty, where he is immediately inveſted by the Lord Admiral. At length he ſurrenders, and is, with his principal followers, committed to the *Tower*; the reſt of his accomplices are ſent to other priſons.

Thomas Lee, the Earl of *Eſſex*'s creature, is hanged, for *Feb.* 17.
plotting to reſcue that Earl by force out of the *Tower*.

Robert Devereux, Earl of *Eſſex*, and *Henry Wriotheſly*, 19.
Earl of *Southampton*, are brought to their trials, and condemned to die. After ſentence, the Earl of *Eſſex* is very penitent, and diſcovers his accomplices.

He is beheaded. 25.

Sir *Gilley Merrick*, one of his accomplices, and *Henry Mar.* 13.
Cuffe, his Secretary, are executed.

As were alſo Sir *Charles Danvers*, and Sir *Chriſtopher* 18.
Blount: But ſeveral that had been concerned with him are *April* 28.
pardoned. *May* 5.

James King of *Scotland* ſends an Ambaſſy to Queen *Eli-* *July* 26.
zabeth.

The ſiege of *Oſtend* is begun, in which Sir *Francis Vere*, *July.*
the Governor, and the *Engliſh* troops under him ſignalize themſelves.

King *Henry* IV. comes to *Calais*; ſome compliments *Auguſt.*
paſs between him and Queen *Elizabeth*.

Don Juan d'Aquila brings the Earl of *Tir-Oen* ſuccours *Septemb.*
from *Spain*, and becomes maſter of *Kinſale*; but *Tir-Oen* being utterly routed, the *Spaniards* are forced to return *Reg.* 44.
home.

Ann. C. Oct. 27. A Parliament meets at *Weſtminſter*, which grants the Queen four entire ſubſidies, and eight fifteenths and tenths. And the Clergy gave four ſubſidies of four ſhillings in the pound. Among other acts, one was made for the relief of the poor, *&c.*

Complaints being made in Parliament of ſeveral monopolies authorized by the Queen's Letters Patents, ſhe aboliſhes them.

1602. To divert the *Spaniards* from making freſh attempts upon *Ireland*, Queen *Elizabeth* fits out a fleet againſt *Spain*, under the command of Sir *Richard Leviſon* and Sir *William Mounſon*; they take a *Spaniſh* carrac valued at a million of crowns.

Septemb. Some gallies commanded by *Spinola*, that were ſailing for *Flanders*, are ſunk and taken by the *Engliſh* and *Dutch*.

A quarrel ariſes in *England* between the Jeſuits and ſecular Prieſts; and the former being found to be contriving ſomething againſt the Government, the Queen iſſues out a Proclamation againſt them.

Nov. 5. A conſpiracy is formed in *France* againſt King *Henry* IV. for which the Marſhal *de Biron*, one of the chief of the Conſpirators, is beheaded.

1602-3. *Hugh O Neal*, Earl of *Tir-Oen*, ſubmits to Queen *Elizabeth*.

Queen *Elizabeth* falls ill: Her Courtiers forſake her, and *January.* go and ſeek the favour of the King of *Scots*: She grows thereupon melancholy.

Being deſired by the Council, to name whom ſhe ſhould like for her Succeſſor, ſhe names *James* King of *Scotland*.

Mar. 24. Queen *Elizabeth* dies, after having lived ſixty-nine years, ſix months, and ſeven days; and reigned forty-four years, four months, and eight days: And was buried in *Henry* the VIIth's Chapel at *Weſtminſter*.

The Character *of* Queen ELIZABETH.

To diſplay in few words the Elogy of this illuſtrious Queen, it ſeems to be ſufficient to obſerve, that her name is ſtill of bleſſed memory with the *Engliſh*, now when flattery cannot be ſuppoſed to have any ſhare in the veneration they pay her. But *Elizabeth* baniſhed from *England* the Catholick Religion, and reſtored the Reformation. This alone was the cauſe that two Parties have been formed on her account, who mutually tax each other with flattery or animoſity. The Proteſtants conſidering that this Queen was the

the ſole bulwark of their Religion, which probably without her would have been deſtroyed in *England*, *Scotland*, *Ireland*, and perhaps in *France* and the *Low-Countries*, cannot forbear giving her great commendations, and feel themſelves inclined to excuſe her failings. For the ſame reaſon, the Roman Catholicks look upon her with another eye; nay, ſome have not ſcrupled to paint her in the blackeſt colours, and give her the moſt odious epithets. This makes it impoſſible to give her a character, that ſhall pleaſe all the world. I ſhall content myſelf, (ſays *Rapin*) therefore with making ſome reflections which will aſſiſt thoſe who ſeek only truth, to paſs an impartial judgment on this famous Queen, free from party-paſſion and prejudice.

Elizabeth had great ſenſe, and a judgement naturally ſound and ſolid. This appeared in her whole conduct, from the beginning to the end of her reign. Nothing ſhews her capacity more, than her addreſs in ſurmounting the difficulties and troubles created by her enemies, eſpecially when it is conſidered, what theſe enemies were, the moſt powerful, the moſt artful, the moſt ſubtle, and the leaſt ſcrupulous in *Europe*. The bare naming of them is a ſufficient demonſtration. The Court of *Rome* under ſeveral Popes, *Philip* II. King of *Spain*, the Duke of *Alva*, *Henry* II. and *Charles* IX. Kings of *France*, *Catharine de Medici*, the Duke of *Guiſe*, the Cardinal of *Lorrain*, *Mary* Queen of *Scots*, all the *Romiſh* Clergy, and particularly the Jeſuits. Had her forces been proportionable to thoſe of her enemies united together, there would be nothing very extraordinary. Strength often ſupplies the want of capacity. But in what manner did ſhe withſtand ſo potent, ſo formidable enemies? It was by two or three maxims which ſhe made the rule of her conduct, and from which ſhe never ſwerved: *To make herſelf beloved by her people: To be frugal of her treaſure: To cheriſh diſſention amongſt her neighbours.* If things are rightly conſidered, ſhe had no other way to ſecure herſelf. It cannot therefore be denied, that this is a clear evidence of her ability. But as her ability was never queſtioned, it is not this I am chiefly to deſcribe. On the contrary, her enemies have taken occaſion from thence to defame her, by repreſenting as vices diſguiſed, what her friends extol as ſo many virtues. They pretend, that her ability conſiſted wholly in an over ſtrained diſſimulation, and a profound hypocriſy. In a word, they ſay ſhe was a perfect Comedian. For my part, I don't pretend to deny that ſhe made great uſe of diſſimulation, as well to the Courts of *France*

and *Spain* as to the Queen of *Scotland* and the *Scots*. This would be denying a manifeſt truth. The Court of *Rome* was the only court ſhe never diſſembled with. I am alſo perſuaded, that being ſo much concerned to gain the love and eſteem of her ſubjects, ſhe affected to ſpeak frequently, and with exaggeration, of her tenderneſs for them, and deſired to have it believed, that ſhe did through an exceſſive love to her people, things wherein her own intereſt was moſtly concerned. But the queſtion is to know, whether in her circumſtances her diſſimulation was blameable. What injury was it to her ſubjects to endeavour to perſuade them, ſhe loved them tenderly, ſince ſhe actually and really did whatever was neceſſary to convince them? As to foreigners, it muſt be carefully obſerved, that her diſſimulation and artifices tended not to invade their poſſeſſions, but to preſerve her own. Her enemies frequently attempted to deprive her both of Crown and Life, and ſhe ſaved both by her policy and diſſimulation. Where is the harm of ſuch a conduct? Can the diſſimulation and artifices which aim only at ſelf-preſervation, be, without extreme prejudice, confounded with the diſſimulation and artifices that tend to ſurprize the innocent, and invade the property of others; can theſe, I ſay, be conſidered upon the ſame foot? For my part I am ſo far from thinking that this ſort of diſſimulation is any blemiſh to *Elizabeth*'s reputation, that I rather believe it ought to be reckoned among her commendable qualities.

Avarice is another failing imputed to her by her own friends. I will not deny that ſhe was too parſimonious, and upon ſome occaſions ſtuck too cloſe to her maxim, not to be at any expence but what was abſolutely neceſſary. However, in general, I maintain, that her circumſtances required her, if not to be covetous, at leaſt not to part with her money, but with the greateſt caution, both to preſerve her People's affection, and inable her to withſtand her enemies. After all, whom did ſhe wrong by her extreme frugality? A dozen of hungry Courtiers, who would have been very glad ſhe had laviſhed her treaſure, like the King her Father, in the beginning of his Reign. As for the reſt of her ſubjects, inſtead of having cauſe to complain of this pretended avarice, they had reaſon to be pleaſed with it, ſince it conſiſted not in robbing them of their property by illegal methods, as King *Henry* VII, her Grandfather, had done, but in husbanding her revenues, and conſequently their own.

She

She is alſo accuſed of not being ſo chaſte as ſhe affected to appear. Nay, ſome pretend, there are now in *England* the deſcendants of a daughter ſhe had by the Earl of *Leiceſter*. But as hitherto no proof of this accuſation has been produced, it may be ſafely reckoned among the calumnies with which her reputation has been attacked, as well during her life, as after her death.

It is not ſo eaſy to juſtify her concerning the death of the Queen of *Scots*. Here it muſt freely be owned, that ſhe ſacrificed equity, juſtice, and perhaps her own conſcience, to her ſafety. If *Mary* was guilty of her Husband's murder, as there is reaſon to believe, it belonged not to *Elizabeth* to puniſh her. And indeed, it was not for that ſhe took away her life, but ſhe uſed that pretence to detain her in priſon, under the deceitful excuſe of making her innocence appear. On this occaſion her diſſimulation was blame-worthy. This firſt injuſtice ingaged her afterwards, to uſe numberleſs arts and devices to have a pretence to render *Mary*'s impriſonment perpetual. Hence aroſe at laſt the neceſſity of putting her to death on the ſcaffold. In ſhort, this exceſs of violence gave birth to more artifices and acts of diſſimulation to juſtify herſelf, and caſt the blame on the innocent. This, doubtleſs, is *Elizabeth*'s great blemiſh, which manifeſtly proves to what height ſhe carried the fear of loſing a tottering Crown. This continual fear and uneaſineſs, is what characteriſes her Reign, becauſe it was the ſpring of almoſt all her actions. All that can be ſaid for *Elizabeth*, is, that the Queen of *Scots* and her Friends had brought things to ſuch a point, that one of the two Queens was to periſh, and it was natural that the weakeſt ſhould fall. But this does not excuſe *Elizabeth*'s injuſtice to *Mary*, in detaining her in priſon, which had no other foundation than *Elizabeth*'s fear concerning her Crown.

I come now to *Elizabeth*'s Religion. I do not believe her being a true Proteſtant was ever queſtioned. But as it was her intereſt to be ſo, ſome have taken occaſion to doubt whether the zeal ſhe expreſſed for her Religion, was the effect of her perſuaſion, or policy. What may have occaſioned this doubt, is, that it clearly appears in her Hiſtory, that in aſſiſting the Proteſtants of *France* and the *Netherlands*, as well as thoſe of *Scotland*, ſhe had only temporal views, namely, her own ſafety and defence againſt impending invaſions. But it cannot thence be inferred, ſhe was not a good Proteſtant, or had no Religion

at all, ſince it is not impoſſible that her Religion ſhould agree with her temporal intereſt. All that can be ſaid, is, that ſhe happened ſometimes to prefer her temporal, before her religious concerns.

She is warmly accuſed of perſecuting the Catholicks, and putting ſeveral to death. It is true, there were ſome that ſuffered death in her Reign. But one may venture to affirm, that none were puniſhed but for conſpiring againſt the Queen or State, or for attempting to deſtroy the Proteſtant Religion in *England*, and reſtore the *Romiſh* by violent methods. The Catholicks, who lived peaceably, were tolerated, though with ſome reſtraint, as to the exerciſe of their Religion, but with none, as to their conſciences. If this may be called perſecution, what name ſhall be given to the ſufferings of the Proteſtants in the Reign of *Mary*?

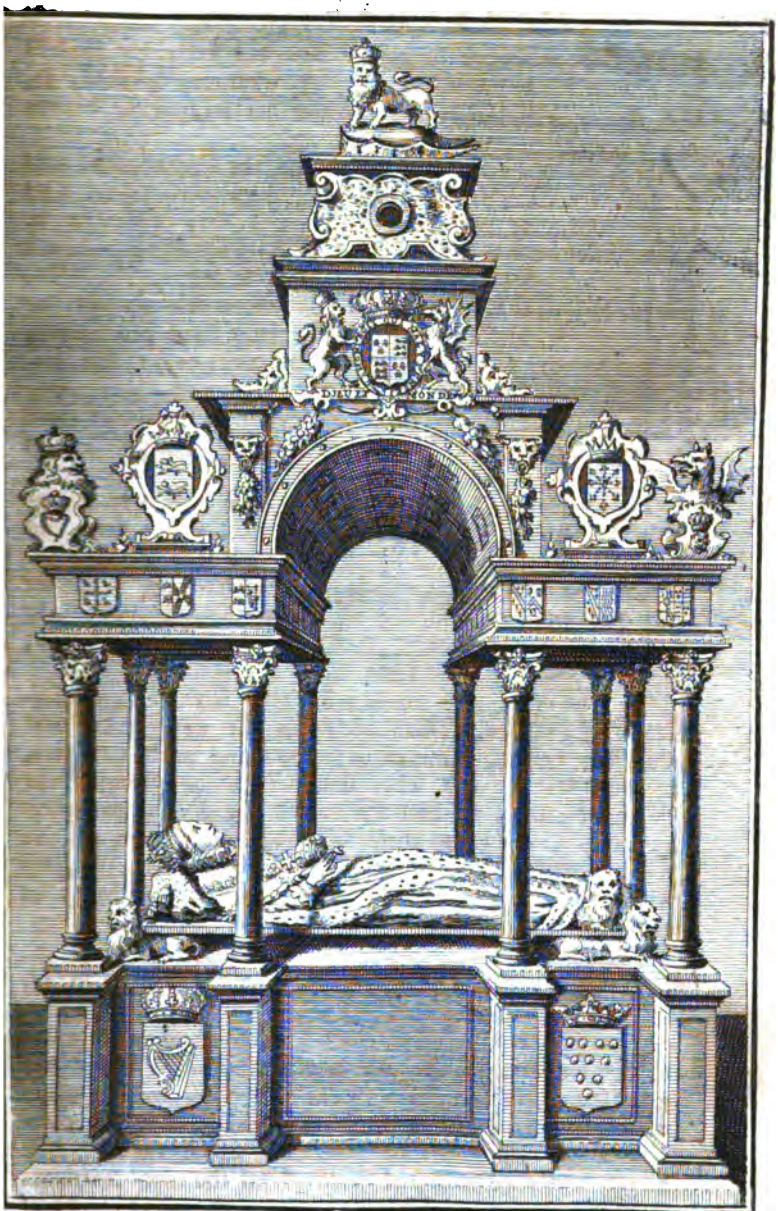
The Presbyterians think alſo, they have reaſon to complain of the ſtatute enacted in this Reign, which deprived them of liberty of conſcience, though they were Proteſtants. I ſhall not take upon me to determine, whether they had cauſe to complain of this rigour. I ſhall only ſay, that, in my opinion, they had too much obſtinacy, and their adverſaries too little charity.

To ſum up in two words what may ſerve to form *Elizabeth*'s Character, I ſhall add, that ſhe was a good and illuſtrious Queen, with many virtues and noble qualities, and few faults. But what ſhe ought to be eſteemed for above all things, is, that ſhe cauſed the *Engliſh* to enjoy a felicity unknown to their anceſtors, under moſt of the Kings, her Predeceſſors. This, doubtleſs, is the teſt, by which we are to judge of thoſe whom God hath ſet over us.

A Deſcription of the Monument of Queen ELIZABETH.

JAMES I. her ſucceſſor, erected a magnificent monument to her memory in the eaſt end of the north iſle of her grandfather HENRY VII's chapel. It is an arch of white marble ſupported by ten Corinthian pillars of black marble, under which lies her effigies in royal robes. The freeze is adorned with the arms of all the royal marriages from EDWARD the Confeſſor, and with impalements of ſeveral branches of the royal family.

On



The Monument of **QUEEN ELIZABETH**
in Westminster Abbey.

On a Tablature over the cornish at the head of the tomb is this inscription:

MEMORIÆ ÆTERNÆ.

Elizabethæ Angliæ, Franciæ, & Hiberniæ Reginæ, R. Henrici VIII. filiæ, R. Hen. VII. nepti, R. Ed. IV. pronepti, patriæ parenti, religionis & bonarum artium altrici, plurimarum linguarum peritia, præclaris tum animi tum corporis dotibus, regiisq; virtutibus supra sexum, Principi

INCOMPARABILI.

Jacobus Magnæ Britanniæ, Franciæ, & Hiberniæ, Rex, virtutum & regnorum hæres, bene merenti pie posuit.

Speed, in his Chronicle, translates this and the other inscriptions on her monument, as here inserted:

For an eternal Memorial

Unto Elizabeth, Queen of England, France, and Ireland, daughter of King HENRY the eighth, grandchild to King HENRY the seventh, and great grandchild to King EDWARD the fourth. The mother of her country: The patroness and nurse of religion and learning; a Princess for all the endowments of body and mind, and more especially for her royal virtues above her Sex,

INCOMPARABLE.

JAMES King of Great-Britain, France, and Ireland, heir both of her throne and virtues, hath piously erected this monument to a Princess so worthy of commemoration.

On the basement at the top are these words:

Regno consortes & urna, hic obdormimus, Elizabetha & Maria sorores, in spe resurrectionis.

The sisters MARY and ELIZABETH, who possessed the same throne, are companions in the grave, and here sleep in hopes of a resurrection.

On a like Tablature on the cornish at the feet is this inscription:

MEMORIÆ SACRUM.

Religione ad primævam sinceritatem restaurata, pace fundata, moneta ad justum valorem reducta. Rebellione domestica vindicata, Gallia malis intestinis præcipiti sublevata, Belgio sustentato, Hispanica classe profligata, Hibernia pulsis Hispanis, & Rebellibus ad deditionem coactis pacata, redditibus utriusque; academiæ lege annonaria plurimum adauctis, tota denique Anglia ditata, prudentissimæq; annos XLV. administrata, Elizabetha Regina victrix, triumphatrix, pietatis studiosissima, fœliciſſima, placida morte septuagenaria soluta, mortales reliquias dum Christo jubente resurgant immortales, in hac ecclesia celeberrima ab ipsa conservata, & denuo fundata, deposuit.

SACRED UNTO MEMORY.

Religion to its primitive purity restored; peace established; money reduced to its just value; domestick rebellion quelled; France relieved when involved in inteſtine divisions; the Netherlands supported; the Spanish Armado overthrown; Ireland almost lost by rebellion, retrieved by defeating the Spaniards; the revenue of both universities much enlarged by a law of provisions; AND LASTLY, ALL ENGLAND ENRICHED:

ELIZABETH,

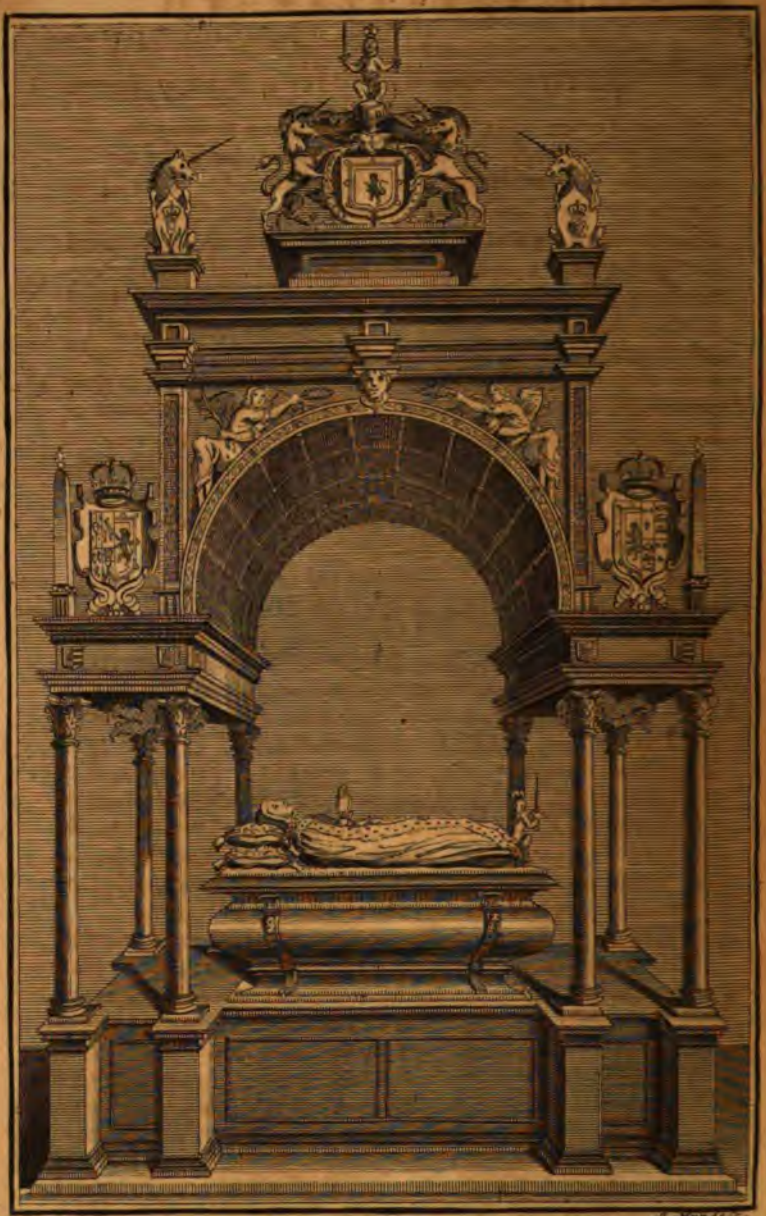
During forty-five years a most wise governour, a victorious and triumphant Queen, most strictly religious, most happy, by a calm and resigned death at her seventieth year, left her mortal remains, till by Christ's word they shall rise again to immortality, to be deposited in this famous church by her repaired and reestablished.

On the basement at the feet are these words,

Obiit XXIV. Martii, Anno Salutis M.DC.II. Regni XLV. Ætatis LXX.

She died the twenty-fourth of March in the year of Salvation 1602, in the forty-fifth year of her Reign, and the seventieth of her Age.

A de-



The Monument of MARY QUEEN *of* SCOTS
in Westminster Abbey.

A Deſcription of the Monument of MARY *Queen of* SCOTS.

King JAMES her ſon, not long after coming to the crown of England, erected a magnificent tomb for her in the ſouth iſle of HENRY VII's chapel, over a vault to which her body had been removed from the Cathedral of Peterborough, where it had been firſt interred. It is raiſed in the form of a triumphal arch, ſupported by eight Corinthian pillars, under which lies her portraiture in royal robes. The freeze is adorned with the arms of the ſeveral marriages of the Kings of Scotland, and the top crowned with her atchievements. On ſeveral tablatures of marble round the tomb are epitaphs, which give a brief account of her royal deſcent, and relations, the exquiſite endowments of her body and mind, the troubles of her life, her conſtancy in religion, and reſolution in death.

The firſt part of her Epitaph is upon the ſouth ſide of her Tomb in Roman Capitals.

The inſcriptions are:

D. O. M.

Bonæ Memoriæ & Spei Æternæ. Mariæ Stuartæ Scotorum Reginæ, Franciæ Dotariæ, Jacobi V. Scotorum Regis filiæ & hæredis unicæ, Henrici VII. Angl. Regis, ex Margareta majori natu filia (Jacobo IIII. Regi Scotorum Matrimonio copulata,) Proneptis, Edwardi IIII, Angl. Regis ex Elizabetha, filiarum ſuarum natu maxima, Abneptis, Franciſci II. Gallorum R. Conjugis, Coronæ Angl. dum vixit, certæ, & indubitatæ hæredis, & Jacobi magnæ Britanniæ Monarchæ potentiſſimi, matris.

Stirpe vere Regia, & antiquiſſima prognata erat, maximi totius Europæ Principib. agnatione, & cognatione conjuncta, & exquiſitiſſimis animi, & corporis dotibus, & ornamentis cumulatiſſima. Verum, ut ſunt variæ rerum humanarum vices, poſtquam Annos plus minus viginti, in cuſtodia detenta, fortiter, & ſtrenue (ſed fruſtra) cum malevolorum obtrectationibus, timidorum ſuſpicionibus, & inimicorum capitalium inſidiis conflictata eſſet, tandem inaudito, & infeſto regibus exemplo, ſecuri percutitur; & contempto mundo, devicta morte, laſſato carnifice, Chriſto Servatori animæ ſalutem, Jacobo filio ſpem Regni, & Poſteritatis, & univerſis cædis infauſtæ ſpectatoribus exemplum patientiæ

tientiæ commendans, pie, patienter, intrepide, cervicem regiam, ſecuri maledictæ ſubjecit, & vitæ caducæ ſortem, cum cœleſtis regni perennitate commutavit, VI. Idus Februarii. Anno Chriſti. M. D. LXXXVII. Ætatis XXXXVI.

In Engliſh:

Sacred to the memory of MARY STUART, Queen of Scotland, and Dowager of France, daughter and ſole heireſs of JAMES V. King of Scotland, and granddaughter of MARGARET, eldeſt Daughter of HENRY VII. by ELIZABETH eldeſt Daughter of EDWARD IV, (Kings of England) Wife of FRANCIS II. King of France, whilſt ſhe lived, certain and undoubted Heireſs to the Crown of England, and Mother of the moſt potent JAMES, Monarch of Great Britain. She was deſcended from a truly royal and moſt ancient Line, nearly allied by deſcent and conſanguinity to all the greateſt Princes in Europe, and was abundantly adorned with the moſt excellent endowments of body and mind: But as all human affairs have their viciſſitudes, after a confinement of about twenty years, and having ſtruggled with reſolution and fortitude, (though ineffectually) with the malignity of Calumniators, the jealouſy of the fearful, and the ſnares of capital Enemies, ſhe was at length, an unprecedented, unheard-of Example with Kings, brought to the block; where, with contempt of this world, triumphant in death, and fearleſs of the Executioner, recommending her Soul to Chriſt her Saviour, her hopes of Empire and Poſterity to her Son JAMES, and the example of her patience to all the ſpectators of ſo bloody and mournful a ſcene, ſhe piouſly, patiently, and intrepidly ſubmitted her royal neck to the accurſed ax, and exchanged this tranſitory life for a bleſſed eternity in heaven, on the eighth of February, in the year of our Lord, 1587. Aged forty-ſix.

The other part of the Epitaph is on the North-ſide of the Monument in Hexameter and Pentameter, or Elegiack, verſes:

Generis ſplendor, raræ ſi gratia formæ,
Probri neſcia mens, inviolata fides,
Hectoris invicti robur, ſapientia, candor,
Nixaque ſolantis ſpes pietate Dei:

Si morum probitas, duri patientia fœni,
Majeſtas, bonitas, pura, benigna manus,
Pallida fortunæ poſſint vitare tonantis
Fulmina, quæ montes, templaque ſancta petunt:
Non præmatura fatorum ſorte periſſet,
Nec fleret mœſtis triſtis imago genis.
Jure Scotos, Thalamo Francos, ſpe poſſidet Anglos,
Triplice ſic triplex jure corona beat.
Fœlix, heu nimium Fœlix, ſi turbine pulſa
Vicinam ſero conciliaſſet opem.
Sed cadit ut terram teneat, nunc morte triumphat,
Fructibus ut ſua ſtirps, pullulet inde novis.
Victa nequit Vinci, neç carcere clauſa teneri;
Non occiſa mori, ſed neque capta capi.
Sic vitis ſucciſa gemit fœcundior uvis,
Sculptaque purpureo, gemma decore micat.
Obruta frugifero ſenſim ſic ceſpite ſurgunt
Semina, per multos, quæ latuere dies.
Sanguine ſancivit fœdus cum plebe Jehova,
Sanguine placabant numina ſancta patres.
Sanguine conſperci quos præterit ira penates;
Sanguine ſignata eſt quæ modo cedit humus.
Parce Deus, ſatis eſt, infandos ſiſte dolores:
Inter funeſtos pervolet illa dies.
Sit Reges mactare nefas, ut ſanguine poſthac,
Purpureo nunquam terra Britanna fluat.
Exemplum pereat cæſæ cum vulnere Chriſtæ:
Inque malum præceps, author & actor eat.
Si meliore ſui poſt mortem parte triumphet,
Carnifices ſileant, tormina, clauſtra, cruces;
Quem dederant curſum ſuperi, Regina peregit.
Tempora læta Deus, tempora dura dedit.
Edidit eximium fato properante Jacobum,
Quem pallas, Muſæ, Delia Fata colunt.
Magna viro, major natu, ſed maxima partu,
Conditur hic Regum filia, ſponſa, parens.
Det Deus ut nati & qui naſcentur ab illa,
Æternos videant hinc ſine nube dies.

H. N gemens.

In Engliſh:

In birth illuſtrious, or if Beauty's pride,
A guiltleſs Mind and Faith ſeverely try'd,
If Wiſdom, Fortitude, a candid breaſt,
And Hope in Him who comforts the diſtreſt;

If Probity of Heart, with Patience mild
To bear injurious bonds, to be revil'd;
If Goodneſs, Majeſty, a lib'ral Will
To raiſe the wretched, and the Poor to fill,
Could 'ſcape blind fortune's thunders, that alike
On good or bad, on low and lofty, ſtrike;
Thou hadſt not early fall'n by being Great,
Nor thy ſad image ſeem'd to weep thy fate.
Scotland by right, by marriage France was thine,
To theſe well-founded hope did England join,
By triple-right a triple-crown ſhe wears,
But dim its luſtre to a crown of Stars.
Happy, too happy if, the ſtorm allay'd,
Tho' late the neighb'ring realm had her obey'd,
But ſee! ſhe falls to triumph in the grave;
New vigour thence, and fruits, her branches have.
Conquer'd ſhe conquers, free tho' cloſe confined,
Not dead though ſlain; the fates her chains unbind.
So the prun'd Vine ſhoots forth with fertile ſprays,
And the cut gem reflects it's purple rays:
So genial ſeeds committed to the earth
Riſe from the fruitful ſoil, a brighter birth.
With blood, God's covenant with man was made,
With blood, the Patriarchs his wrath allay'd,
With blood, the Firſt-born 'ſcap'd the general doom;
Blood ſtain'd the land which now is Her's become.
Oh ſtay thy vengeance heav'n for mercy's ſake;
That fatal day be ever mark'd with black,
To murther Kings abhorr'd for evermore.
Nor Britain ſtain'd again with royal Gore:
Let the example periſh with the blow,
Accurs'd its author, and its actor too.
Since in her better part ſhe triumphs ſtill,
Dumb be her fate, and ſilent ev'ry ill.
Such was her courſe as heav'n thought fit to ſteer,
She had her joys, ſhe knew her ſorrows, here.
Early to life the Royal JAMES ſhe gave,
Whom ev'ry kinder pow'r in keeping have.
By nuptials great, by birth ſtill greater known,
And greateſt in her iſſue, ſuch a Son;
Here MARY lies, of whom we ſighing ſing,
The Daughter, Wife, and Mother of a King.
Grant heav'n, that to the lateſt times her race,
Their happy hours without a cloud may paſs.

H. N. lamenting.

Over

Over the Corniſh of this Tomb at the head is part of the 21ſt verſe of the 2d Chapter of 1 Peter.

Chriſtus pro nobis
Paſſus eſt, relinquens
Exemplum, ut ſequamini
Veſtigia ejus.

In Engliſh:

Chriſt alſo ſuffered for us, leaving us an example, that we ſhould follow his ſteps.

Over the Corniſh at the feet is the 23d verſe of the ſame chapter.

Qui cum malediceretur
Non maledicebat, cum
Pateretur, non
Comminabatur; tradebat
Autem judicanti juſtè.

In Engliſh:

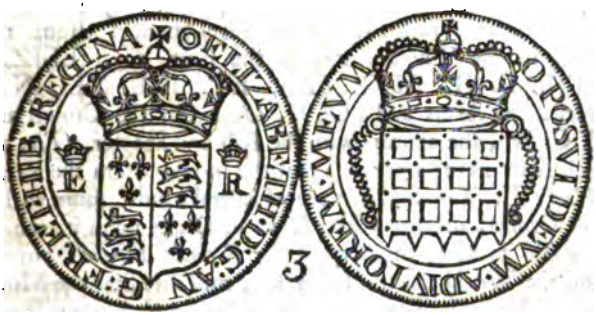
Who when he was reviled, reviled not again; when he ſuffered he threatened not; but committed himſelf to him that judgeth righteouſly.

An Account of the MONEY *coined in this Reign.*

By an Indenture of the 2d of *Elizabeth*, a pound-weight of Gold, of the old ſtandard, of 23 Carats, 3 grains and a half fine, was coined into 36 pounds by tale; namely, into 24 Sovereigns, at thirty ſhillings a-piece, or 48 Rials, at fifteen ſhillings, or 72 Angels, at ten ſhillings a-piece, or 144 Half-Angels, at five ſhillings a-piece: And a pound-weight of Crown Gold of 22 Carats fine, and 2 Carats allay, was coined into 33 pounds by tale; namely, 33 Sovereigns at twenty ſhillings a-piece, or 66 Half-Sovereigns at ten ſhillings a-piece, or 132 Crowns at five ſhillings a piece, or 264 Half-Crowns. And a pound-weight of the old ſterling Silver, *viz.* 11 ounces 2 penny-weight fine, and 18 penny-weight allay, was coined into 3 pounds by tale, of Half-Shillings, Groats, Quarter-Shillings, Half-Groats, Three Half-penny Pieces, Pence, and Farthings.—— In the 19th of her Reign, a pound-weight of Gold, of the old ſtandard, was coined into 72 Angels, at ten ſhillings a-piece, 144 Half-Angels, at five ſhillings a-piece, or 288 Quarter

Quarter-Angels, amounting in tale to 36 pounds; and a pound of old ſterling Silver, into Half-Shillings, Three-pences, Three-Halt-penny, or Three-Farthing Pieces, to make three pounds by tale.——And in the 25th, into ſixty ſhillings, or into three pounds by tale.—— In the 26th, a pound Troy of old ſtandard Gold, was coined into 48 Nobles, at fifteeen ſhillings a-piece, or 24 Double-Nobles, at thirty ſhillings a-piece, making 36 pounds.—— In the 35th year of this Reign, a pound-weight of Gold of 22 Carats fine, and 2 Carats allay, was coined into 33 Sovereigns, at twenty ſhillings a-piece, or 66 Half-Sovereigns, or 132 Crowns, or 264 Half-Crowns, making 33 pounds by tale.— In the 43d, the pound-weight of old ſtandard Gold, was coined into 73 Angels, at ten ſhillings a-piece, or 146 Half-Angels, or 292 Quarter-Angels, making 36 pounds ten ſhillings in tale, and the pound-weight of Gold of 22 Carats fine, and 2 Carats allay, into 33 Sovereigns and a half, at twenty ſhillings a-piece, or 67 Half-Sovereigns, or 134 Crowns, or 268 Half-Crowns, making 33 pounds ten ſhillings in tale; and the pound-weight of old ſtandard Silver, into three pounds, two ſhillings by tale; *viz.* into Crowns, Half-Crowns, Shillings, Six-pences, Two-pences, Pence, and Half-pence.

The corruptions which the laſt year of *Henry* VIII. had brought into the *Engliſh* money, were not quite rooted out till Queen *Elizabeth*'s Reign; but her firſt buſineſs was to mark all the baſe pieces, either with a Greyhound, Portcluſe, Lion, Harp, Roſe, or Fleur-de-lis. Her Gold Coins, as appear from the foregoing Indentures, were Sovereigns, Half-Sovereigns, or Rials, Nobles, double Nobles, Angels, Half-Angels, pieces of an Angel and a half, and three Angels, Crowns,



Crowns, and Half-Crowns. The Sovereign has, on one ſide, the Queen's figure, in Armour and Ruff, Hair diſheveled, crowned with the Imperial Crown of *England*, (conſiſting of the double Arch, as born ever ſince; all, except *Henry* VI, having born it before her, with the ſingle Arch.) ELIZABETH. D G ANG FRA ET HIB REGINA. Reverſe, the Arms crowned between E. R. a Wool-pack the Mark, SCVTVM. FIDEI. PROTEGET. EAM. (*Fig.* 1.) the Half-Sovereign has her head,

as

as upon the Shilling. The Angel has her titles as before; Reverſe, the ſhip and arms, with E. and a Roſe, DNI. FACTVM. EST. ISTVD. ET. EST. MIRABI. The double Roſe-Noble, or Roſe-Rial, which is a noble medal, has on one ſide, the Queen in her Robes and Crown, Scepter, and Ball, upon her Throne, at her feet a Portcluſe, ELIZABETH. D. G. ANG. FRA. ET. HIB. REGINA. Reverſe, a large Roſe filling the Area, with the arms in the center A. DNO. FACTV. EST. ISTVD. ET. MIRAB. IN. OCVL. NRIS.——Queen *Elizabeth*'s Silver money are Crowns, Half-Crowns, Shillings, Six-pences, Groats, Three-pences, Two-pences, Pennies, Penny Half-pennies, Half-pence, and Farthings, all of Silver; for there was no Braſs or Copper-money coined in *England* before *James* I. This Silver-money, from the Crown to the Three-pence, is the ſame, *viz.* ELIZABETH. D. G. ANG. FRA. ET. HIB. REGINA. Reverſe, the Arms and POSVI, *&c.* On the Crown and Half-Crown, ſhe appears with the Ball and Scepter, (*Fig.* 2.) which latter never appeared upon the monies from the Reign of *Henry* III. The Shillings are of ſeveral kinds, ſome with a Croſs Croſlet, another with a Dove or Drake upon it, which laſt is ſaid to be in memory of Sir *Francis Drake*'s voyage round the World; a third very fair, mill'd, a Star the Mint-mark, (*Fig.* 4.) The Portcluſe-Shilling and Crown-Piece, both which are very rare, inſtead of the Queen's head, have the Arms crowned between E. R. and ELIZABETH. D. G. ANG. FR. ET. HIB. REGINA. Reverſe, a Portcullice crowned, and POSVI, *&c.* an Annulet the Mint-mark. The Six-pences are of different Mints, as the Shillings; ſome with a Roſe behind the Queen's Head, another marked with the *Belgic* Lion upon the Queen's breaſt. Of Groats there are the Drake, Star, or Mill'd, and Croſs croſlet, Mint-marks, *&c.* Of the Three-pences, ſome have a Croſs, others a Sword for the Mint-mark, others the Star, Cinque-foil, Pheon, *&c.* all having the Roſe behind the Head, and Motto as the larger Pieces. The Two-pence has two dots behind the Head, E. D. G. ROSA. SINE SPINA. Reverſe, the Arms, and CIVITAS LONDON. The Three Half-penny piece (coined by this Queen only,) has the Roſe without the Queen's head, CIVITAS EBORACI. The Pennies have the ſame inſcription about the Queen's head; Reverſe, the Arms, and CIVITAS LONDON. Of theſe there are with the Drake, Creſcent, Croſs croſlet, Tun, Figure II. and Annulet. They are from

six grains and a half, to ten and a half. The Farthings have all the Rose on each side, and weigh from three to five grains.——Besides these, *Elizabeth* coined also *Irish* money, namely, Shillings called Harpers, from the arms of that Kingdom, *viz.* three Harps crowned on the Reverse. (*Fig.* 5.)

The NOBILITY, created in this Reign, was as follows: *Ann. C.*

William Parr, restored to the title of Marquis of *Northampton*. 1558-9. 13 *Jan.*

Edward Seymour, Baron *Beauchamp*, restored to the honour of Earl of *Hertford*.

Thomas Howard, Viscount *Bindon*.

Henry Carey, Baron *Hunsdon*.

Oliver St. John, Baron St. *John* of *Bletshoo*.

Ambrose Dudley, Baron *Lisle*; and the next day, Earl of *Warwick*. 1562. 25 *Dec.*

Robert Dudley, Baron of *Denbigh*; and the next day, Earl of *Leicester*. 1564. 28 *Sept.*

Thomas Sackville, Baron *Buckhurst*. 1567. 8 *June.*

William West, Baron *La Ware*.

William Cecil, Baron *Burleigh*. 1570. 25 *Feb.*

Walter D'Evereux, Viscount *Hereford*——Earl of *Essex*. 1572. *May* 4.

Edward, Baron *Clinton*,——Earl of *Lincoln*.

Henry, Baron *Compton*, by summ. 8 *May.*

Henry Cheney, Baron *Cheney*, by summ.

Henry, Baron *Norris*, of *Ricot*, by summ.

Philip Howard, Earl of *Arundel*. 1580. 16 *Jan.*

Peregrine Bartu, or *Bertie*, Baron *Willoughby* of *Eresby*, by summ.

Charles Howard, Earl of *Nottingham*. 1597. 22 *Oct.*

Thomas Howard, Baron *Howard* of *Walden*. 24 *Oct.*

Knights of the Garter elected in the Reign of Queen ELIZABETH.

Thomas Howard, Duke of *Norfolk*.

Henry Manners, Earl of *Rutland*.

Sir *Robert Dudley*, Knight, afterwards Earl of *Leicester*.

Adolphus, Duke of *Holſtein*.
George Talbot, Earl of *Shrewsbury*.
Henry Carey, Lord *Hunſdon*.
Thomas Percy, Earl of *Northumberland*.
Ambroſe Dudley, Earl of *Warwick*.
Charles IX, King of *France*.
Francis Ruſſel, Earl of *Bedford*.
Sir *Henry Sidney*, Knight.
Maximilian II, Emperor of *Germany*.
Henry Haſtings, Earl of *Huntingdon*.
William Somerſet, Earl of *Worceſter*.
Francis Montmorency, Duke of *Montmorency*.
Walter D'Evereux, Viſcount *Hereford*, afterwards Earl of *Eſſex*.
William Cecil, Lord *Burleigh*, afterwards Lord-Treaſurer of *England*.
Arthur Grey, Lord *Grey* of *Wilton*.
Edmund Bruges, Lord *Chandos*.
Henry Stanley, Earl of *Derby*.
Henry Herbert, Earl of *Pembroke*.
Henry III, King of *France*.
Charles Howard, Lord *Howard* of *Effingham*, afterwards Earl of *Nottingham*.
Rodolpho, Emperor of *Germany*.
Frederic II, King of *Denmark*.
John Caſimir, Count Palatine of the *Rhine*.
Edward Manners, Earl of *Rutland*.
William Brook, Lord *Cobham*.
Henry Scrope, Lord *Scrope* of *Bolton*.
Robert D'Evereux, Earl of *Eſſex*.
Thomas Buller, Earl of *Ormond* and *Oſſory*.
Sir *Chriſtopher Hatton*, Knight, afterwards Lord Chancellor of *England*.
Henry Ratcliffe, Earl of *Suſſex*.
Thomas Sackville, Lord *Buckhurſt*, afterwards Lord-Treaſurer of *England*, and Earl of *Dorſet*.
Henry IV, King of *France*.
James VI, King of *Scotland*, afterwards King of *England*.
Gilbert Talbot, Earl of *Shrewsbury*.
George Clifford, Earl of *Cumberland*.
Henry Percy, Earl of *Northumberland*.
Edward Somerſet, Earl of *Worceſter*.
Thomas Burough, Lord *Burough*.
Edmund Sheffield, Lord *Sheffield*, afterwards Earl of *Mulgrave*.

K. JAMES I.
Vertue Sculp.

Sir *Francis Knolles*, Knight.
Frederic, Duke of *Wirtembergh*.
Thomas Howard, Lord *Howard* of *Walden*, afterwards Earl of *Suffolk*, and Lord-Treaſurer of *England*.
George Carey, Lord *Hunſdon*.
Charles Blount, Lord *Mountjoy*, afterwards Earl of *Devonſhire*.
Sir *Henry Lea*, Knight.
Robert Ratcliffe, Earl of *Suſſex*.
Henry Brook, Lord *Cobham*.
Thomas Scrope, Lord *Scrope* of *Bolton*.
William Stanley, Earl of *Derby*.
Thomas Cecil, Lord *Burleigh*, afterwards Earl of *Exeter*.

BOOK XVIII.

The Reign of JAMES I. *Containing the ſpace of 22 years and 3 days.*

24. JAMES I.

JAMES VI, King of *Scotland*, is proclaimed, at *London*, King of *England*, *Scotland*, *France*, and *Ireland*, under the name of *James* I. *Ann. C.* 1602-3. *Mar.* 24. *Reg.* 1.

Sir *Robert Carey*, the Lord *Hundſon*'s youngeſt ſon, carries him the news of his acceſſion to the Crown of *England*.

King *James* ſets out from *Edinburgh* for *London*, attended by the Duke of *Lenox*, the Earl of *Mar*, and the Lords *Hume*, and *Kinloſs*, &c. 1603. *April* 5.

Henry Wriotheſley, Earl of *Southampton*, and others, are releaſed out of the *Tower*, by the King's order. 10.

The King arrives at *York*, where moſt of the *Engliſh* Lords come and meet him, particularly Sir *Robert Cecil*, who had kept a correſpondence with him during Queen *Elizabeth*'s life. 15.

He comes to *Newark*, where he orders a cut purſe to be hanged, without trial. His Majeſty comes to *Royſton*. 21.

The funeral of Queen *Elizabeth* is ſolemnized: King *James* refuſes to go into mourning for her. 27. 28.

The King comes to *Theobald*'s, a houſe of Sir *Robert Cecil*'s, where the Council come to pay their reſpects to him. *May* 3.

Ann. C. He introduces ſeveral *Scots* into his Council, and makes
4. a great number of Knights.

He arrives at *London*, where he is very laviſh of honours and dignities: But he receives with great coldneſs the Lord *Cobham*, Sir *Walter Raleigh*, and others, that had been enemies to the late Earl of *Eſſex*.

A Proclamation is iſſued out againſt ſome monopolies.

King *James* ſends for his Queen and children out of *Scotland*.

June. Ambaſſadors come to *England* from the Courts of *France* and *Spain*, and from the Archduke. The Maſter of the Ceremonies is inſtituted, the firſt of whom was Sir *Lewis Lewkenor*.

7. *Valentine Thomas*, that had lain many years in the *Tower*, is condemned of treaſon, for a conſpiracy againſt Queen *Elizabeth*, and ſome of her Council, and executed.

8. The Marquiſs *de Roſny*, Ambaſſador from *Henry* IV, comes to *London*.

11. The Queen arrives at *York*.

Charles Blount, Lord *Montjoy*, returns from *Ireland*, bringing with him *Hugh O Neal*, Earl of *Tir-Oen*, who, notwithſtanding all the blood he had ſhed, is pardoned.

21. *Roger Manners*, Earl of *Rutland*, is ſent to carry the Order of the Garter to *Chriſtiern*, King of *Denmark*, and to be King *James*'s proxy at the chriſtening of Prince *Chriſtian*. *Robert*, Lord *Spencer*, is alſo ſent to the Duke of *Wirtemberg* with the Order of the Garter.

23. King *James* revokes the letters of mart granted by Queen *Elizabeth* againſt the *Spaniards*.

27. He goes and meets the Queen, Prince *Henry*, and the Princeſs *Elizabeth*, in *Northamptonſhire*.

July 3. Prince *Henry* and the Duke of *Lenox*, with the Earls of *Southampton*, *Marr*, and *Pembroke*, are created Knights of the Garter.

Henry Wriotheſley Earl of *Southampton*, and *Robert D'Evereux* ſon to the late Earl of *Eſſex*, are reſtored to their eſtates and honours.

A conſpiracy by *Henry Brooke* Lord *Cobham*, *George Brooke* his brother, *Thomas* Lord *Grey* of *Wilton*, Sir *Walter Raleigh*, Sir *Griffith Markham*, and ſome others, to place *Arabella Steuart* on the throne, is diſcovered, and the Conſpirators are apprehended.

July 24. The King makes 62 Knights of the *Bath*.

25. King *James*, and his Queen, *Anne* of *Denmark*, are crowned.

A pro-

A Proclamation is iſſued out, forbidding all perſons who had any buſineſs at Court, to repair thither till winter, by reaſon of the plague, which raged this year ſo violently, that there died of it in *London* 30,578 perſons. *Ann. C.*

The Conſpirators abovementioned are carried to *Winchester*; where they are arraigned and condemned to die; and three of them, *viz.* *George Brooke*, and *William Watſon* and *William Clarke*, two Prieſts are executed. *Nov.* 4. 10. 15. 17.

But the Lord *Grey*, Lord *Cobham*, Sir *Walter Raleigh*, and the reſt being reprieved, are ſent back to priſon. *Dec.* 5. 15.

The Papiſts and Puritans preſent petitions to the King, for a toleration, *&c.* 1604.

A conference is held at *Hampton-Court*, between ſome Biſhops and Presbyterian Miniſters, at which King *James* preſides. *Jan.* 14. 16. 18.

He puts out a proclamation commanding all Jeſuits and Popiſh Prieſts to leave the Kingdom. *Feb.* 22. 29.

John Whitgift Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* dies. *Mar.* 5.

The Puritans are enjoined, by a Proclamation, to conform to the worſhip of the eſtabliſhed Church.

By another proclamation ſundry abuſes, ſuch as monopolies, ſalt-petre men, purveyors, *&c.* are ſuppreſſed.

The 5th day of *Auguſt* is ordered to be kept as a holyday, on account of the King's deliverance from the *Goury*'s conſpiracy.

The King and Queen make their entry into *London*. 15.

King *James* was perſuaded, that the Parliament's and People's privileges were ſo many uſurpations on, or at beſt but conceſſions of, the Kings his predeceſſors.

He orders, both in the writs and the proclamation for calling the Parliament, what Repreſentatives ſhould be choſen.

The Parliament meets: The King makes a ſpeech to them, very artful upon the point of Government, very obſcure as to Religion, and very plain with regard to his deſign of uniting both Kingdoms. 19. *Reg.* 2.

Commiſſioners are appointed, to examine the King's propoſal concerning the Union of *England* and *Scotland*: And he aſſumes the title of King of *Great-Britain*.

An act is paſſed, recognizing, That, immediately upon Queen *Elizabeth*'s deceaſe, the Imperial Crown of the Realm of *England* did, by inherent birth-right, and lawful and undoubted ſucceſſion, deſcend to King *James*. An act alſo was made for the due execution of the ſtatutes againſt Jeſuits, Prieſts, and Recuſants: One to reſtrain the

Ann. C. inordinate tippling in alehouſes: One to reſtrain all perſons from marriage, until their former wives and former huſbands be dead: One againſt conjuration, witchcraft, &c.

June 16. The Commons addreſs the King concerning certain grievances, and inform him of their privileges: This addreſs ſo diſpleaſes the King, that he prorogues the Parliament till

July 7. the 7th of *February*, 1604-5, after they had granted him the ſubſidy of tonnage and poundage for life.

Some of the Clergy countenance the King's principles touching arbitrary power.

Aug. 18. The Conſtable of *Caſtile*, Plenipotentiary for *Spain*, arrives at *London*; and a peace is concluded between *England* and *Spain*.

The King grants a monopoly of the trade with *Spain* and *Italy* to a Company of Merchants.

Aug. 20. *Robert Cecil*, Baron of *Eſſingdon*, is created Viſcount *Cranburne*, being the firſt Viſcount that made uſe of a Coronet.

Sept. 20. *Oſtend* is taken by the *Spaniards*, after a ſiege of three years and three months.

October. *Charles*, Duke of *Albany*, the King's ſecond ſon, arrives at *Windſor*, being three years old.

24. King *James* orders himſelf to be proclaimed King of *Great-Britain*.

Dec. 10. *Richard Bancroft*, Biſhop of *London*, is conſecrated Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*.

1605. Prince *Charles* is created Duke of *York*.

Jan. 6. Pope *Clement* VIII. dies; he is ſucceeded by *Leo* XI.

Feb. 21. who dying, fourteen days after, hath for ſucceſſor *Paul* V.

March 5. A Proclamation is iſſued out, ordering the Jeſuits and Seminary Prieſts immediately to depart out of the Kingdom: And another, to eſtabliſh the Diſcipline and Liturgy

Reg. 3. of the Church of *England*.

28. *Charles Howard*, Earl of *Nottingham*, is ſent Ambaſſador extraordinary to *Spain*; and

April 19. *Edward Seymour*, Earl of *Hertford*, Ambaſſador to *Bruſſels*; both, in order to have the late peace ſworn to.

An Ambaſſador comes to *England* from the Emperor, *Rodolph* II.

Nov. 4. The Gun-powder Plot is diſcovered.

9. The Parliament meets, and the King makes a ſpeech to them about the plot. The ſame day, the Parliament is prorogued to the 21ſt of *January*.

27. *Henry Percy* Earl of *Northumberland* is committed to the *Tower*, on ſuſpicion of being concerned in the plot.

About

About this time coaches came to be in common uſe. *Ann. C.*

Robert D'Evereux Earl of *Eſſex*, marries *Frances Howard*, the Earl of *Suffolk*'s daughter. 1605-6. *Jan* 5.

The Parliament meets. 21.

Eight of the Popiſh Conſpirators are executed; amongſt whom were Sir *Everard Digby*, *Guy Fawkes*, &c. 30, 31.

A report is ſpread in *London*, that King *James* was ſtabbed. *Mar.* 22. *Reg.* 4.

The King of *Spain* ſends an Ambaſſador to congratulate King *James*'s preſervation from the plot, which was looked upon as a great farce. *April* 24. 1606.

William Oldcorn, and *Henry Garnet*, two Jeſuits, are executed on account of the plot. *May* 3.

The 5th of *November* is appointed, by act of Parliament, to be a day of public thankſgiving.

The contrivers of the late plot are attainted by Parliament: And an act is made, for the better diſcovering and repreſſing of Popiſh Recuſants; wherein a new oath is appointed to be tendered to them. Another is alſo made, to prevent and avoid dangers, which may grow by Popiſh Recuſants.

This Parliament granted the King three whole ſubſidies, and ſix fifteenths and tenths. The Clergy granted, at the ſame time, four ſubſidies of four ſhillings in the pound.

The Parliament is prorogued to the 18th of *November*. 27.

Among others, an act is made, for repreſſing the odious and loathſome ſin of drunkenneſs.

Henry, Lord *Mordaunt*, and *Edward*, Lord *Stourton*, are ſeverely fined in the Star-Chamber, for not diſcovering the gun-powder plot. *June* 3.

A Proclamation is iſſued out, for extirpating Jeſuits and Seminary Prieſts out of the Realm. 16.

Henry Percy, Earl of *Northumberland*, is fined 30,000 *l.* for being ſuppoſed to be concerned in the gun-powder plot. 27.

A monument is erected for Queen *Elizabeth*, in *Weſtminſter-Abbey*.

Chriſtiern IV. King of *Denmark*, comes to *London*, to viſit King *James*. *July* 17.

He returns back. *Aug.* 14.

The Prince of *Vaudemont*, third ſon of the Duke of *Lorrain*, comes alſo to pay King *James* a viſit. *Sept.* 23.

Pope *Paul* V. ſends a brief, forbidding the *Engliſh* Catholics to take the oath of allegiance. *Oct.* 21.

The Parliament meets again at *Weſtminſter*, wherein the Union of the two Kingdoms is debated. *Nov.* 18. 1607.

Ann. C. Reg. 5. *Mar.* 31. The King makes a ſpeech to both Houſes, to ſhew the neceſſity of that Union; but, notwithſtanding, it is rejected.

July 1. The Parliament is prorogued to the 16th of *November*.

The Country-people riſe in arms in *Northamptonſhire*, and other Counties; and pull down the incloſures of Commons, newly ſet up.

Septemb. *Hugh O Neal*, Earl of *Tir-Oen*, being permitted to return to *Ireland*, endeavours to raiſe a Rebellion there; but being diſappointed, leaves the Kingdom, and complains of the pretended barbarity uſed towards the Catholics.

Nov. 15. The King publiſhes an apology, to vindicate himſelf of that aſperſion.

King *James* comes to have a diſlike for Parliaments.

The Parliament is further prorogued to *February* 19, 1609-10.

1608. *George Jervis*, a ſeminary Prieſt, is hanged at *Tyburn*.

Reg. 6. *April* 11. *Thomas Sackville*, Earl of *Dorſet*, and Lord-Treaſurer, dies.

19. A proclamation is put out, commanding the oath of allegiance to be tendered to all perſons.

29. *May* 6. *Robert Cecil*, Earl of *Salisbury*, is made Lord-Treaſurer; and about the ſame time *Henry Howard*, Earl of *Northampton*, Lord Privy-Seal.

The ſale of cloths, and of allum, are monopolized.

May 8. Diſputes ariſe between the King and the *Hollanders*, about the fiſhery upon the coaſts of *Great-Britain*.

June 23. *Thomas Garnet*, a Jeſuit, is executed at *Tyburn*.

Oct. 9. *Richard Neile* is conſecrated Biſhop of *Rocheſter*.

Archbiſhop *Bancroft* perſecutes the *Puritans*; great numbers of them go and ſettle in *Virginia*.

His Grace preſents a ſecond time to the King the *Articuli Cleri*; but they are oppoſed by the Judges, and rejected.

King *James* makes two treaties with the *States*; one for the payment of what they owed him; and the other contained an alliance.

1609. *Reg.* 7. *April* 9. Negotiations are ſet on foot for a peace between *Spain* and the *United-Provinces*; at length, a twelve years truce is concluded between them.

Dr. *Cowell*, and Dr. *Blackwood*, advance ſome pernicious maxims, tending to favour the King's arbitrary power.

1610. The City of *London* ſends Colonies into *Ulſter* in *Ireland*, which were planted about *Coleraine* and *Londonderry*.

Feb. 9. The people are diſſatisfied with the Government, and the King countenances the Papiſts upon all occaſions.

The Parliament meets again purſuant to its prorogation: At the meeting of it, the Earl of *Salisbury* makes a ſpeech in the King's name, wherein he complains of the King's wants, and demands money. *Ann. C. Feb.* 9.

But the Houſe of Commons, inſtead of readily granting the deſired ſupplies, loudly complains of Grievances; and particularly of the High-Commiſſion.

The King makes a ſpeech to both Houſes, wherein he endeavours to ſhew he was unjuſtly complained of; but advances therein notions very diſagreeable to the Commons. *Reg.* 8.

Henry IV, King of *France*, is aſſaſſinated by *Ravillac*; ſhortly after, King *James* renews the league between *England* and *France*. *May* 3.

A proclamation is iſſued out, commanding all Jeſuits and Prieſts to depart the Kingdom, before the 5th of *July*. *June* 4.

Henry, the King's eldeſt ſon, is created Prince of *Wales*.

The Parliament is prorogued to the 16th of *October*, after having granted the King a ſubſidy, and one fifteenth and tenth. The Clergy grant at the ſame time a ſubſidy. *July* 23.

An act is made to avoid the double payment of debts. And another, for the due execution of divers laws againſt rogues, vagabonds, *&c.*

King *James* negotiates a marriage between his ſon, the Prince of *Wales*, and the King of *Spain*'s eldeſt daughter.

Richard Bancroft, Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, dies; and is ſucceeded by *George Abbot*, Biſhop of *London*.

The Parliament meets in a temper not at all pleaſing to the King; whereupon, he prorogues it to the 9th of *February* following, and then diſſolves it by proclamation. *Oct.* 16.

Robert Carr, a young *Scotch* Gentleman, about twenty years old, becomes the King's favourite; and, ſhortly after, he is made Knight, Gentleman of the Bed-Chamber, Lord-Treaſurer of *Scotland*, Baron of *Branſpeth*, Viſcount *Rocheſter*, Privy-Counſellor, and Knight of the Garter. 1610-11. *February*. *Reg.* 9.

King *James* inſtitutes the order of Baronets, and creates ninety. *May* 22.

He intermeddles in the diſputes between the *Arminians* and *Gomariſts* in *Holland*.

Frances Howard, Counteſs of *Eſſex*, falls in love with *Carr*. 1612. *Reg.* 10.

Sir *Thomas Overbury* is committed to the *Tower*, for diſſuading him from marrying her. *June*.

Robert Cecil, Earl of *Salisbury*, dies: *Thomas Howard*, Earl of *Suffolk*, is made Lord-Treaſurer in his room. *May* 24.

Robert

Ann. C. *Robert Creiton*, Baron *Sanquir*, is hanged for killing a
June 29. fencing-maſter.

The body of *Mary* Queen of *Scots* is removed from *Peterborough* to *Henry* the VIIth's Chapel at *Weſtminſter*.

July. Sir *Robert Sherly*, an *Engliſhman*, comes Ambaſſador to *London*, from the Court of *Perſia*, where he had lived many years.

Sept. 15. Sir *Thomas Overbury* dies of poiſon in the *Tower*.

Oct. 16. *Frederic* V, Elector *Palatine*, comes to *England*.

Nov. 6. *Henry*, Prince of *Wales*, dies; his funeral is ſolemnized.

Dec. 7. The Elector *Palatine*, and Prince *Maurice*, Stadtholder of
29. *Holland*, are made Knights of the Garter.

1612-13. The Elector *Palatine* marries the Princeſs *Elizabeth*,
Feb. 14. daughter of King *James*, and mother to the late Princeſs
1613. *Sophia*. They both ſet out for *Germany*.

Reg. 11. The Viſcount *Rocheſter* forms the deſign of getting the
April 25. marriage between *Robert D' Evereux*, Earl of *Eſſex*, and *Frances* his Counteſs, annulled; and then to marry her. For that purpoſe, the Counteſs accuſes her husband of impotency, and deſires to be divorced from him; which is accordingly done.

May 4. *Robert Carr*, Viſcount *Rocheſter*, is made Earl of *Somer-*
Dec. 26. *ſet*. He marries *Frances* [*Howard*] Counteſs of *Eſſex*.

The new Earl of *Somerſet* leaves the management of affairs to his Lady's uncle *Henry Howard*, Earl of *Northampton*, who countenances the Papiſts.

1613-14. The Presbyterians are hindred from going to ſettle in *New-England*, for fear thoſe Plantations ſhould become nurſeries of Nonconformiſts.

King *James* inhances the value of gold-coins.

He raiſes money, by granting monopolies, reviving obſolete laws (eſpecially about Knighthood) ſelling titles,
Reg. 12. honours, *&c.*

But ſtill, this not being ſufficient to ſupply the King's neceſſities, the Earl of *Somerſet* adviſes him to call a Parliament, in order to get money.

1614. The Parliament meets; and inſtead of granting the King
April 5. money firſt, as he deſired, the Commons examine the grievances; and reſolve to repreſent them in a petition to his Majeſty.

June 7. At this the King is ſo provoked, that he diſſolves the Parliament; and cauſes ſeveral Members of the Houſe of Commons to be impriſoned for having ſpoken too freely, as he thought.

June 15. King *James* reſolving to call no more Parliaments, exacts money by way of benevolence.

Henry

Henry Howard, Earl of *Northampton*, dies: And *Thomas Howard*, Earl of *Suffolk*, is made Lord-Treaſurer in his room. *Ann. C.*

Chriſtiern, King of *Denmark*, comes and pays a ſecond viſit to the King and Queen. He goes back to *Denmark*. *Ju'y* 21. *Aug.* 1.

The Czar of *Ruſſia* ſends an Ambaſſador to *London*. *October.*

The Queen reſolves to ruin the Earl of *Somerſet*, the King's favourite.

Hugh Middleton undertakes to bring water from *Hertfordſhire*, to the principal parts of the City of *London*, and gets an act of Parliament for that purpoſe.

George Villiers begins to be in the King's favour, and is made his cup-bearer. 1615.

The King begins to be weary of the Earl of *Somerſet*; who tries to procure a pardon from his Majeſty. But the Lord Chancellor refuſes to put the ſeal to it; and, in the mean time, the King is informed of Sir *Thomas Overbury's* being poiſoned by the Earl of *Somerſet's* procurement. *Reg.* 13.

George Villiers is knighted, and made Gentleman of the Bed-Chamber: The King gives him a thouſand pounds. *April* 23, 24.

Arabella Steuart dies in the *Tower*. *Sept.* 27.

The Earl and Counteſs of *Somerſet*, together with their Accomplices, are apprehended and committed to priſon. *October.*

Richard Weſton, one of them, is condemned, and executed. *Oct.* 23. 25.

The reſt, namely, *Anne Turner*, Sir *Gervaſe Elways*, [or *Helwiſſe*] and *James Franklin*, are alſo executed. *Novemb.*

George Villiers engroſſes the King's affection, and rules abſolutely at Court. 1616. *Reg.* 14.

The Earl and Counteſs of *Somerſet* are tried, and condemned to die: The King grants them a reprieve now, their liberty in 1621, and a full pardon in 1624. *May* 24, 25.

King *James* delivers up the Cautionary Towns to the *Dutch*, for 2,726,000 florins, inſtead of 8,000000 of florins that were due to him. 31.

A diſpute ariſes between the King and the Judges about the Prerogative-Royal: The Council decides in favour of the King.

Sir *Edward Coke* is turned out of his place of Chief-Juſtice of the *King's-Bench*, for oppoſing the Court. *June* 30.

Thomas Egerton, Baron of *Elleſmere*, and Lord-Chancellor, being taken ill, delivers up the Great-Seal to the King.

Sir *George Villiers* is created Baron of *Whaddon*, and Viſcount *Villiers*, and the 5th of *January* following Earl of *Buckingham*. *Aug.* 27.

Prince

Ann. C. Prince *Charles* is created Prince of *Wales*: The King
Nov. 4. forms the design of marrying him to *Maria*, Infanta of *Spain*.

Dec. 16. *Marco Antonio de Dominis*, Archbishop of *Spalato*, comes to *England*, and embraces the Protestant Religion.

1616-17. Sir *Francis Bacon* is made Keeper of the Great Seal, and
Mar. 7. afterwards Lord Chancellor.

1617. King *James* resolves to compel the *Scots* to conform to
Reg. 15. the Church of *England*; and, for that purpose, takes a
March. journey to *Scotland*, where he endeavours to introduce Epis-
April. copacy. He makes a speech to the Parliament there, and
May. treats the *Scots* with great haughtiness, because they did not readily comply with his desires.

August. He returns to *England*, and the 15th of *September* following arrives at *Westminster*.

1617-18. The Earl of *Buckingham* is created a Marquis, and his
Jan. 1. relations are loaded with honours and preferments: His
Reg. 16. mother, *Mary Beaumont*, is created Countess of *Buckingham*; and countenances the Papists, who, under her protection,
1618. flock into the Kingdom.

May. Troubles begin to arise in *Bohemia* on account of Religion; the Protestants resolving to take arms, the Emperor *Matthias* raises an army in the *Low-Countries*.

24. The Book of Sports is published, and ordered to be read in Churches.

June. Sir *Walter Raleigh* returns from his expedition into *America* (whither he sailed *March* 28, 1617.) but without any success.

The King and People are jealous of one another, and dissatisfied.

July 12. *Thomas Howard*, Earl of *Suffolk*, and Lord-Treasurer,
19. being accused of several misdemeanors, is turned out, and fined 30,000 *l.* the 30th of *November*, 1619.

King *James* signs five articles, containing Preliminary Conventions for the Prince of *Wales*'s marriage with the Infanta of *Spain*.

Oct. 17. *George Carleton*, Bishop of *Landaff*, Dr. *John Hall*, Dr. *Davenant*, and Mr. *Ward*, go to the Synod of *Dort*.

29. Through the sollicitations of *Don Diego de Sarmiento*, Count of *Gondemar*, the *Spanish* Ambassador, Sir *Walter Raleigh* is beheaded, in pursuance of the sentence passed upon him in the year 1603.

The Court of *Spain* amuses King *James*, for fear he should interpose in the affairs of *Bohemia*.

1618-19. *Henry Percy*, Earl of *Northumberland*, is released out of the

the *Tower*, by means of the Lord *Hay*, his ſon-in-law. *Ann. C.*

Queen *Anne* dies of a dropſy, aged 44, and was buried *Mar.* 2.
the 13th of *May* following, in *Weſtminſter-Abbey*.

Shortly after, the King is ſeized with a great illneſs, which indangers his life.

The Emperor *Matthias* dies: *Ferdinand* of *Auſtria*, his 20.
couſin and adopted ſon, is proclaimed King of *Bohemia*; *Reg.* 17.
and, not long after, he is elected Emperor. 1619.

Frederic V, Elector *Palatine*, and King *James*'s ſon-in- *Aug.* 18.
law, is choſen King of *Bohemia*. *Aug.* 26.

King *James* is very angry with him, for accepting the Crown, and uſes his utmoſt endeavours to perſuade him to quit it.

The Court of *Spain* continues to amuſe King *James* about the marriage.

He deſires to be Umpire between *Ferdinand* and *Frederic*, 1620.
but cannot ſucceed.

Philip III, King of *Spain*, raiſes an army in the *Nether-* *Reg.* 18.
lands to invade the *Palatinate*: King *James* ſuffers himſelf to be amuſed by the *Spaniards*, and ſo hindered from aſſiſting the Elector *Palatine*.

He is even, with much ado, prevailed upon to ſuffer a *June.*
regiment of 2200 men to go over into the *Palatinate*, under the command of Sir *Horatio Vere*, accompanied by *Henry Vere*, Earl of *Oxford*, and *Robert D' Evereux*, Earl of *Eſſex*.

Theſe *Engliſh* troops join *Frederick*'s Allies; but the *Oct.* 1.
campaign being opened very late in the *Palatinate*, nothing of conſequence is done.

King *James* and *Lewis* XIII, King of *France* ſend Ambaſſadors to try to compoſe the troubles in *Bohemia*.

The Elector of *Saxony* conquers *Luſatia*, and keeps it for himſelf, having, by that bait, been gained over to *Ferdinand*'s ſide.

The Duke of *Bavaria* joins alſo *Charles de Bucquoy*, the *Nov.* 8.
Emperor's General; and, by their united forces, *Frederic*'s army is entirely routed at the battle of *Prague*: He flies to *Holland*, leaving behind him all his baggage and money.

King *James* ſollicits, in vain, *Lewis* XIII, in behalf of the Huguenots, who were much perſecuted in *France*.

He takes falſe meaſures to ſave the *Palatinate*; and ſuffers himſelf to be entirely ruled by Count *Gondemar*, the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador.

He demands a benevolence for the defence of the *Palatinate*.

Sir *Henry Montague* is conſtituted Lord-Treaſurer for a *Dec.* 4.
a ſum

Ann. C. a ſum of money; but on the 28th of *September* following, he is deprived of that office, which is conferred on Sir *Lionel Cranfield*, a relation of *Buckingham*'s.

The Marquiſs of *Buckingham* marries *Catharine*, the only daughter and heireſs of *Francis Maner's*, Earl of *Rutland*. (*May* 16.)

The King calls a Parliament, in order to get money, upon pretence of the war in the *Palatinate*.

1620-21. *Jan.* 14. Sir *Robert Naunton*, one of the Secretaries of State, is turned out by *Buckingham*'s means, and Sir *Edward Conway* put in his place.

Jan. 30. The Parliament meets; and the King makes a ſpeech to both Houſes, wherein he gives them ſeveral inſtructions, and demands money of them.

Reg. 19. *Mar.* 11. The Parliament grants the King two ſubſidies, and the Clergy three.

1621. Several petitions are preſented to the King againſt monopolies, and againſt Papiſts.

An act is made concerning monopolies, and diſpenſations with penal laws. Another, for the eaſe of the ſubject, concerning informations upon penal ſtatutes. An act for limitation of actions, and for avoiding of ſuits in law. An act againſt uſury, *&c.*

Mar. 31. *February.* *Philip* III, King of *Spain*, dies, and is ſucceeded by his ſon, *Philip* IV.

March. The eſtate of Sir *Giles Mompeſſon*, a noted monopoliſt,

May. who had fled, is confiſcated: Sir *Francis Michel*, another

May 2. monopoliſt, is fined: And they are both degraded of the order of Knighthood.

Gondemar is inſulted by the populace, in *London*, for which ſome of them are whipped.

Sir *Francis Bacon*, Viſcount St. *Albans*, is turned out of his office of High-Chancellor, fined 40,000 *l.* and deprived of his place in the Houſe of Peers.

Two parties are formed in *England*, one for the King, and another for the People; which gave riſe to the preſent names Whigs and Tories.

June 4. The King ſends and adjourns the Parliament: The Commons think this to be a breach of privilege, and maintain, that the King had not power to adjourn the Parliament: But the Houſe of Lords refuſes to join with the Commons, in a petition to the King upon that occaſion.

The Commons draw up a declaration about the *Palatinate*, before they adjourn.

A Proclamation is iſſued out againſt ſeveral monopolies.

The

The Archduke *Albert* dies. *Ann. C.*

Dr. *John Williams*, Dean of *Weſtminſter*, is made Lord-Keeper of the Great Seal. *July* 13. *July* 15.

The Lord *Digby*, who was ſent Ambaſſador to *Vienna* in *February* this year, obtains an audience of the Emperor, who only amuſes him.

Bucquoy, the Emperor's General, is ſlain by the *Hungarians*. 18.

Archbiſhop *Abbot* kills the Keeper of a Park, as he was hunting.

Count *Mansfeldt* marches into the *Upper Palatinate*, and makes a treaty with Count *Tilly*, the *Bavarian* General. *Sept.* 27.

The *Upper Palatinate* is loſt this campaign, and the *Lower* vigorouſly attacked.

Dr. *John Williams*, High-Chancellor, is conſecrated Biſhop of *Lincoln*. *Nov.* 11.

King *James* thinks of reſtoring the affairs of *Frederic*, his ſon-in-law, by way of negotiation: He is amuſed both by the Emperor and the King of *Spain*.

Dr. *William Laud* is made Biſhop of St. *David's*. 18.

The Parliament meets again: The King lays before them the ſtate of his affairs, and demands money for carrying on the war in the *Palatinate*. *Nov.* 20. They vote a ſubſidy for that purpoſe.

The Commons preſent a remonſtrance to him about the people's grievances, and particularly againſt Popery, with which he is highly offended.

The King ſends an angry letter about it to Sir *Thomas Richardſon*, Speaker of the Houſe of Commons. *Dec.* 3.

The Commons preſent a petition to the King, in which they juſtify their conduct.

He returns an anſwer to them in writing, with which they are not at all ſatisfied. 11.

The Commons make a proteſtation upon the receipt of this anſwer. 21.

The King cauſes the Journal of the Houſe of Commons to be brought into Council, and razes thence with his own hand, the Commons proteſtation. 30.

The Parliament is diſſolved by proclamation; which proclamation is followed by another, forbidding, under ſevere penalties, to talk of ſtate affairs. 1621-2. *Jan.* 6.

Several of the Members, particularly *Henry Vere* Earl of *Oxford*, *Henry Wriothesley* Earl of *Southampton*; Sir *Edward Coke*, *John Selden*, *John Pym*, &c. are impriſoned; but at different times.

The

Ann. C. The King pretended, that the privileges of the Commons having no other foundation, than the conceſſion of the Kings his Predeceſſors, it was in his power to revoke them, if they gave juſt occaſion; The Commons, on the other ſide, pretended, they enjoyed theſe privileges by antient and undoubted right, and that it was not in the King's power to take them away.

The Puritans ſide with the People, and the Arminians declare for the King.

King *James* loſes all his reputation abroad; ſeveral
Reg. 20. Paſquils are made upon him in the *Netherlands*.

He exacts from his ſubjects a benevolence, on pretence of being reſolved to recover the *Palatinate* by arms.

A. de Dominis late Archbiſhop of *Spalato*, returns to *Rome*.

1622. *John* Lord *Digby* (created *September* 15, this year, Earl of *Briſtol*) is ſent Ambaſſador extraordinary to *Spain*, to conclude the treaty of marriage between Prince *Charles*, and the Infanta *Maria*.

At the ſame time, *Gage* is ſent to *Rome* to ſollicit the haſtening of the Pope's diſpenſation; and to forward it, the impriſoned Recuſants are all releaſed.

Sir *Richard Weſton* is ſent to the Archdutcheſs *Iſabella* at *Bruſſels*, to negotiate a truce about the *Palatinate*.

Edward Lord *Vaux* is permitted to raiſe men in *England* to go and ſerve the Infanta againſt the *United-Provinces*.

King *James* is amuſed every where, and deceives himſelf by taking wrong meaſures.

Gage comes back from *Rome* with the Articles or Conditions upon which the Pope was willing to grant a diſpen-
Sept. 9. ſation; the King reſolves to accept of them, with ſome few exceptions, and orders the Earl of *Briſtol* to conclude the marriage.

The King of *Spain*, thinking this to be a favourable opportunity to reſtore the Roman-Catholic religion in *England*, reſolves at laſt to conſent to the marriage.

Septemb. *Heidelberg* and *Manheim* are taken from the Elector *Pa-*
Novemb. *latine*, and *Frankendal* beſieged by the *Imperialiſts*.

The Duke of *Bavaria* is inveſted with the Electoral
1622-3. Dignity, and the *Upper-Palatinate*, which had been wreſt-
January. ed from Prince *Frederic*.

King *James* agrees to whatever the Pope required for the Catholics.

The Earl of *Briſtol* ſettles all the articles with the Court of

of *Spain*; and a time is fixed for the celebration of the marriage. Nothing is now wanted but the Pope's diſpenſation, without any thing being ſtipulated for the *Palatinate*, according to the King's expreſs order. *Ann. C.*

The King of *Spain* grants a fifteen months truce for the *Palatinate*: and *Frankendal* is put, by way of truſt, into the Infanta *Iſabella*'s hands.

The Marquiſs of *Buckingham* perſuades the Prince of *Wales* to go into *Spain*, and the King is ſo weak as to conſent to his going.

Prince *Charles* ſets out *incognito*, with *Buckingham*, and two more only. *Feb.* 7.

He arrives at *Madrid*, where he is well received, but is not ſuffered to ſee the Infanta in private. *Mar.* 7. *Reg.* 21.

Pope *Gregory* XV. writes a letter to Prince *Charles*, wherein he exhorts him to embrace Popery. *April* 20.

The Prince ſends him back an ambiguous anſwer. *May* 20.

The Pope adds new Conditions to the diſpenſation, when he heard of the Prince's being in *Spain*: King *James* conſents to every thing required; and after having ſigned the Articles, ſends them back to *Spain*.

The Court of *Spain* endeavours to allure and perſuade Prince *Charles* to turn Papiſt, but to no purpoſe.

George Abbot Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, adviſes King *James* not to tolerate Popery.

George Villiers is created Duke of *Buckingham*, and his patent is ſent to him in *Spain*. *May* 18.

Pope *Gregory* XV. dies; which renders the diſpenſation null.

Urban VIII. is choſen Pope; he delays to grant the diſpenſation; waiting till Prince *Charles* had embraced Popery. *Aug.* 6.

The Prince reſolves to break off the match, and gets his Father's conſent for it. He deviſes means to leave *Madrid*, without cauſing any ſuſpicion in that Court.

Prince *Charles* ſets out from *Madrid*. *Sept.* 9.

He returns ſafe to *Portſmouth*. *Oct.* 5.

The Court of *Madrid* promiſes the reſtitution of the *Palatinate*. 1623-4. *Jan.* 8.

Notwithſtanding that, King *James* is forced to conſent to the breach of the match between his Son and the Infanta.

He is ruled abſolutely by the Prince and the Duke of *Buckingham*; and they prevail upon him to call a new Parliament, though much againſt his own inclination.

Ann. C. They cauſe *John Digby* Earl of *Briſtol* to be recalled from *Spain*.

February. The *Hollanders* diſpoſſeſs the *Engliſh* of their ſettlement at *Amboyna* in the *Eaſt-Indies*, and cauſe ten of them to be barbarouſly and ignominiouſly executed.

A project is formed of a marriage between Prince *Charles* and Princeſs *Henrietta Maria*, ſiſter of *Lewis* XIII. King of *France*.

Feb. 19. The Parliament meets, and the King makes a ſpeech to them, different from his former ones.

The Duke of *Buckingham* impoſes upon the Parliament, by a falſe narrative of what had been done in *Spain*; whereupon, both Houſes preſent an addreſs to the King, to adviſe him to diſcontinue the treaty begun with *Spain*, as well for the reſtitution of the *Palatinate*, as for the marriage.

Reg. 22.

Upon his promiſing to try to recover the *Palatinate* by force of arms, the Commons offer to grant him three entire ſubſidies, and three fifteenths and tenths, to be diſpoſed of by Commiſſioners of their own chuſing. They granted them accordingly; and the Clergy gave four entire ſubſidies.

They preſent to him a petition againſt Recuſants.

April. King *James* diſpatches a meſſenger to the Court of *Spain*, with his laſt reſolution to break off the treaty.

The Marquiſs of *Inoioſa*, the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador, privately informs the King of the Duke *Buckingham*'s indirect practices:

1624. The Prince of *Wales*, and Duke of *Buckingham*, cauſe *Lionel Cranfield*, Earl of *Middleſex*, and High-Treaſurer, to be diſgraced, though utterly againſt the King's inclination, whom they kept in an ignominious ſubjection.

May 29. The Parliament is prorogued, after having made the following acts, among others; one concerning monopolies, and diſpenſations with penal laws, and the forfeitures thereof; another, for the better repreſſing of drunkenneſs, and inordinate haunting of inns, alehouſes, *&c.*— That, not above 8 *l. per cent.* intereſt ſhall be given for money.— For the relief of creditors againſt bankrupts.— That prophane ſwearers and curſers ſhall pay 1 *s.* for every oath, to the uſe of the poor.— For making the river *Thames* navigable as far as *Oxford*—, *&c.*

The King entertains ſtrong ſuſpicions againſt the Prince and the Duke: The Duke is upon the point of being diſcarded

carded, but the King dares not do it; on the contrary, he is forced to turn the Earl of *Briſtol* out of favour. *Ann. C.*

James Hay, Earl of *Carliſle*, is ſent to *France*, to negotiate a marriage between Prince *Charles* and the Princeſs *Henrietta Maria*.

King *James* puts the laws in execution againſt the Papiſts! The Archbiſhop of *Ambrun* is ſent by *Lewis* XIII. to intercede for them, and hath ſeveral private conferences with King *James*.

The treaty of marriage is ſigned at *Paris*. *Nov.* 10.

Six thouſand *Engliſh* are ſent into *Holland* to ſerve in the army of the *States*, under the command of the Prince of *Orange*, to recover the *Palatinate*.

Count *Mansfeldt* comes to *England* to obtain ſuccours for the *Palatinate*, and 12,000 men are granted him for that purpoſe.

King *James* demands *Frankendal* of the Infanta, who promiſes to give it up: But a garriſon cannot be conveyed thither, becauſe King *James* had not ſtipulated for a paſſage to it through the Emperor's Dominions. *Sept.* 30.

Count *Mansfeldt* embarks with the *Engliſh* army; but a paſſage being denied him through *France*, the army is carried to *Zealand*, where, immediately after landing, they diſperſe; above two thirds of them having periſhed of the plague on ſhip-board. *Decemb.*

Some difficulties ariſe about the Pope's diſpenſation, and a new one is demanded. 1624-25. *January.*

King *James* I. dies, in the 60th year of his age, after having reigned 22 years and three days, in *England*, and been King of *Scotland* 59 years, three months, and twelve days. *February.* *Reg.* 23. 1625. *May* 27.

The Duke of *Buckingham* is ſuſpected of having haſtened his death.

The Character *of King* JAMES I.

Rapin obſerves that King *James* I. had for Hiſtorians, men very much prepoſſeſſed in his favour, or extremely prejudiced againſt him. This naturally followed from the diviſions to which he himſelf had given birth. Some repreſent him as a perfect pattern of a good King: Others blacken his reputation as much as poſſible, by aggravating his failings. The reaſon of this diverſity proceeds from the Hiſtory of his Reign, being penned at a time when the animoſity of the two parties was at the height, whence both Wilſon. Coke. Weldon. Annals. Sanderſon.

have happened to leave in their writings evident marks of their paſſion. Therefore the character of this Prince muſt not be formed, either upon the praiſes of the one, or the invectives of the other, but upon his manner of governing, upon his ſpeeches and actions. This might be done by recollecting the principal circumſtances of his reign. But to ſave the Reader the pains, (continues *Rapin*) I ſhall briefly relate, what is ſaid on both ſides, of which he will be able to judge.

The principal ingredients in King *James*'s panegyrick is the conſtant peace he cauſed his ſubjects to enjoy. This cannot be ſaid to be the effect of chance, ſince it clearly appears to have been his ſole, or, at leaſt, chief aim in his adminiſtration. Nothing, ſay his friends, is more noble or more worthy a great King, than ſuch a deſign. But this deſign loſes all its merit, if the Prince is diſcovered by his conduct to preſerve peace only out of fear, ſupineneſs, exceſſive love of eaſe and repoſe, and King *James*'s whole behaviour ſhows he acted by theſe motives, though he coloured it with the pretence of affection for his people.

Bacon. If ſome take care to extol his knowledge in Philoſophy, Divinity, Hiſtory, polite Learning, others affirm it was but
Coke, p. 176 real pedantry, and that from all his acquired knowledge he learnt only to talk very impertinently on every ſubject, inſtead of framing ſolid and ſure rules for the government of his dominions.

Coke, p. 180 His liberality, which ſome praiſe, is exclaimed againſt by others as prodigality. Theſe pretend he gave without meaſure and diſcretion, without any regard to his own wants, or the merits of thoſe on whom he heaped his favours.

Williams. The ſame contrariety occurs between King *James*'s Hiſtorians with reſpect to his capacity. Some call him for his
Coke, p. 176 wiſdom, the *Solomon* of the age. Others endeavour to diſplay all his errors, particularly in the two ſole important affairs of his reign, wherein he came off very ill, namely, the Prince his ſon's marriage, and his ſon-in-law's election to the Kingdom of *Bohemia*.

Some extol him for maintaining the Prerogative Royal in its full luſtre, in ſpite of the efforts of thoſe who were continually attacking it. Others pretend, he had conceived very wrong ideas of the *Engliſh* Conſtitution, and by aiming to carry the regal authority too high, and inſtilling the ſame principles into his ſucceſſor, he was the firſt cauſe of his family's ruin.

As

As to his manners writers are no leſs divided. Some deſcribe him as a very wiſe and virtuous Prince, whilſt others ſpeak of him as a Prince of a diſſolute life, given to drinking, and ſwearing in common converſation, eſpecially when he was in a paſſion. He is likewiſe reproached for diſſolving the Earl of *Eſſex*'s marriage, pardoning the Earl and Counteſs of *Somerſet*, for the death of Sir *Walter Raleigh*, and for confidently calling God to witneſs in full Parliament, that he never had any thoughts of granting the Papiſts a toleration, which he could affirm but by means of ſome mental reſervation. Echard. Weldon. p. 179, 186. Coke, p. 73. Burnet. p. 17.

In fine, whilſt ſome praiſe his moderation and equity to the Catholicks, others pretend to demonſtrate he was a Papiſt in his heart, and only profeſſed the Proteſtant Religion out of fear of what might follow, in caſe he openly declared for the Catholick. If ſome ſay, in proof of his being a good Proteſtant, that he made conſtant profeſſion of the eſtabliſhed religion, perſevered in it to his death, and when dying, charged the Prince his ſon to protect the Church and Clergy; others anſwer, this is far from a demonſtration. They pretend, the point is not to know what he would appear to be, but what he was in reality, and that his actions belied his outward profeſſion: that the ſame thing had happened to him in *Scotland*, where till the age of thirty-ſix years, he had profeſſed a Religion which he mortally hated, as plainly appeared afterwards. That when he came to *England*, he declared himſelf openly the protector of the Papiſts: took their part on all occaſions: promoted them to honours, dignities, publick offices: that in his Reign the laws againſt them were never duly executed, of which he boaſted to the Catholick Princes in his apology concerning the oath of Allegiance: That in all his ſpeeches, whether in the Parliament or the Star-chamber, his conſtant aim was to move his ſubjects to conſent to a full toleration for the Catholicks: but not finding the Parliament inclined as he wiſhed, he granted, by his ſole authority, a toleration in effect, by hindering the execution of the laws, and diſcharging the condemned Recuſants from fines, and other penalties: that in his conventions with *Spain* and *France*, he poſitively promiſed to cauſe no more laws to be enacted againſt the Papiſts, and thoſe already in force not to be executed: that on all occaſions, he affected to ſhow he found nothing amiſs in the *Roman* Religion, but the Pope's exorbitant power over Princes: that by giving the Pope the titles of Holy Father, Coke. Burnet.

his Holineſs, and by conſenting that his ſon's children ſhould be educated in the *Roman* Religion till the age of thirteen years, he plainly diſcovered he ſhould not be ſorry for their continuance in that Religion: Laſtly, his engagements with the Archbiſhop of *Ambrun* is a freſh and manifeſt proof of his being a true Papiſt. To this the others reply, it is not poſſible to conceive, that if King *James* had been a Papiſt in his heart, he would have ſpent a conſiderable part of his time in writing books againſt the Popiſh Religion, and combating the arguments of *Bellarmine*, and *Du Perron*.

Having related what is ſaid for and againſt King *James*, with reſpect to his Religion, I ſhall take the liberty to offer my opinion or conjecture, which is, that this Prince was truly neither a ſound Proteſtant, nor a good Catholick. One can hardly help owning, that he had never much at heart the intereſt of the Proteſtant Religion, as on the other hand, it cannot be denied, he made publick and conſtant profeſſion of the ſame to his dying day. This induces me to think he had formed a ſcheme of Religion different from that of others, according to which he counted of no moment, what the Proteſtants and Catholicks looked upon as eſſential. The difference between the two Religions, with reſpect to the tenets, was not what affected him moſt. He believed, probably, that every Religion was good, provided it taught obedience to Sovereigns, and preſerved the Hierarchy, which he conſidered as a fundamental Article. It is therefore no wonder, that, agreeably to this ſcheme, he ſhould refuſe to enter into the meaſures of the *Engliſh* Proteſtants, to hinder the growth of the *Romiſh* Religion in *England*, or not ſcruple to continue in the religion he profeſſed, ſince, according to his notions, the two religions were equally good, provided the Pope's deſpotick power was aboliſhed. I ſcarce doubt, that in his conferences with the Archbiſhop of *Ambrun*, he had in view the chimerical project of reconciling the two religions, without troubling himſelf about the tenets which divided them, and which, in one of his ſpeeches he called ſcholaſtick queſtions. But, very probably, if he could have executed this project, according to his ideas, all the advantage would have been on the ſide of the *Romiſh* Religion. This, in my opinion, is the only way to excuſe his condeſcenſion to the Catholicks, and his zeal to protect them. Otherwiſe, I don't ſee how his doubtful behaviour, with regard to Religion, can well be accounted for. This may

alſo

alſo ſerve to diſcover the reaſon of his rejecting with ſo much animoſity, the Religion of the Puritans, whoſe principles he believed directly contrary to the ſcheme he had formed.

But whatever may be ſaid for and againſt King *James*'s perſon, it is certain, *England* never flouriſhed leſs than in his Reign, and the *Engliſh* ſaw themſelves expoſed to the inſults and railleries of other Nations, whilſt the blame was generally caſt on the King. The following Epigram made in *France* in his time, is a clear evidence in what eſteem he was with his neighbours;

Tandis qu' Elizabeth *fut* Roy,
L'Anglois *fut d'*Eſpagne *l'effroy.*
Maintenant, deviſe et caquette,
Regi par la Reine Jaquette.

That is literally in *Engliſh.*

Whilſt Elizabeth *was* King,
The Engliſh *were of* Spain *the Terror.*
But now, governed by Queen Jaquet,
They only talk and prattle.

As to the King's perſon, though his Father and Mother were eſteemed the handſomeſt couple of the age they lived in, yet he was himſelf but homely, nor in any of his features was to be found the leaſt reſemblance of the beautiful *Mary Steuart*, or Lord *Darnley*. Welwood, p. 17.

By his Queen, *Anne*, daughter of *Frederic* II, King of *Denmark* and *Norway*, he had the following ſons, 1. *Henry-Frederick*, born *February* 19, 1593, created Prince of *Wales May* 30, 1610, died *November* 6, 1612. 2. *Robert*, who died young. 3. *Charles*, born *November* 19, 1600, afterwards King of *Great-Britain*. He had alſo theſe daughters, 1. *Elizabeth*, born *Auguſt* 19, 1596, married *February* 14, 1612, to *Frederick* V, Count *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, Duke of *Bavaria*, and elected afterwards King of *Bohemia*: From which the preſent Royal Family is deſcended. 2. *Margaret*. 3. *Mary*. 4. *Sophia*. Which three laſt died young.

An Account of the burial of ANNE, *wife of King* JAMES I; *and of King* JAMES I.

On *Tueſday* the 2d of *March*, about two o'clock in the morning, *Ann. Dom.* 1618, died *Anne* Queen of *England*, *Scotland*, *France*, and *Ireland*, at the King's Palace of *Hamp-*

P 4 *ton*

ton-Court, from whence her corpſe was brought by barge to *Denmark-* (commonly called *Somerſet-*) *Houſe*, and there ſet forth with all the ſtate and magnificence of ſo great a Queen, where it remained till the 13th day of *May*, being *Thurſday*, in the year 1619, and was then conveyed, in a ſolemn proceeding and attendance of very many of the Nobility and Gentry in mourning, to the Abbey-Church of *St. Peter* at *Weſtminſter*, where all the funeral ceremonies were performed, and then interred in the Chapel of King *Henry* the Seventh; but no monument is yet erected to her memory, only on a tablature hanging on the wall on the north ſide thereof, theſe verſes preſent themſelves to your view;

Ad Potentiſſimum Sereniſſimæ ANNÆ maritum, Jacobum, Dei Gratia, Magnæ Britanniæ, Franciæ, & Hiberniæ Regem, Fidei Defenſorem, &c.

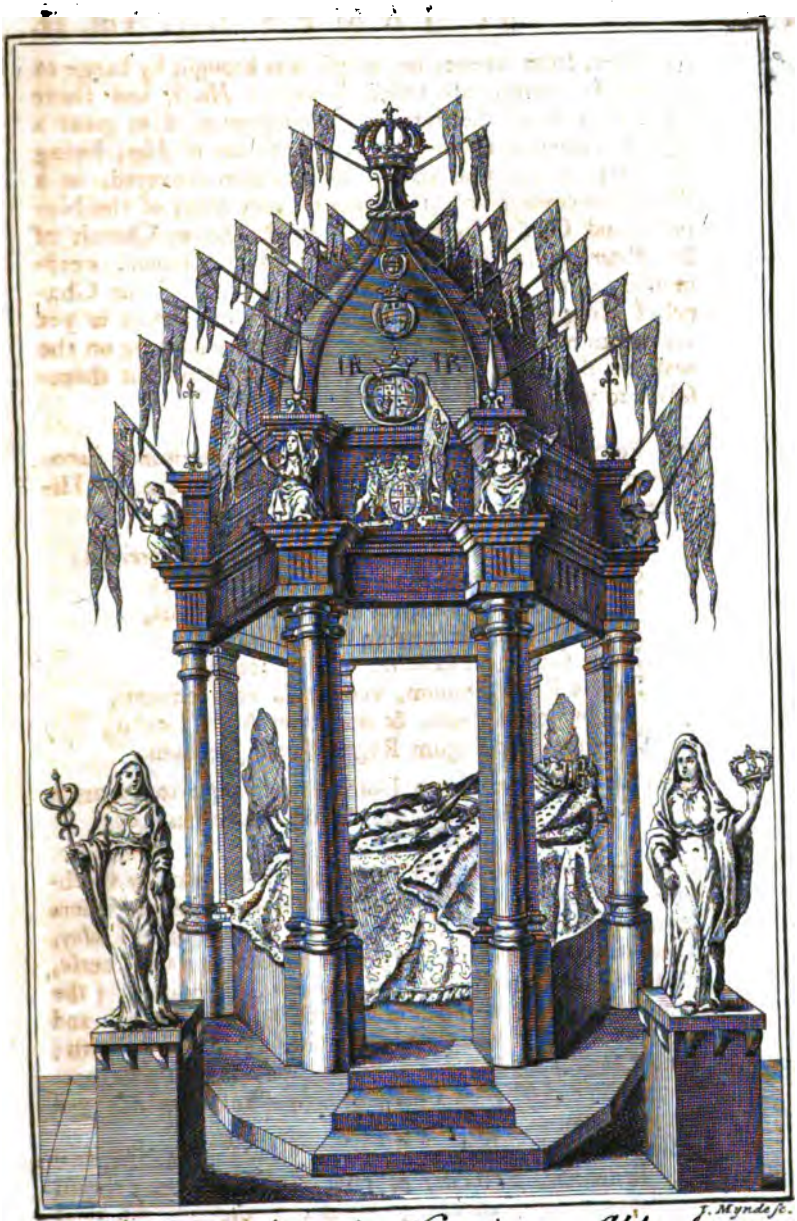
Annus & Anna in ſe redit, his novus, illa perennis:
Cujus Vir Pater & Frater Rex, Regia proles:
In Cœlo æternos Regina eſt Anna per annos,
Floreat illa ſuis in prole æterna Britannis,
Inque ſuo vigeat fæliciter Anna Jacobo.
Inclyte Rex Britonum, veniam da vera loquenti,
Jacobus caret Anna, & non caret Anna Jacobo;
Maxime Rex Regum Regem ſolare Jacobum.

Obiit in Domino, Anno Domini 1618. quarto nonarum Martii, annos nata 44, menſes 4, & dies 18.

King *James*'s body, for the greater ſtate, was, by torch-light, conveyed from *Theobalds* to *Denmark-Houſe*, where having reſted from the 23d of *April* to the 7th day of *May*, it was thence carried to *Weſtminſter-Abbey* to a ſtately herſe, with great ſolemnity, but with greater lamentation, (the figure whereof is repreſented in the following page) and there interred in the Chapel of King *Henry* the Seventh; King *Charles*, his Son and Succeſſor, being chief-mourner. Upon whoſe coffin, on a plate of copper gilt, was engraven this memorial:

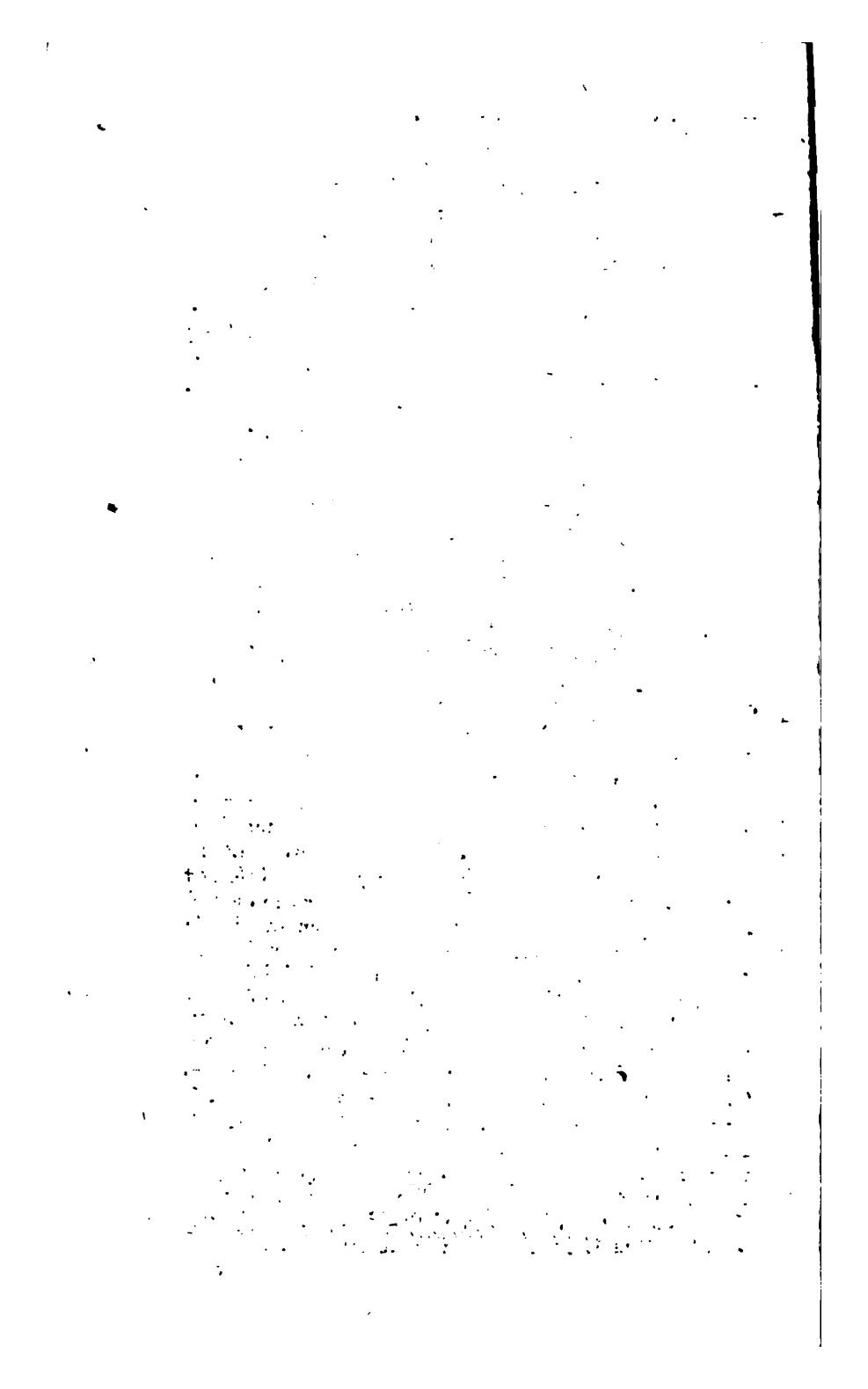
Depoſitum Invictiſſimi Principis Jacobi primi, Magnæ Britanniæ, Franciæ, & Hiberniæ Regis, qui rerum apud Scotos, annos 59. menſes 3. dies 12. Et apud Anglos, annos 22. & dies 3. pacifice, ac fæliciter potitus, tandem in domino obdormivit, 27 die Martii, anno à Chriſto nato, 1625, ætatis vero ſuæ, 60.

An



J. Mynde sc.

The Mausoleum in Westminster Abbey — at the Funeral Obsequies of K. JAMES I.



An account of the MONEY *coined in this Reign.*

By an Indenture of the 2d of *James* I, a pound-weight of Gold, of twenty-two Carats fine, and two Carats allay, was coined into 37 *l.* 4 *s.* by tale; namely, into Unites, going for 20 *s.* Double-Crowns at 10 *s.* *Britain*-Crowns at 5 *s.* Thiſtle-Crowns at 4 *s.* and Half-Crowns at 2 *s.* 6 *d.* a-piece: And a pound-weight of Silver of the ſaid old Standard into 62 *s.* by tale; namely, into Shillings, Six-pences, Two-pences, Pence, Half-pence, Crowns, and Half-Crowns.—— In the 3d year of this Reign, a pound-weight of Gold of the old Standard, of twenty-three Carats, three Grains and a half fine, was coined into 40 *l.* 10 *s.* by tale; namely, into Roſe-Rials at 30 *s.* a-piece, Spur-Rials at 15 *s.* and Angels at 10 *s.* a-piece.—— In the 9th, there was a proclamation for raiſing Gold 2 *s.* in every 20 *s.*—— In the 10th, a pound-weight of the old Standard Gold was coined into 44 *l.* by tale; namely, Roſe-Rials, Spur-Rials, and Angels; and a pound-weight of Gold of twenty-two Carats fine, was coined into 40 *l.* 18 *s.* and 4 *d.* namely, into Unites at 22 *s.* Double-Crowns at 11 *s.* *Britiſh* Crowns at 5 *s.* 6 *d.* Thiſtle-Crowns at 4 *s.* 4 *d.* three-Farthings, or Half *Britiſh* Crowns at 2 *s.* 9 *d.* a-piece.

The Gold Coins of this King (as appears from the Indentures above) are Roſe-Rials, and Spur-Rials, Angels, Unites, Crowns, and Half-Crowns, of ſeveral denominations. The Roſe-Rial has on one ſide the King upon his Throne, in his Robes, with Crown, Scepter, and Ball, at his feet a Portcluſe, IACOBUS. D. G. MAG. BRIT. FRAN. ET. HIBER. REX. Reverſe, the Roſe and Arms, which are quarterly, *France* and *England* in the firſt and fourth Quarters; ſecond, the Lion within the double Treſſure fleury, for *Scotland*; third, the Harp for *Ireland*, A. DNO. FACTVM. EST. ISTVD. ET. EST. MIRAB. IN. OCV. NRIS. The Unite has on one ſide the King's Figure, IACOBVS. DEI. GRA. MAG. BRIT. FRAN. ET. HIBER. REX. Reverſe, FACIAM. EOS. IN. GENTEM. VNAM. Of theſe Unites there are ſeveral ſorts, as may be ſeen in the *Nummi. Britann. Hiſtoria*, p. 84, 85. One in particular has the King's Laureat on one ſide, and XX. behind the Head, a Scarf croſs the ſhoulder, Inſcriptions and Arms as the former Unites, HENRIC. ROSAS. REGNA. IACOBVS. There is a Half, with X. behind the Head, and a Quarter with V. The Crowns have on the reverſe the Arms, and

HEN-

HENRICVS. ROSAS. REGNA. IACOBVS. The Thiſtle-Crown has on one ſide a Roſe crowned, and IA. D. GRA. MAG. BR. FR. ET. HIBER. REX. On the other ſide a Thiſtle-flower crowned, TVEATVR. VNITA. DEVS. (*Fig.* 1.) The Half-Crowns have, on one ſide, the King's Figure, and IA. D. G. ROSA. SINE. SPINA. Reverſe, the Arms, and TVEATVR, *&c.*——— The Silver Coins of this King are Crowns, Half-Crowns, Shillings, Six pences, Two-pences, Pence, and Half-pence. The Crown repreſents the King on Horſe-back in Armour, and crowned, holding a ſword in his hand; the Roſe and Crown upon the Trappings of the Horſe, IACOBVS. D. G. ANG. SCO. FRA. ET. HIB.

1

3

2

4

REX. Reverſe, the Arms, EXVRGAT. DEVS. DISSIPENTVR. INIMICI. Another Crown is inſcribed, IACOBVS. D. G. ANG. SCO. FRA. ET. HIB. REX. Reverſe, the Arms, QVÆ. DEVS. CONIVNXIT. NEMO. SEPARET. The Shillings have XII. (*Fig.* 2.) and the Six-pences VI. behind the King's head crowned, with Legends as on the Crowns. The Pence and Two-pences are inſcribed I. D. G. ROSA. SINE. SPINA. with I. or II. behind the King's head crowned. (*Fig.* 4.) Reverſe, the Arms fill up the whole Area. The *Iriſh* Monies are in all reſpects like the *Engliſh*, only have a Harp crowned on the reverſe. (*Fig.* 3.) The Copper Money of *Ireland* has two Scepters through the Crown.

The

Ann. C.

The NOBILITY, created in this Reign, was as follows:

Robert Cecill, Baron *Cecill of Essendon*. 1603. 13 *May*.

——— Viscount *Cranburne*. See below. 1604. 20 *Aug.*

Robert Sidney, Baron of *Penshurst*.
William Knollys, or *Knowles*, Baron of *Grey's*.

——— Viscount *Wallingford*. 1616. 7 *Nov.*

Edward Wotton, Baron of *Marley*.
Charles Blount, Baron *Montjoy*——Earl of *Devonshire*. 21 *July*.
Thomas Baron *Howard*, —— Earl of *Suffolk*.
Henry Wriothesly, Earl of *Southampton*, restored.
Thomas Egerton, Baron of *Ellesmere*.

——— Viscount *Brackley*, and Earl of *Bridgewater*. 1617. 28 *May*.

William Russel, Baron of *Thornhaugh*.
Henry Grey, Baron of *Groby*.
John Petre, Baron of *Writtle*.
John Harrington, Baron of *Exton*.
Henry Danvers, Baron of *Dantsey*.
Thomas Gerrard, Baron of *Gerrard-Bromley*.
Robert Spencer, Baron of *Worm-Leighton*.

Thomas Sackville, Baron *Buckhurst*——Earl of *Dorset*. 1603-4. 13 *Mar.*

Henry Howard, Baron of *Marnhill*, and Earl of *Northampton*.
Lodowick Steuart, Earl of *Newcastle*, and Duke of *Richmond*. 17 *May*.
Robert Devereux, Earl of *Essex*; and,
William Paget, Baron *Paget*, restored by Act of Parliament.
George Hume, Baron *Hume*, of *Berwick*. 7 *July*.
Robert Cecill, Baron of *Essendon*, and Viscount *Cranburne*, 1605.
——Earl of *Salisbury*. In the morning. 4 *May*.
Thomas Cecill, Baron *Burleigh* —— Earl of *Exeter*. In the afternoon, of the same day: Though the elder brother.
Philip Herbert, Baron *Herbert* of *Shurland*.
——— Earl of *Montgomery*. 4 *June*.
John Stanhope, Baron of *Harrington*.
George Carew, Baron of *Clopton*.
Thomas Arundel, Baron *Arundel* of *Wardour*.

Ann. C. *William Cavendiſh*, Baron *Cavendiſh*, of *Hardwick*.
1618. ——— Earl of *Devon*.
7 *Aug.*
Robert Sidney, Viſcount *Liſle*.
1618. ——— Earl of *Leiceſter*.
2 *Aug.*
4 *July.* *Thomas Knyvet*, Baron *Knyvet* of *Eſcrick*, by ſum.
5 *Nov.* *William Parker*, Baron *Monteagle*, by ſum.
1608. *Henry Howard*, Marquiſs of *Northampton*.
19 *April.*
1611. *Robert Carr*, Viſcount *Rocheſter*.
25 *Mar.*
1614. ——— Baron *Carr*, and Earl of *Somerſet*.
3 *Nov.*
1613. *Lodowick Steuart*, Baron *Settrington*, and Earl of *Rich-*
6 *Oct.* *mond*.
1615. *James Hay*, Baron *Hay* of *Sawley*.
29 *June.*
1617. ——— Viſcount *Doncaſter*.
5 *July.*
1622. ——— Earl of *Carliſle*.
13 *Sept.*
30 *June.* *Robert*, Baron *Dormer*, of *Wing*.
27 *Aug.* *George Villiers*, Baron *Whaddon*.
1616. ——— Viſcount *Villiers*, and Earl of *Buckingham*.
5 *Jan.*
1617. ——— Marquiſs of *Buckingham*.
1 *Jan.*
1623. ——— Earl of *Coventry*, and Duke of *Buckingham*.
18 *May.*
1616. *John Holles*, Baron *Houghton*.
9 *July.*
1624. ——— Earl of *Clare*.
2 *Nov.*
John Roper, Baron *Teinham*.
21 *July.* *Francis Manners*, Baron *Roſs*; and Earl of *Rutland*.
Septemb. *Mervin*, Baron *Audley*, Earl of *Caſtlehaven*.
7 *Nov.* *Philip Stanhope*, Baron of *Shelford*.
1616-17. *Edward Noel*, Baron of *Ridlington*.
23 *Mar.*
1618. *Mary Beaumont*, mother to *George* Marquiſs of *Bucking-*
July 16. *ham*, Counteſs of *Bucks*.
2 *Aug.* *William*, Baron *Compton*, ——— Earl of *Northampton*.
6 *Aug.* *Robert Rich*, Earl of *Warwick*.

John

	Ann. C.
John Digby, Baron *Digby* of *Sherburne*.	25 *Nov.*
——— Earl of *Briſtol*.	1622. 5 *Sept.*
Eſme Steuart, Baron *Leighton*, and Earl of *March*.	1619. 7 *June.*
James Hamilton (Marquiſs of *Hamilton*, in *Scotland*) Baron *Enerdale*, and Earl of *Cambridge*.	16 *June.*
John Villiers, Baron *Villiers* of *Stoke*, and Viſcount *Purbeck*.	19 *June.*
Francis Bacon, Baron *Verulam*.	11 *July.*
——— Viſcount *St. Albans*.	1620. 18 *Jan.*
William Cavendiſh, Baron *Ogle*, and Viſcount *Mansfield*.	1620. 3 *Nov.*
Henry Montague, Baron *Kimbolton*, and Viſcount *Mandeville*.	19 *Dec.*
William Fielding, Baron and Viſcount *Fielding*.	1620-21. 30 *Dec.*
——— Earl of *Denbigh*.	1622. 14 *Dec.*
Fulk Greville, Baron *Brook*, of *Beauchamp's-Court*.	9 *Jan.*
John Ramſey, Baron *Ramſey* of *Kingſton*, and Earl of *Holderneſs*.	22 *Jan.*
Francis Norris, Viſcount *Tame*, and Earl of *Berkſhire*.	23 *Jan.*
Edward Montague, Baron of *Boughton*.	29 *June.*
Thomas, Baron *Darcy* of *Chich*, Viſcount *Colcheſter*.	5 *July.*
Henry Carey, Baron *Hunſdon*, Viſcount *Rochford*.	6 *July.*
Lionel Cranfield, Baron *Cranfield*.	9 *July.*
——— Earl of *Middleſex*.	1622. 16 *Sept.*
Thomas Howard, Baron of *Charleton*, and Viſcount *Andover*.	1621-22. 23 *Jan.*
Robert Carey, Baron of *Leppington*, and Earl of *Monmouth*.	6 *Febr.*
Henry Rich, Baron of *Kenſington*.	8 *Mar.*
——— Earl of *Holland*.	1624. 24 *Sept.*
Chriſtopher Villiers, Baron *Daventre*, and Earl of *Angleſea*.	1623. 18 *Apr.*
Elizabeth [*Heneage*] relict of Sir *Moyle Finch*, Viſcounteſs *Maidſtone*.	8 *July.*
William, Baron *Grey*, of *Werk*.	1623-24. 11 *Febr.*

Richard

Ann. C.

3 April. *Richard Burgh*, or *Burk* (Earl of *Clanrickard* in *Ireland*) Baron *Somerhill*.

5 April. ——— Viſcount *Tunbridge*.

7 July. *William Fines*, Viſcount *Say* and *Sale*.

22 Oct. *Francis Leke*, Baron *Deincourt*.

28 Dec. *Oliver*, Baron *St. John* of *Bletſhoe*, Earl of *Bolingbroke*.

29 Dec. *Francis Fane*, Baron *Burgherſh*, and Earl of *Weſtmorland*.

31 Dec. *James Ley*, Baron of *Ley*.

1624-25. *Richard*, Baron *Roberts*, of *Truro*.

26 Jan. *Edward*, Baron *Conway*, of *Ragley*.

24 Mar.

Knights of the Garter elected in the Reign of King JAMES I.

Henry Prince of *Wales*.

Chriſtian IV. King of *Denmark*.

Ludowick Stewart, Duke of *Lenox*, and afterwards Duke of *Richmond*.

Henry Wriotheſley, Earl of *Southampton*.

John Erskine, Earl of *Marr*.

William Herbert, Earl of *Pembroke*.

Ulrick, Duke of *Holſtein*.

Henry Howard, Earl of *Northampton*.

Robert Cecil, Earl of *Salisbury*.

Thomas Howard, Viſcount *Bindon*.

George Hume, Earl of *Dunbar*.

Philip Herbert, Earl of *Montgomery*, afterwards Earl of *Pembroke*.

Charles Steuart, Duke of *York*, Prince of *Wales*, and afterwards King of *England*, the firſt of that name.

Thomas Howard, Earl of *Arundel*, afterwards Earl of *Norfolk*.

Robert Carr, Viſcount *Rochester*, afterwards Earl of *Somerſet*.

Frederic, Count *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, Prince Elector of the *Empire*, and afterwards King of *Bohemia*.

Maurice de Naſſau, Prince of *Orange*.

Thomas Erskine, Viſcount *Fenton*, afterwards Earl of *Kelly*.

William Knolles, Lord *Knolles*, afterwards Viſcount *Wallingford*, and Earl of *Banbury*.

Francis Manners, Earl of *Rutland*.

Sir *George Villiers*, Knight, afterwards Baron of *Whaddon*

don, then Earl and Marquiſs of *Buckingham*, and laſtly, Earl of *Coventry*, and Duke of *Buckingham*.

Robert Sidney, Viſcount *Liſle*, afterwards Earl of *Leiceſter*.

James Hamilton, Marquiſs *Hamilton*, and Earl of *Cambridge*.

Eſme Stewart, Duke of *Lennox*, and Earl of *March*.

Chriſtian, Duke of *Brunſwick*.

William Cecil, Earl of *Salisbury*.

James Hay, Earl of *Carliſle*.

Edward Sackville, Earl of *Dorſet*.

Henry Rich, Earl of *Holland*.

Thomas Howard, Viſcount *Andover*, afterwards Earl of *Berkſhire*.

A ſhort Account of the firſt Inſtitution of BARONETS.

The loweſt degree of honour, which is hereditary, is that of Baronets, and was firſt inſtituted by King James I. Anno 1611. given by patent to a man and the heirs male of his own body lawfully begotten; for which each one is obliged to pay into the Exchequer as much as will, for three years, at 8d. per diem, pay 30 foot ſoldiers to ſerve in the Province of Ulſter in Ireland; which ſum amounts to 1095 l. which is now always remitted.

Baronets have precedence before all Knights, except Knights of the Garter, Knights who are Privy-Counſellors, or Knights Bannerets, made under the King's banner or ſtandard diſplayed in an army royal in open war, and the King perſonally preſent.

They are ſtiled Baronets in all Writs, Commiſſions, &c. with the addition of Sir, by a peculiar clauſe in their Patent of creation, and their wives are Ladies.

Baronets and their eldeſt ſons, being of full age, may claim Knighthood.

Baronets have the privilege to bear in a canton of their coat of arms, or in a whole eſcutcheon, the arms of Ulſter, viz. in a field argent, a hand Gules. Alſo in the King's armies, to have a place in the groſs near the King's ſtandard, with ſome particulars for their funerals.

The whole number of Baronets in England were not to exceed 200 at one and the ſame time; but now their number is without limitation: Their qualifications are, That they be of good reputation, and deſcended of a grandfather, at leaſt by the father's ſide, that bore arms, and have alſo a yearly revenue of 1000 l. *per annum de clari.*

They

They take place according to the priority of the date of their patents.

No honour is ever to be created between Baronets and Barons.

The form of the Patent is as follows:

JAMES, by the Grace of God, &c. greeting: Whereas, amongſt the other cares of Sovereignty, with which our mind is conſtantly exerciſed, that, neither is the leaſt, nor of leaſt moment, the Plantation of our Kingdom of Ireland, and chiefly of Ulſter, a large and famous province of the ſame Kingdom, which, now under our government, and by our arms happily ſubdued, we endeavour ſo to eſtabliſh, that ſo great a province ſhould more and more flouriſh, not only in the true practice of religion, civil humanity, the probity of manners, but alſo in affluence of riches, and abundance of all things which contribute either to the ornament or happineſs of the Commonweal: A work, indeed, which none of our Progenitors could perform and accompliſh, though they had often, with much expence of blood and treaſure, attempted it: In which work, our Royal Care, not only ought to contrive that the ſaid Plantation ſhould be ſtrenuouſly promoted, towns founded, houſes and caſtles built, fields tilled, and other things of that kind done; but alſo to regard, in the firſt place, that the whole management of ſuch civil affairs ſhould by an armed power, to wit, by garriſons and troops, be protected and communicated, to the end, that neither hoſtile force, nor inteſtine factions, ſhould hinder or diſturb them: And whereas it is intimated unto us, on the part of certain of our faithful ſubjects, that they are moſt ready, as well with their perſons as their fortunes, to promote this our Royal undertaking; we, moved with a deſire of accompliſhing ſo holy and wholſome a work, and fondly regarding ſuch generous inclinations and minds, ſo addicted to our ſervice and the publick good, have reſolved with ourſelves, to be wanting in nothing which may reward the aforeſaid good-will of our ſubjects, or excite a ſpirit and alacrity in others, to perform their parts, and furniſh their expences upon this occaſion; therefore weighing and conſidering with ourſelves, that virtue and induſtry are cheriſhed and ſupported by nothing more than by honour; and that all the ſplendor and amplitude of honour and dignity take their riſe from a King, as from a fountain, to whoſe high prerogative it properly belongs, to erect and inſtitute new titles of honour

and dignity, as he from whom the old ones flowed; we have thought proper (the ſervice of the Commonwealth, and the exigence of the times ſo requiring) to reward new merits with new enſigns of dignity: And therefore, of our certain knowledge and mere motion, we have ordained, erected, conſtituted, and created a certain ſtate, degree, dignity, name and title of Baronet, within this our Kingdom of England, for ever to endure. Now know ye, that we of our ſpecial grace, and of our certain knowledge and mere motion have raiſed, appointed, and created, and by theſe preſents, for us, our heirs, and ſucceſſors, do raiſe, appoint, and create our beloved—— of — in the County of ——, a man in family, patrimony, riches, and probity of manners, remarkably eminent (who with a generous and liberal mind, gave and yielded to us a relief and ſupply, ample enough to maintain and ſupport thirty men in our foot forces in our ſaid Kingdom of Ireland for three entire years, for the defence of our ſaid Kingdom; and eſpecially for the ſecurity of the ſaid Plantation of Ulſter) to and into the dignity, ſtate, and degree of Baronet, and him ——a Baronet, for us, our heirs and ſucceſſors, do appoint, conſtitute, and create, by theſe preſents, to have to him, and the heirs of his body lawfully begotten, for ever. We will alſo, and by theſe preſents, of our ſpecial grace, and of our certain knowledge, and mere motion, for us, our heirs and ſucceſſors, do grant to the aforeſaid ——and the heirs male of his body lawfully begotten, that he the ſaid ——and the heirs male aforeſaid, may have, enjoy, hold, and take place and precedence, by virtue of the dignity of Baronet aforeſaid; and by force of theſe preſents, as well in all Commiſſions, Writs, Letters Patents, Writings, Appellations, Nominations, and Directions, as in all Seſſions, Conventions, Companies, and Places whatſoever, before all Knights, as well of the Bath as Knights Batchelors; and alſo before all Knights Bannerets now created, or hereafter to be created, (thoſe Knights Bannerets only excepted, who ſhall happen to be created under the Royal banner diſplayed, in a Royal army in open war, and the King himſelf perſonally preſent, and no otherwiſe:) And that the wives of the ſaid —— and of the heirs males aforeſaid, by virtue of the ſaid dignity of their huſbands aforeſaid, may have, hold, enjoy, and take place and precedence before the wives of all others whatſoever, before whom the huſbands of ſuch wives, by force of theſe preſents, ought to have place and precedence: And

that the firſt begotten ſon, and all the other ſons, and their wives and the daughters of the ſaid —— and of his heirs males aforeſaid reſpectively, may have, and take place and precedence before the firſt begotten ſons, and other ſons, and their wives, and the daughters of all whatſoever, reſpectively, before whom the fathers of ſuch firſt begotten ſons, and other ſons, and their wives, and daughters, by force of theſe preſents, ought to have place and precedence. We will alſo, and by theſe preſents, for us, our heirs, and ſucceſſors, of our ſpecial grace, and of our certain knowledge and mere motion, do grant that the ſaid —— may be named, called, mentioned, may plead, and be impleaded, by the name of —— Baronet; and that the ſtile and addition of Baronet ſhall be put at the end of the name of the ſaid —— and of his heirs male aforeſaid, in all our Letters Patents, Commiſſions, and Writs, and all other Charters, Deeds and Letters, as a true legal, and neceſſary addition of dignity. We will alſo, and by theſe preſents, for us, our heirs, and ſucceſſors, do ordain, That before the name of the ſaid —— and his heirs male, aforeſaid, in *Engliſh* ſpeech, and all *Engliſh* writings, ſhall be placed this addition, Sir: and likewiſe that the wives of the ſaid —— and his heirs male, aforeſaid, ſhall have, uſe, and enjoy, the appellation of Lady, Madam, and Dame, reſpectively, according to the cuſtom of ſpeaking. To have, hold, uſe, and enjoy the ſaid ſtate, degree, dignity, ſtile, title, name, place, and precedence, with all and ſingular the privileges, and the reſt of the premiſes, to the aforeſaid —— and the heirs male of his body iſſuing, for ever. Willing, and by theſe preſents granting, for us, our heirs and ſucceſſors, that the ſaid —— and his heirs male aforeſaid; the name, ſtate, degree, ſtile, dignity, title, place, and preſidence aforeſaid; with all and ſingular the privileges, and other the premiſes, ſucceſſively may bear, and have, and every of them may bear and have: and that the ſaid —— and his heirs male aforeſaid, ſucceſſively, may in all things be held as Baronets, and as Baronets be treated, and reputed. And futher, of our more ample ſpecial grace, and of our certain knowledge, and mere motion, we have granted, and by theſe preſents, for us, our heirs, and ſucceſſors, do grant unto the ſaid —— and his heirs male aforeſaid, that the number of Baronets of this Kingdom of *England*, ſhall never hereafter exceed in the whole, at any one time, the number of two hundred Baronets; and that the ſaid Baronets and their heirs male aforeſaid, reſpectively,

ly, from time to time, for ever, ſhall have, hold, and enjoy their places and precedencies, among themſelves; to wit, every of them, according to the priority and ſeniority of his creation of Baronet, aforeſaid. And moreover, of our more abundant ſpecial grace, and of our certain knowledge, and mere motion, we have granted, and by theſe preſents, for us, our heirs, and ſucceſſors, do grant to the aforeſaid——and his heirs male aforeſaid, that neither we, nor our heirs, or ſucceſſors, ſhall for the future, erect, ordain, conſtitute, or create, within this our Kingdom of *England*, any other degree, order, name, title, dignity, or ſtate, under or beneath the degree, dignity, or ſtate of Barons of this our Kingdom of *England*, which ſhall be, or which can be ſuperior or equal to the degree and dignity of Baronets aforeſaid; but as well the ſaid——and his heirs male aforeſaid, as the wives, ſons, ſons wives, and daughters of the ſaid——and his heirs male aforeſaid, for ever hereafter, freely and quietly may have, hold, and enjoy their dignities, places, and precedencies aforeſaid, before all who ſhall be of ſuch degrees, ſtates, dignities, or order, for the future to be created, as aforeſaid, reſpectively according to the true intention of theſe preſents, without the impeachment of us, our heirs, or ſucceſſors, or of any other whatſoever. And further, by theſe preſents, we declare and ſignify our will and pleaſure to be now, and hereafter, and ſo we have reſolved and determined with ourſelf, that if after we have compleated and perfected the aforeſaid number of two hundred Baronets of this our Kingdom of *England*, it ſhall happen that ſome, or any of the ſame Baronets ſhall depart this life, without any heir male of the body, or bodies of ſuch Baronet or Baronets begotten; that then we ſhall not create or appoint any other perſon or perſons, Baronet, or Baronets, of our Kingdom of *England*; but that the ſaid number of two hundred Baronets ſhall therefore, from time to time, decreaſe and be reduced to a leſſer number. Laſtly, We will, and by theſe preſents, for us our heirs, and ſucceſſors, of our ſpecial grace, and of our certain Knowledge and mere motion do grant unto the aforeſaid——and heirs male aforeſaid, that theſe our letters patent ſhall in all things, and by all things, be firm, valid, good, ſufficient, and effectual in law, as well againſt us, our heirs and ſucceſſors, as againſt all others whatſoever, according to the true intention of the ſame, as well in all our Courts, as in any other place whatſoever, notwithſtanding any law, cuſtom, preſcription, uſe, or-

dination, or conſtitution whatſoever, heretofore ſet forth, had, uſed, ordained, or provided, or hereafter to be ſet forth, had, uſed, ordained, or provided; and notwithſtanding any other thing, cauſe, or matter whatſoever. We will alſo, &c. without fine in the Hanaper Office, ſo that expreſs mention, &c. in teſtimony of which, &c. Witneſs, &c.

Baronets created by King JAMES I.

1 Sir Nicholas Bacon, Kt. of Redgrave in Suffolk, Mag 22, 1611.
2 Sir Richard Molineux of Sefton in Lancaſhire, Kt. ſince Viſcount Molineux. *Iriſh.*
3 Sir Thomas Manſel of Margam, Lord Manſel in Glamorganſhire, Kt.
4 George Shirley of Stounton in Leiceſter, Eſq; ſince Earl Ferrers. *Engliſh.*
5 Sir John Stradling of St. Donat's in Glamorganſhire, Kt.
6 Sir Francis Leake of Sutton in Derby, Kt. ſince Earl of Scareſdale. *E.*
7 Thomas Pelham of Laughton in Suſſex, Eſq; now Duke of Newcaſtle.
8 Sir Richard Houghton of Houghton Tower in Lancaſhire, Kt.
9 Sir Henry Hobart of Intwood in Norfolk, Kt. Earl of Buckinghamſhire.
10 Sir George Booth of Dunham-Maſſy in Cheſhire, Kt. ſince Earl of Warrington. *E.*
11 Sir John Peyton of Iſelham in Cambridgeſhire, Kt.
12 Lionel Talmaſh of Helmingham in Suffolk, Eſq; Earl of Dyſert. *Scots.*
13 Sir Gervaſe Clifton of Clifton in Nottinghamſhire, Kt. of the Bath.
14 Sir Thomas Gerrard of Bryn in Lancaſhire, Kt.
15 Sir Walter Aſton of Tixhall in Staffordſhire, Kt. of the Bath, ſince a Scots Baron, Lord Aſton.
16 Philip Knevet of Buckenham in Norfolk, Eſq; ex.
17 Sir John St. John of Lidiard Tregoz in Wiltſhire, Kt.
18 John Shelly of Michel-grove in Suſſex, Eſq;
19 Sir John Savage of Rock-Savage in Cheſhire, Kt. ſince Earl Rivers, June 29. *E.*
20 Sir Francis Barrington of Barrington-Hall in Eſſex, Kt.
21 Henry Berkley of Wimundam in Leiceſterſhire, Eſq; ex.
22 William Wentworth of Wentworth-Woodhouſe in Yorkſhire, Eſq; ſince an Engliſh Baron, Lord Raby.

23 Sir

23 Sir Richard Muſgrave of Hartley-Caſtle in Weſtmoreland, Kt.
24 Edward Seymour of Bury Pomery in Devonſhire, Eſq;
25 Sir Moyl Finch of Eaſtwell in Kent, Kt. ſince Earl of Winchelſea. *E.*
26 Sir Anthony Cope of Hanwell in Oxfordſhire, Kt.
27 Sir Thomas Monſon of Carleton in Lincolnſhire, Kt.
28 Charles Vavaſor of Killingthorp in Lincolnſhire, Eſq;
29 George Greſely of Drakelow, Eſq; in Derbyſhire.
30 Paul Tracy of Stanway in Glouceſterſhire, Eſq; ex.
31 Sir John Wentworth of Goſfield in Eſſex, Kt. ex.
32 Sir Henry Bellaſſiſe of Newborough in Yorkſhire, Kt. ſince Viſcount Falconberg. *E.*
33 William Conſtable of Flamborough in Yorkſhire, Eſq; ex.
34 Sir Thomas Leigh of Stonely in Warwickſhire, Kt. ſince an Engliſh Baron, Lord Leigh.
35 Sir Edward Noel of Brook in Rutland, Kt. ſince Earl of Gainſborough. *E.*
36 Sir Robert Cotton of Conington in Huntingdonſhire, Kt.
37 Robert Cholmondeley of Cholmondeley in Cheſhire, Eſq; ſince Earl of Leinſter. ex.
38 John Molineux of Taverſal in Nottinghamſhire, Eſq;
39 Sir Francis Wortley of Wortley in Yorkſhire, Kt. ex.
40 Sir George Savile, Senior, of Thornhill in Yorkſhire, Kt.
41 William Kniveton of Mercaſton in Derbyſhire, Eſq; ex.
42 Sir Philip Woodhouſe of Wilbrahal in Norfolk, Kt.
43 Sir William Pope of Wilcot in Oxfordſhire, Kt. ſince Earl of Downe. *I.* ex.
44 Sir James Harrington of Ridlington in Rutlandſhire, Kt. ex.
45 Sir Henry Savile of Methley in Yorkſhire, Kt. ex.
46 Henry Willoughby of Riſley in Debyſhire, Eſq; ex.
47 Lewis Treſham of Ruſhton in Northamptonſhire, Eſq; ex.
48 Thomas Brudenel of Dean in Northamptonſhire, Eſq; ſince Earl of Cardigan. *E.*
49 Sir George St. Paul of Snarſeford in Lincolnſhire, Kt. ex.
50 Sir Philip Tirhwit of Stainfield in Lincolnſhire, Kt.
51 Sir Roger Dalliſon of Loughton in Lincolnſhire, Kt. ex.
52 Sir Edward Carr of Sleford in Lincolnſhire, Kt. ex.
53 Sir Edward Huſſee of Hennington in Lincolnſhire, Kt. ex.

54 L'Eſtrange Mordant of Maſſingham, Eſq; in Norfolk.
55 Thomas Bendiſh of Steeple-Bumſted in Eſſex, Eſq; ex.
56 Sir John Wynne of Guidder in Caernarvanſhire, Kt.
57 Sir William Throckmorton of Tortworth in Glouceſterſhire, Kt. ex.
58 Sir Richard Worſley of Apuldercomb in Hampſhire, Kt.
59 Richard Fleetwood of Caldwich in Staffordſhire, Eſq;
60 Thomas Spencer of Yarnton, Eſq; in Oxfordſhire.
61 Sir John Tufton of Hothfield in Kent, Kt. now Earl of Thanet. *E.*
62 Sir Samuel Peyton of Knowlton in Kent, Kt. ex.
63 Sir Charles Morriſon of Caſhio-Bury in Hertfordſhire, Kt. ex.
64 Sir Henry Baker of Siffinghurſt in Kent, Kt. ex.
65 Roger Appleton of South-hempſted in Eſſex, Eſq; ex.
66 Sir William Sidley of Ailesford in Kent, Kt. ex.
67 Sir William Twiſden of Eaſt-Peckham in Kent, Kt.
68 Sir Edward Hales of Wood-church in Kent, Kt.
69 William Monins of Walderſher in Kent, Eſq; ex.
70 Thomas Mildmay of Mulſho in Eſſex, Eſq; ex.
71 Sir William Maynard of Eaſtanes-Parva in Eſſex, Kt. and Baron Maynard of Wickloe in Ireland.
72 Henry Lee of Quarrendon in Buckinghamſhire, Eſq; ſince Earl of Litchfield. *E.*
73 Sir Robert Napier, alias Sandy of Lewton-Hoo in Bedfordſhire, Kt. Sept. 24.
74 Paul Bayning of Bentley-Parva in Eſſex, Eſq; ſince Viſcount Bayning, *E.* ex.
75 Sir Thomas Temple of Stow in Buckinghamſhire, Kt. ſince an Engliſh Baron, Lord Cobham.
76 Thomas Penyſton of Leigh in Eſſex, Eſq; ex.
77 Sir John Portman of Orchard-Portman in Somerſetſhire, Kt. Nov. 25, 1612. ex.
78 Sir Nicholas Sanderſon of Saxby, Kt. Viſcount Caſtleton, and ſince Baron Sanderſon of Saxby. ex.
79 Sir Miles Sandys of Wilberton in Cambridgeſhire, Kt. ex.
80 William Goſtwick of Willington in Bedfordſhire, Eſq;
81 Thomas Puckering of Weſton, Eſq; in Hertfordſhire. ex.
82 Sir William Wray of Glentworth in Lincolnſhire, Kt.
83 Sir William Ailoffe of Braxted-Magna in Eſſex, Kt.
84 Sir Marmaduke Wivil of Conſtable-Burton in Yorkſhire, Kt.
85 John Perſhal of Horſley in Staffordſhire, Eſq; ex.

86 Francis

86 Francis Englefield of Wotton-Baſſet in Wiltſhire, Eſq;
87 Sir Thomas Ridgway of Torr in Devonſhire, Kt. ſince Earl of London-Derry. *I.*
88 William Eſſex of Bewcot in Berkſhire, Eſq; ex.
89 Sir Edward Gorges of Langford in Wiltſhire, Kt. Lord Gorges. *I.* ex.
90 Edward Devereux of Caſtle-Bromwich in Warwickſhire, Eſq; Viſcount Hereford. *E.*
91 Reginald Mohun of Boconock in Cornwall, Eſq; ex.
92 Sir Harbottle Grimſton of Bradfield in Eſſex, Kt. ex.
93 Sir Thomas Holt of Aſton neat Bermingham in Warwickſhire, Kt.
94 Thomas Blackſton of Blackſton in the Biſhopric of Durham, Eſq; May 27, 1615. ex.
95 Sir Robert Dormer of Wing in Buckinghamſhire, Kt. Lord Dormer, June 10. *E.*
96 Sir Rowland Egerton of Egerton in Cheſhire, Kt. April 5, 1617.
97 Roger Townſhend of Rainham in Norfolk, Eſq; Viſcount Townſhend, April 16, 1617. *E.*
98 Simon Clark of Salford in Warwickſhire, Eſq; May 1.
99 Edward Fitton of Gawſworth in Cheſhire, Eſq; Oct. 2. ex.
100 Sir Richard Lucy of Broxburn in Hartfordſhire, Kt. March 11. ex.
101 Sir Matthew Boynton of Bramſton in Yorkſhire, Kt. May 25, 1618.
102 Thomas Littleton of Frankley in Worceſterſhire, Eſq; July 25.
103 Sir Francis Leigh of Newnham in Warwickſhire, Kt. Earl of Chicheſter, Dec. 24. *E.* ex.
104 Thomas Burdet of Bramcote in Warwickſhire, Eſq; Feb. 25.
105 George Morton of St. Andrews-Milborn in Dorſetſhire, Eſq; March 1. ex.
106 Sir William Harvey of Kidbrook in Kent, Kt. with remainder to William Harvey, his ſon, and to the heirs male of the body of the ſaid William. Engliſh and Iriſh Baron, *viz.* Lord Harvey, May 11, 1619. ex.
107 Thomas Mackworth of Normanton in Rutlandſhire, Eſq; June 4.
108 William Grey, Eſq; ſon and heir of Sir Ralph Grey of Chillingham in Northumberland, Kt. Engliſh Baron and Earl of Tankerville and Lord Grey, --- 15. ex.
109 William Villars of Brookesby in Leiceſterſhire, Eſq; July 19. ex.

110 Sir James Ley of Weſtbury in Wiltſhire, Kt. Earl of Marlborough, — 20. *E.* ex.

111 William Hicks of Beverſton in Glouceſterſhire, Eſq; — 21.

112 Sir Thomas Beaumont of Cole-Orton in Leiceſterſhire, Kt. Sept. 16. ex.

113 Henry Saliſbury of Leweny in Denbighſhire, Eſq; Nov. 10. ex.

114 Eraſmus Dryden of Canons-Aſhby in Northamptonſhire, Eſq; --- 16.

115 William Airmine, Eſq; ſon and heir to Sir William Airmine of Oſgodley in Lincolnſhire, Kt. Nov. 28. ex.

116 Sir William Bamburgh of Howton in Yorkſhire, Kt. Dec. 1. ex.

117 Edward Hartop of Freathby in Leiceſterſhire, Eſq; --- 3.

118 John Mill of Camoyſcourt in Suſſex, Eſq; --- 31.

119 Francis Radcliff of Derwentwater in Cumberland, Eſq; Engliſh Earl, viz. Earl of Derwentwater, Jan. 31. *Attainted.*

120 Sir David Foulis of Ingleby in Yorkſhire, Kt. Feb. 6.

121 Thomas Philips of Barrington in Somerſetſhire, Eſq; --- 16. ex.

122 Sir Claudius Forſter of Bamborough-Caſtle in Northumberland, Kt. March 7. ex.

123 Anthony Cheſter of Chichley in Buckinghamſhire, Eſq; --- 23.

124 Sir Samuel Tryon of Layr-Marney in Eſſex, Kt. --- 28, 1620. ex.

125 Adam Newton of Charlton in Kent, Eſq; April 2. ex.

126 Sir John Boteler of Hatfield Woodhall in Hertfortſhire, Kt. Engliſh Baron, Lord Boteler of Bramfield, --- 2. ex.

127 Gilbert Gerard of Harrow on the Hill in Middleſex, Eſq; --- 13. ex.

128 Humphrey Lee of Langley, Eſq; in the County of Salop, May 3. ex.

129 Richard Berney of Parkhall in Redham of Norfolk, Eſq; --- 5.

130 Humphrey Forſter of Alder-Marſton in Berkſhire, Eſq, --- 20. ex.

131 Thomas Bigs of Lenchwike in Worceſterſhire, Eſq; --- 26. ex.

132 Henry Bellingham of Helſington in Weſtmorland, Eſq; --- 30. ex.

133 William

133 William Yelverton of Rongham in Norfolk, Eſq; — 31. ex.
134 John Scudamore of Homelacy in Herefordſhire, Eſq; Viſcount Scudamore, June 1. *I.* ex.
135 Sir Thomas Gower of Sittenham in Yorkſhire, Kt. Engliſh Baron, Lord Gower, June 2.
136 John Packington of Ayleſbury in Buckinghamſhire, Eſq; — 22.
137 Ralph Aſhton of Lever in Lancaſhire, Eſq; — 28. ex.
138 Sir Baptiſt Hicks of Cambden in Glouceſterſhire, Kt. Viſcount Cambden, July 1. *E.* ex.
139 Sir Thomas Roberts of Glaſſenbury in Kent, Kt. — 3.
140 John Hanmer of Hanmer in Flintſhire, Eſq; — 8.
141 Edward Fryer of Water-Eaton in Oxfordſhire, Eſq; — 11. ex.
142 Edward Oſborne of Kiveton in Yorkſhire, Eſq; Duke of Leeds, — 13. *E.*
143 Henry Felton of Playford in Suffolk, Eſq; — 20. ex.
144 William Chaloner of Giſborough in Yorkſhire, Eſq; — 20. ex.
145 Sir Thomas Biſhop of Parham in Suſſex, Kt. — 24.
146 Sir Francis Vincent of Stoke-Dabernon in Surrey, Kt. — 26.
147 Henry Clere of Ormeſby in Norfolk, Eſq; Feb. 27. ex.
148 Sir Benjamin Tichburne of Tichburne in Hampſhire, Kt. March 14.
149 Sir Richard Wibraham of Woodhey in Cheſhire, Kt. May 5, 1621. ex.
150 Sir Thomas Delves of Doddington in Cheſhire, Kt. — 8.
151 Sir Lewis Watſon of Rockingham Caſtle in Northamptonſhire. Kt. ſince Earl Rockingham, June 23. *E.*
152 Sir Thomas Palmer of Wingham in Kent, Kt. — 29.
153 Sir Richard Roberts of Truro in Cornwal, Kt. ſince Earl of Radnor, July 13. *E.*
154 John Rivers of Chafford in Kent, Eſq; — 19.
155 Thomas Darnel of Heyling in Lincolnſhire, Eſq; Sept. 6. ex.
156 Sir Iſaac Sidley of Great-Chart in Kent, Kt. — 14.
157 Robert Brown of Walcot, Eſq; in Northamptonſhire, — 21. ex.
158 John Hewit of Headley-Hall in Yorkſhire, Eſq; October 11.
159 Henry Jernegan of Coſſey, alias Coſſeſe in Norfolk, Eſq; — 16.

160 Sir Nicholas Hide of Albury in Hertfordshire, Kt. November 8. ex.
161 John Philips of Picton in Pembrokeshire, Esq; --- 9.
162 Sir John Stepney of Prendergast in Pembrokeshire, Kt. --- 14.
163 Baldwin Wake of Clevedon in Somersetshire, Esq; December 5.
164 William Masham of High-Laver in Essex, Esq; --- 20.
165 John Colbrond of Barham in Suffex, Esq; --- 21. ex.
166 Sir John Hotham of Scarborough in Yorkshire, Kt. January 4.
167 Francis Mansel of Muddlescombe in Caermarthenshire, Esq; --- 14. ex.
168 Edward Powel of Pembolley in Herefordshire, Esq; one of the Masters of Requests, --- 18. ex.
169 Sir John Garrard of Lamer in Hertfordshire, Kt. February 16.
170 Sir Richard Grosvenor of Eaton in Cheshire, Kt. --- 23.
171 Sir Henry Moody of Garsdon in Wiltshire, Kt. March 11. ex.
172 John Barker of Grimston-Hall in Trimley in Suffolk, Esq; --- 17.
173 Sir William Burton of Alton in Wiltshire, Kt. --- 18. ex.
174 John Gage of Forle in Suffex, Esq; Mar. 26, 1622.
175 William Goring, Esq; son and heir of Sir Henry Goring of Burton in Suffex, Kt. May 14.
176 Peter Courtene of Aldington, alias Atuton, in Worcestershire, Esq; --- 18. ex.
177 Sir Richard Norton of Rotherfield in Hampshire, Kt. --- 23. ex.
178 Sir John Leventhorp of Shingle-Hall in Hertfordshire, Kt. --- 30. ex.
179 Capel Bedel of Hamerton, Esq; in Huntingdonshire, June 3. ex.
180 John Darrel of Wellwoodhey in Berkshire, Esq; --- 13. ex.
181 William Williams of Veynol in Caernarvanshire, Esq; --- 15. ex.
182 Sir Francis Ashley of Hatfield in Middlesex, Kt. --- 18. ex.
183 Sir Anthony Ashley of St. Giles-Winburne in Dorsetshire, Kt. July 3. ex.
184 John Cooper of Rockburn in Hampshire, Esq; since Earl of Shaftesbury, --- 4. E.
185 Edmund

185 Edmund Prideaux of Netherton in Devonſhire, Eſq; --- 17.
186 Sir Thomas Haſlerigg of Noſely in Leiceſterſhire, Kt. --- 21.
187 Sir Thomas Burton of Stockerton in Leiceſterſhire, Kt. --- 22.
188 Francis Folejambe of Walton in Derbyſhire, Eſq; --- 24. ex.
189 Edward Yate of Buckland in Berkſhire, Eſq; --- 30. ex.
190 George Chudleigh of Aſhton in Devonſhire, Eſq; Auguſt 1.
191 Francis Drake of Buckland in Devonſhire, Eſq; --- 2.
192 William Meredith of Stanſby in Derbyſhire, Eſq;---13.
193 Hugh Middleton of Ruthin in Denbyſhire, Eſq; October 22. ex.
194 Gifford Thornhurſt of Agnes Court in Kent, Eſq; November 12. ex.
195 Percy Herbert, ſon and heir of Sir William Herbert of Red-Caſtle in Montgomeryſhire, Kt. Marquiſs of Powis, *E.* but ſince attainted, --- 16.
196 Sir Robert Fiſher of Packington in Warwickſhire, Kt. December 7.
197 Hardolph Waſtneys of Heydon in Nottinghamſhire, Eſq; December 18.
198 Sir Henry Skipwith of Preſtwould in Leiceſterſhire, Kt. --- 20. ex.
199 Thomas Harris of Boreatton in Shropſhire, Eſq; --- 22. ex.
200 Nicholas Tempeſt of Stanley in the Biſhopric of Durham, Eſq; --- 23.
201 Francis Cottington, Eſq; Secretary to King Charles I, when Prince of Wales; ſince Lord Cottington, Feb. 16. *E.* ex.
202 Thomas Harris of Tong-Caſtle in Shropſhire, Serjeant at law, April 12, 1623. ex.
203. Edward Barkham of South-Acre in Norfolk, Eſq; June 28. ex.
204 John Corbet of Sprowſton in Norfolk, Eſq; July 4. ex.
205 Sir Thomas Playters of Soterley in Suffolk, Eſq; Aug. 13.

BOOK XIX.

Containing the first fifteen years of the Reign of CHARLES I.

25. CHARLES I.

Ann. C. 1625. *Reg.* 1. *Mar.* 27. CHARLES I. is proclaimed King at *London*.

He forms two difficult projects: 1. To wrest from the Emperor and the Duke of *Bavaria* the two *Palatinates*? 2. To carry the regal authority much higher than his Predeceſſors had done.

A Parliament is called for the 17th of *May*, but does not meet till the 18th of *June*, on account of the plague, which broke out at *London*, in the mean time.

May 1. The diſpenſation for the King's marriage with the Princeſs *Henrietta Maria* being brought to *Paris*, the marriage is ſolemnized there by proxy.

7. The funeral of King *James* I. is celebrated, and he is buried in *Henry* VIIth's Chapel at *Weſtminſter*.

King *Charles* ſends 8000 men to *Plymouth*, for an expedition againſt *Spain*; but thoſe troops had been raiſed for the *Palatinate*.

10. He grants a pardon to 20 *Romiſh* Prieſts that were condemned to die.

May 24. *George Villiers* Duke of *Buckingham* comes to *Paris*, to conduct the new Queen to *England*.

June 12. The Queen imbarks at *Boulogne*.

She arrives at *Dover*.

13. The marriage is conſummated at *Canterbury*.

14. The King and Queen make their entry into *London*.

16. The firſt Parliament of King *Charles* I. meets at *Weſtminſter*.

18. The King aſks money of the Parliament for the recovery of the *Palatinate*, and the war with *Spain*; but inſtead of granting him ſome immediately, both Houſes preſent a petition to him againſt Recuſants, to which he returns a gracious anſwer; however, he defers anſwering each particular article of the petition, till he had examined it.

Richard Mountague is brought to the bar of the Houſe of Commons, for his *Appeal to Cæſar*, which is declared contrary to

K. CHARLES. I
A. Vandyke p.
Vertue Sculp.

to the articles, &c. The King is diſpleaſed with the Commons about it, and takes the buſineſs into his own hands. *Ann. C.*

The Commons grant the King two ſubſidies; he accepts them graciouſly, and aſks for more money. The Clergy grant at the ſame time three ſubſidies.

An act is made, forbidding ſports and paſtimes; ſuch as bear or bull-baiting, plays, or other unlawful exerciſes, on *Sundays*. And another, for the farther reſtraint of tippling in inns, alehouſes, and victualling houſes.

The Parliament is adjourned to *Oxford*, upon account of the plague's raging in *London*. *July* 11.

During the adjournment, the King lends ſix ſhips to *Lewis* XIII. King of *France*, to ſerve againſt the Proteſtants in *Rochelle*.

The Parliament is reaſſembled at *Oxford*, where the Commons examine grievances. *Aug.* 1.

King *Charles* ſends for both Houſes, and makes a ſpeech to them, in which he demands money. The Commons complain, that the King had granted a pardon to a Jeſuit, and ten other Papiſts, the day after having returned a favourable anſwer to their petition againſt Recuſants, and examining other grievances. 4.

The King returns a full and expreſs anſwer to each article of their petition againſt Recuſants.

The Duke of *Buckingham* gives the Parliament an account of the fleet, and at the ſame time takes occaſion to vindicate his conduct. 9.

The King ſends a meſſage to the Commons to haſten the money-bill, and threatens them to take other meaſures; whereupon, the Commons draw up a declaration. 10. 11.

The King perceiving they were reſolved not to give a further ſupply, without the redreſs of grievances, diſſolves this his firſt Parliament. 12.

His Majeſty fits out a fleet againſt *Spain*, and raiſes money by way of loan, by letters under his Privy-Seal. *Septemb.*

The fleet ſails towards *Cadiz*, under the command of *Edward Cecil* Viſcount *Wimbledon*. *Oct.* 2.

Sir *Thomas Coventry* is made Keeper of the Great Seal, in the room of Dr. *John Williams*. 30.

The fleet returns without doing any thing conſiderable.

The King calls his ſecond Parliament, to meet the 6th of *February*. *Novemb. Decemb.*

He iſſues out a proclamation, ordering all ſuch as had 40*l.* a year or more, to come and receive the order of Knighthood, before the King's Coronation.

This

Ann. C. This year, there died in *London* of the plague, 35,417 perſons.

This year alſo the order of Knights of *Nova Scotia* was inſtituted.

1625-26. The King is crowned at *Weſtminſter*.

Feb. 2. The Parliament meets, and the Commons examine the

6. public grievances.

The Committee of Religion calls in queſtion *An anſwer to the late Gagg of the Proteſtants*, *An Appeal to Cæſar*, and *A Treatiſe of the Invocation of Saints*, compoſed by Dr. *Richard Mountague*.

Mar. 7. The King ſends a meſſage to the Commons, to demand a ſupply of money: And the Lords alſo preſs the Commons to conſider of it.

The Commons are offended at this, and examine the conduct of *George Villiers* Duke of *Buckingham*.

The King ſends a letter to the Speaker, to forward the ſupply, and a meſſage to Sir *Richard Weſton*, to the ſame purpoſe.

The Commons return an anſwer, in which they promiſe to aſſiſt the King, and ſay, they did not doubt but he would receive their information concerning grievances.

The King accepts their offer, but will not hear of any conditions; and tells them, he would not allow any of his ſervants to be queſtioned amongſt them.

The Houſe of Commons reſolves that common fame is a good ground of proceeding againſt the Duke of *Buckingham*; at which the King is extremely offended.

The Commons vote the King three ſubſidies, and three

1626. fifteenths.

Reg. 2. They continue to examine the Favourite's conduct.

Mar. 28. The King ſends for both Houſes to *Whitehall*, and af-

29. ter a ſhort ſpeech, orders the Lord-Keeper to make a ſpeech to them, in which the Commons were ſeverely reprimanded.

The Commons take great offence at the King's and the Lord-Keeper's ſpeeches; but the Duke of *Buckingham* excuſes the King, at a conference between the two Houſes, and takes from thence an occaſion to vindicate his own conduct.

24. *John Digby* Earl of *Briſtol*, having petitioned the Houſe of Lords, that he might be ſummoned to Parliament, the

31. King ſends him a writ of ſummons, but orders him withal not to make uſe of it.

April. The Commons preſent a remonſtrance to the King, concerning

concerning his ſpeech, and that of the Lord-Keeper, at *Whitehall*. They vote a fourth ſubſidy. *Ann. C.*

The Parliament is adjourned for a week, upon account of *Eaſter*.

The Commons draw up articles of accuſation againſt the Duke of *Buckingham*, and ſend him word that they expected his anſwer; but the Houſe of Lords refuſe to give him leave to anſwer.

There is annexed to the charge againſt the Duke an article concerning the plaiſter, and the potion given to King *James*.

King *Charles* orders a charge of High-Treaſon to be brought againſt the Earl of *Briſtol*; which is accordingly done the ſame day.

The Earl of *Briſtol* exhibits to the Lords articles of accuſation againſt the Duke of *Buckingham*, and the Lord *Conway* Secretary of State. *May* 1.

The Commons ſend up to the Lords a declaration, and impeachment againſt the Duke of *Buckingham*. Sir *Dudley Digges* makes a prologue, and Sir *John Elliot* an epilogue to the impeachment: They are both ſent to the *Tower*. 8.

The King goes to the Houſe of Lords, where he makes a ſpeech in vindication of the Duke. 11.

The Commons deſire that the Duke might be taken into cuſtody; and loudly complain of the impriſonment of their Members, *Digges* and *Elliot*: Whereupon the King orders them to be releaſed.

A diſpute of the like nature ariſes between the King and the Houſe of Lords about the impriſonment of *Thomas Howard* Earl of *Arundel*. They preſent ſeveral petitions to the King, to which not receiving a ſatisfactory anſwer, they grow diſſatisfied; and at ſeveral times adjourn till the 2d of *June*: At length the Earl is releaſed. *March.* *April.* *May.* *June.*

Thomas Howard Earl of *Suffolk* dies. 28.

George Villiers Duke of *Buckingham*, is choſen Chancellor of the Univerſity of *Cambridge*, in the room of the Earl of *Suffolk*: The Commons are offended at it, but the King ſupports the election. *June* 2.

The Duke gives in his anſwer to the impeachment entered againſt him by the Commons. 8.

King *Charles* writes a letter to the Speaker of the Houſe of Commons, to haſten the ſubſidy. 9.

The Commons preſent a petition to his Majeſty againſt Popiſh

Ann. C. Popiſh Recuſants, and give a liſt of 59 who were in places of truſt and authority.

They give an anſwer to the King's letter to the Speaker about the ſubſidy.

Being informed that the King intended to diſſolve the Parliament, they immediately draw up a remonſtrance againſt the Duke, and againſt tonnage and poundage.

15. The King diſſolves his ſecond Parliament.

He publiſhes a declaration, dated the thirteenth of *June*, wherein he vindicates himſelf for diſſolving this and the former Parliament.

A proclamation is iſſued out, ordering all thoſe who had any copies of the Commons remonſtrance to burn them: And another forbidding the preaching or diſputing upon the controverted points between the Arminians and Calviniſts.

By the King's command, an information is preferred in the Star-Chamber againſt the Duke of *Buckingham*, about the plaiſter.

A commiſſion is granted to ſome perſons to compound with Popiſh Recuſants.

The Privy-Council orders all cuſtoms to be levied and paid, though they were not yet ſettled by authority of Parliament.

And the King requires a loan of a certain ſum from every Peer, for the defence of the Kingdom.

But he deſiring a loan of 100,000 *l.* from the City of *London* is refuſed.

The Ports and maritime Counties are ordered to fit out ſhips; *London* amongſt the reſt, is commanded to equip twenty.

Privy-Seals for money are iſſued out; and the King raiſes by way of benevolence, the four ſubſidies and three fifteenths, which the Commons had voted him.

Aug. 27. N. S. *Septemb.* *Chriſtian* IV. King of *Denmark* is defeated by Count *Tilly*, the Emperor's General; whereupon King *Charles* exacts a general loan of all his ſubjects for aſſiſting his uncle the King of *Denmark*.

Soldiers returned from *Cadiz*, are billeted upon private houſes, contrary to the cuſtom of *England*.

Nov. 9. Sir *Randolph Crew* Lord-Chief-Juſtice of the *King's-Bench*, is removed from his place, for not advancing the loan, and ſuch as refuſed to ſubſcribe thereto, are either inrolled for ſoldiers, or impriſoned.

The King recalls ſix thouſand foot ſoldiers that he had in the

the ſervice of the *United Provinces*, and ſends them to the King of *Denmark*. *Ann. C.*

Dr. *Richard Sibthorp* preaches up paſſive obedience, in order to further the loan. 1627. *Feb.* 12.

Dr. *Roger Manwaring* preaches two ſermons upon the ſame ſubject.

Dr. *Richard Neile* Biſhop of *Durham*, and Dr. *William Laud* Biſhop of *Bath* and *Wells*, are ſworn of the Privy-Council. *April.*

King *Charles* being reſolved to go to war with *France*, diſmiſſes his Queen's *French* domeſtics; and treats with the Duke of *Rohan*, head of the Proteſtants in that Kingdom. *Reg.* 3.

The Duke of *Buckingham*, being made Admiral, and Commander of the land-forces to be employed in the expedition, ſails with a fleet againſt *France*, without war being declared. *June* 27.

He appears before *Rochelle*, but the inhabitants being timorous, and refuſing to admit the *Engliſh* into that city, the Duke goes and makes a deſcent in the Iſle of *Rhé*, where he beſieges *St. Martin's* fort.

Several perſons of diſtinction are impriſoned for refuſing to ſubſcribe to the loan, and among the reſt, Sir *Thomas Wentworth*.

Archbiſhop *Abbot* is ſuſpended for refuſing to licence *Sibthorp's* ſermon. *Oct.* 9.

The Duke of *Buckingham* is forced to quit the Iſle of *Rhé*, with the loſs of near 5,000 men. *Nov.* 9.

Rochelle, where the Proteſtants ſtood upon their defence, being on the point of being beſieged by the King of *France*, the *Rochellers* apply to King *Charles* for aſſiſtance.

King *Charles* calls his third Parliament to meet the 17th of *March*. 1627-8. *Jan.* 29.

Writs of ſummons are ſent to *George Abbot* Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, to *John Williams* Biſhop of *Lincoln*, and to *John Digby* Earl of *Briſtol*, though they were in diſgrace.

Seventy-eight Gentlemen who had been impriſoned for the buſineſs of the loan are releaſed.

The Parliament meets: The King demands of them a ſupply of money. *Mar.* 17.

A letter is diſperſed about, concerning the grievances and inconveniencies of the State, intitled *A Speech without Doors*.

The Commons examine the grievances of the Nation, 22.

Ann. C. and ſeem determined not to grant any ſupply till they were redreſſed.

25. The King ſends ſeveral propoſitions to the Commons concerning the ſupply; but the reading of them is deferred, till ſome reſolutions had been taken about the grievances.

1628. The Commons examine the liberties of the Nation, and
Reg. 4. come to ſome important reſolutions about them.

31. Both Houſes preſent a petition to the King againſt Recuſants: He returns a favourable anſwer to each article.

April 2. The Commons examine the King's propoſitions, and then reſume the conſideration of the grievances.

3. The King ſends a meſſage to them in behalf of the Duke
4. of *Buckingham*; and another, to deſire them to diſpatch the ſupply.

The Commons vote the King five ſubſidies.

10. *Eaſter* Holidays approaching, he ſends and deſires the Commons not to adjourn, that affairs might be the more ſpeedily diſpatched: At this the Houſe is offended; but complies.

11. Secretary *Coke* preſſes the diſpatch of the ſubſidies.

12. The King ſends another threatening meſſage upon the ſame ſubject, which occaſions many debates.

14. Secretary *Coke* brings another meſſage, to the ſame intent.

The Commons preſent a petition to the King againſt billeting of ſoldiers: He returns no direct anſwer to this petition, and only preſſes the buſineſs of the ſupply.

Great debates paſs in the Houſe about Martial Law, and a Petition of Right, till the 25th day.

The Commons reſolve to preſent to the King a Petition of Right, a draught of which they ſend up to the Lords.

The King's Serjeant, *Aſhley*, makes a ſpeech againſt it, for which the Houſe of Lords orders him to be impriſoned.

25. The Lords make propoſitions concerning the Petition of Right, but they are rejected by the Commons.

28. The Lord-Keeper, *Coventry*, makes a ſpeech to both Houſes, to haſten the ſupplies; and aſſures them, in the King's name, That his Majeſty would maintain all his ſubjects in the juſt freedom of their perſons, and ſafety of their eſtates, *&c.* Secretary *Coke* perſuades the Commons to comply with the King's requeſt.

Notwithſtanding that, a Committee is appointed to draw up the Petition of Right.

May 1. The King deſires the Commons to reſt on his Royal word:

word: He ſends them word, that he intended ſhortly to prorogue the Parliament. *Ann. C.* 2.

The Commons return an anſwer to ſeveral of the King's meſſages; wherein they alledge, that they relied on the King, but not on his Miniſters, and deſire him to ſecure their rights and liberties by bill, or otherwiſe. The King orders the Lord-Keeper to tell them, that they ought to rely on his word, for explanations would hazard an incroachment upon his prerogative. 3.

He ſends another meſſage to prevent the Petition of Right, which he would by all means have ſtopped, if he could. 6.

The Commons vote, that a verbal declaration of the King is not ſufficient ſatisfaction, unleſs made in a parliamentary way.

The King ſends a letter to the Lords, wherein he aſſerts his right of committing priſoners, without expreſſing the cauſe of their commitment: It is communicated to the Commons, but they take no notice of it. 12.

The Lords have a conference with the Commons about the Petition of Right, and offer an addition, which is not admitted by the Commons. 17.

The Commons ſhew, that the addition propoſed by the Lords would render the Petition of no effect. 23.

The Lord-Keeper makes a ſpeech at the conference, to perſuade the Commons to diſpatch the Petition; at length, the Lords agree with the Commons to preſent the Petition, without any addition. 26.

A charge is brought in againſt Dr. *Roger Manwaring*, for his ſermons above-mentioned.

The Captain of a *French* ſhip depoſes, That the *Engliſh* fleet did not attempt to relieve *Rochelle*; whereupon, *William Fielding*, Earl of *Denbigh*, is ordered to go and relieve that town. *May* 30.

The King comes to Parliament, and gives an anſwer to the Petition of Right, in general and ambiguous terms: The Commons are not ſatisfied with it, and reſume the conſideration of the grievances. *June* 2. 3.

Sentence is paſſed againſt Dr. *Manwaring*, whereby he is ordered to be impriſoned, and to make a ſubmiſſion; fined 1000*l.* ſuſpended for three years, and diſabled to have any eccleſiaſtical dignity, or ſecular office.

The King repeats a meſſage he had ſent the Commons two days before, namely, That he intended to prorogue the Parliament the 11th; and requires them withal, not to enter into, or proceed to any new buſineſs, that might lay a ſcandal upon his Government. 5.

Ann. C. He commands the Houſe to adjourn till the next day; at which offence is taken.

6. The King being informed thereof, ſends a gracious meſſage by the Speaker.

The Houſe examines an order of the King's to bring in foreign forces into the Kingdom: The order is read, and witneſſes are examined.

June 7. The King comes to the Parliament, and returns a full and plain anſwer to the Petition of Right.

The Commons take into conſideration a commiſſion from the King to ſettle a general exciſe, without the conſent of Parliament: The two Houſes have a conference about it; and, in the end, it is cancelled by his Majeſty.

The debates concerning the Duke of *Buckingham* are renewed: He is charged with being the cauſe of all the evils to the Kingdom; and a remonſtrance againſt him is preſented to the King, by the Commons.

13. They alſo draw a remonſtrance againſt the undue taking of tonnage and poundage, without act of Parliament.

26. The King gives his aſſent to the ſubſidy-bill, and then prorogues the Parliament to the 20th of *October*.

The Clergy grant five ſubſidies, as the Commons had done before.

The acts made this ſeſſion, were: An act forbidding carriers, waggoners, and drovers, travelling on *Sunday*, or butchers killing or ſelling meat on that day: Another, to reſtrain the paſſing, or ſending of any to be popiſhly bred, beyond the ſeas: An act, to eſtabliſh *Sutton*'s Hoſpital, or the Charter-houſe; and one for reſtitution, in blood, of *Carew Raleigh*, Eſq; Sir *Walter*'s ſon, *&c.*

A proclamation is iſſued out to ſuppreſs Dr. *Manwaring*'s ſermons, that had been condemned by the Parliament; and a commiſſion to compound with Recuſants.

July 15. Sir *Richard Weſton*, a Papiſt, is made Lord-Treaſurer, and Earl of *Portland*; the ſame day Dr. *William Laud* is tranſlated from *Bath* and *Wells* to the biſhopric of *London*, and becomes a great favourite.

Dr. *Richard Montague* and Dr. *Manwaring* procure pardons from the King; moreover, *Montague* is made Biſhop of *Chicheſter*, and *Manwaring* Rector of *Stamford-Rivers* in *Eſſex*.

Aug. 23. *George Villiers* Duke of *Buckingham*, is aſſaſſinated at *Portſmouth*, by Lieutenant *John Felton*.

24. Dr. *Montague* is conſecrated Biſhop of *Chicheſter*.

Sept. 10. The fleet that was to have been commanded by the Duke of

of *Buckingham*, ſails from *Portſmouth* under the command of *Ann. C.*
Robert Bertie, Earl of *Lindſey*, for the relief of *Rochelle*,
that was cloſely beſieged by King *Lewis* XIII.

King *Charles* diſpoſes of the troops he had ordered to be raiſed in *Germany*, to the King of *Sweden* and the Duke of *Savoy*.

The *Engliſh* fleet appears before *Rochelle* and attempts to force the barricado, but in vain. 20.

The Parliament is further prorogued to the 20th of *January*. *Oct.* 1.

Rochelle is taken by the King of *France*. 20.

Felton is arraigned and condemned, and executed, two days after, at *Tyburn*. *Nov.* 27.

Samuel Vaſſal, a *London* Merchant, refuſes to pay tonnage, for which his effects are ſeized.

The merchandizes of *Richard Chambers* are ſeized upon the ſame account, and he is impriſoned.

The Parliament meets again. 1628-29.

They find that the Petition of Right had been inrolled; and printed by the King's order, not with the right anſwer, and with ſome additions. *Jan.* 20.

The impriſonment of *John Rolls* about tonnage and poundage, ſince the Petition of Right, is taken into conſideration by the Houſe of Commons.

The King ſends for the Commons to *Whitehall*, and makes a ſpeech to them, in which he ſays, that he did not challenge tonnage and poundage as of right, but *de benè eſſe*. Then, he preſſes them to paſs a bill to grant him tonnage and poundage.

He ſends a meſſage to the Houſe, to take that bill ſpeedily into conſideration; but the Commons in their great wiſdom, and wonderful zeal for Calviniſm, fall upon matters of Religion, and condemn Arminianiſm. 26.

The King requires them by another meſſage, to give the preference to the bill of tonnage and poundage; they regard it not, and proceed in their debates concerning Religion. 27.

Secretary *Coke* brings them another meſſage concerning the precedency of tonnage and poundage: They continue notwithſtanding to examine religious matters. 28.

The Houſe of Commons enter into a vow, to ſtand to the thirty-nine articles eſtabliſhed in the 13th of Queen *Elizabeth*.

Both Houſes petition the King for a faſt: He grants it, but proteſts withal, that he would not grant any faſt for the future, except on extraordinary occaſions. 30.

Ann. C. A declaration is preſented to the King by the Commons, wherein they juſtify their proceedings, in giving the precedence to matters of Religion, the King returns an anſwer, and preſſes them to haſten the bill of tonnage, &c.

Feb. 4. The commons enter into ſome debates about the proclamation to prohibit diſputing for, or againſt, *Arminianiſm*. Biſhop *Laud* and *Montague* are ſuſpected of having procured it.

10. They take into examination the affair of Mr. *Rolls*, and the ſeizing of the Merchants effects.

Great Complaints are made in the Houſe about the pardon granted to *Sibthorp*, *Montague*, and *Manwaring*, and the preferring of *Manwaring*, in oppoſition to the ſentence paſſed upon him by the Parliament.

Complaint is alſo made about the licenſing of Popiſh books.

18. The faſt is kept.

19. The Officers of the Cuſtoms are examined about the taking of Mr. *Rolls*'s goods, who was a Member of the Houſe of Commons.

Complaints are made, in the Houſe, againſt *Richard Neile*, Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, and the Lord-Treaſurer

25. *Weſton*.

Mar. 2. The Speaker refuſes to put the queſtion, ſaying, he was otherwiſe commanded from the King; and, had an order to adjourn the Houſe till the 10th of *March*.

He endeavours to go out of the chair, but is held down in it, till a proteſtation was drawn up againſt Popery or Arminianiſm; and againſt tonnage and poundage.

The Houſe is adjourned till the 10th.

A proclamation is drawn up, to notify that the Parliament was to be diſſolved.

4. Several Members of the Houſe of Commons are impriſoned, particularly Sir *John Elliot*; and *Denzil Holles*, *William Stroud*, *John Selden*, Eſquires, &c.

10. The King diſſolves his third Parliament; and publiſhes a declaration, containing the cauſes which moved him to diſſolve that Parliament.

12. The Duke of *Rohan* writes a letter to the King.

Biſhop *Laud* preſents to the King *Conſiderations for the better ſettling of the Church-Government*.

Tonnage and poundage are exacted with rigour, though they were not granted by Parliament.

A ſtrict order is made, enabling the King's Meſſengers to

to ſearch any warehouſes, *&c.* in default of the payment of Cuſtoms. *Ann. C.* 1629.

The King puts out a proclamation for ſuppreſſing falſe rumours touching Parliaments. 27. *Reg.* 5.

An order is publiſhed for arming and muſtering the Militia.

Several proclamations, and ſtatutes, made againſt the Recuſants are but ill put in execution.

A peace between *England* and *France* is ſigned. *April* 14.

Richard Chambers, an Alderman of *London*, is fined 2000 *l.* by the Star-Chamber, for a raſh expreſſion of his, and for refuſing to pay tonnage and poundage. *May* 6.

The peace with *France* is proclaimed in *England*. 10.

Several Prieſts are releaſed, which was very diſagreeable to the bulk of the Nation. 13.

John Selden, and the other impriſoned Members, bring their *Habeas Corpus*; but the King refuſes to let them have the benefit of it. *June* 24.

The King erects the Starch-makers into a Corporation. 30.

The Recuſants compound for their forfeitures. *July.*

Lewis XIII, King of *France*, ſwears to the peace with *England*. *Sept.* 6. *Dec.* 30.

King *Charles* publiſhes *Regal Inſtructions* about the Government of the Church, conformably to Biſhop *Laud's Conſiderations*.

The Council writes a threatening letter to the Mayor of *Chicheſter*, about the billeting of ſoldiers. 1629-30. *Jan.* 4.

King *Charles* ingages to furniſh *Guſtavus Adolphus*, King of *Sweden*, with 6000 men, in the Marquiſs of *Hamilton's* name. *Reg.* 6. 1630.

He puts out a proclamation for confirming defective titles. *May* 27.

Prince *Charles*, afterwards King *Charles* II, is born. 29.

Articles are agreed upon between the King of *Sweden* and the Marquiſs of *Hamilton*, about the forces above-mentioned. 31.

Dr. *Alexander Leighton* is condemned in the Star-Chamber, for a virulent book, intitled *Sion's Plea*; but his ſentence is not put in execution till *November* 16, when he had his noſe ſlit, his ears cropped, and his forehead branded. *June* 4.

The Corporation for buying in of Impropriations for Preaching-miniſters.

The King grants a commiſſion to compound with thoſe who had neglected to receive the Order of Knighthood. *July* 6.

A peace is concluded between *England* and *Spain*. *Nov.* 5. 1630-31.

Ann. C. Biſhop *Laud* uſes ſeveral new and ſtrange ceremonies at
Jan. 16. the conſecration of St. *Catharine-Creed* Church, *London*.
March. A Commiſſion is granted to the Marquiſs of *Hamilton*,
Reg. 7. to raiſe the troops deſigned for the ſervice of the King of *Sweden*.
1631. Biſhop *Laud* is choſen Chancellor of the Univerſity of
April 12. *Oxford*.
25. *Mervin*, Lord *Audley*, is tried and condemned for ſodomy, and for aſſiſting one of his ſervants to raviſh his lady.
Cards and ſoap are monopolized, being by patents veſted in private hands.
July 19. *James*, Marquiſs of *Hamilton*, ſets out for *Germany*.
A tax is impoſed for the ſalary of the Muſter-maſter.
Sept. 7. The battle of *Leipſick* is fought.
Three members of the Univerſity of *Oxford* are expelled, for preaching againſt *Arminianiſm*.
Oct. 27. Sir *Robert Heath*, Attorney-General, is made Chief-Juſtice of the *Common-Pleas*, and *William Noy*, Eſq; made Attorney-General in his room.
James Malverer, Eſq; is proceeded againſt in the *Exchequer*, for neglecting to take the Order of Knighthood.
Sir *Robert Cotton* dies.
1632. *Nathanael Barnard*, Lecturer of *St. Sepulchres*, *London*,
Reg. 8. is ſuſpended by the High-Commiſſion-Court, fined 1000 *l.*
May 6. and committed to priſon, for preaching againſt *Arminianiſm*.
May. The City of *London* is fined 1500 marks, for neglecting to take inquiſition of the death of Dr. *Lamb*, who was killed by the mob, *June* 13, 1628.
June 10. The King iſſues out a proclamation, commanding all Lords and Gentlemen to depart from *London*, and go and reſide at their eſtates.
16. And another againſt building in, or near *London*, upon new foundations.
Decemb. *Henry Sherfield*, Recorder of *Sarum*, is fined 500 *l.* for having broken ſome painted glaſs in St. *Edmund*'s Church, in that City.
The King gains to his ſide ſeveral eminent perſons, which had been violent againſt the Court, particularly Sir *John Saville*, Sir *Dudley Digges*, Sir *Edward Littleton*, and Sir *Thomas Wentworth*.
1632-33. The latter is made Preſident of the Council of *York*, and
Mar. 21. hath remarkable inſtructions given him.
1633. *Sigiſmund* III, King of *Poland*, dies.
Reg. 9. King *Charles* takes a journey to *Scotland*.
April 29. He arrives at *Edinburgh*;

And is crowned there. *Ann. C.*

The Parliament of *Scotland* meets, and grants the King, *May* 13.
for six years, a subsidy of 1*l.* 10*s.* of every pound-worth of *June* 15.
land; and also the sixteenth penny of all annual rents, or 18.
interest of money. 20.

King *Charles* makes use of some sort of violence to get two Acts passed in that Parliament, concerning his prerogative, and apparel of Kirkmen; and for ratifying the Acts touching Religion; with which the people are highly dissatisfied.

He departs from *Edinburgh*, and arrives at *Greenwich*.

Walter Curle, Bishop of *Winchester*, publishes Articles of *July* 6.
Inquiry, and an Oath to be tendered to the Church- 20.
Wardens, at the primary Visitation of his Diocese.

Dr. *William Laud* is nominated Archbishop of *Canterbury*, *Aug.* 6.
upon the death of Dr. *George Abbot*.

A sentence passes in the Star-Chamber against some persons who made bad soap.

The King forbids, by a proclamation, people selling tobacco without license.

Sir *Thomas Richardson*, Chief-Justice of the *King's-Bench*, is obliged to revoke an order made by him at the Assizes in *Somersetshire*, against wakes.

King *Charles* orders, that Divine Service should be per- *Oct.* 8.
formed in his Chapel at *Edinburgh*, according to the *English* Liturgy; and that his Privy-Council, and the Lords of the Sessions, *&c.* should receive the Communion kneeling.

Archbishop *Laud* writes several letters to the Bishops in *Scotland* about that matter.

The King renews and confirms the proclamation put out 18.
by his Father, concerning recreations on *Sundays*.

Placing the Communion-table altar-wise in St. *Gregory's* Church, *London*, occasions great debates, and a law-suit.

Gustavus Adolphus, King of *Sweden*, is slain at the battle *Nov.* 6.
of *Lutzen*.

Frederic, Elector *Palatine*, and King of *Bohemia*, dies. 19.

The silk manufacture is monopolized, and the manufacturers of it erected into a Company.

William Prynne, Esq; is fined 5000*l.* and condemned to 1633-34.
be set in the pillory, to have his ears cut off, and to be *Feb.* 7.
imprisoned during life, for his book, intitled *Histriomastix*.

Archbishop *Laud* forbids the *Dutch*, *Walloon*, and *French* 1634.
Congregations in *England*, the *English* Church at *Rotter-* *Reg.* 10.
dam,

Ann. C. *dam*, and the Regiments in the ſervice of the *United Pro-*
April, *vinces*, to make uſe of Preſbyterian Miniſters, and enjoins
&c. &c. them to conform to the Church of *England*.

June. *William Noy*, Eſq; Attorney-General, who had adviſed
Aug. 9. ſhip-money, dies. The learned Sir *Edward Coke* alſo dies.

Septemb. The *Swedes* are defeated at the battle of *Nordlinguen*.

Sept. 6. Sir *John Finch*, who was a fit inſtrument to promote
Oct. 16. ſhip-money, is made Chief-Juſtice of the *Common-Pleas*, in the room of Sir *Robert Heath*, who was removed.

20. The firſt writ for ſhip-money is ſent to the City of *London*: They preſent a petition againſt it; but, notwithſtanding, it is, ſhortly after, aſſeſſed and levied throughout the Kingdom.

Archbiſhop *Laud* gives ſome injunctions to the *French* and *Walloon* Churches. He ſets up pictures in the windows of his Chapel at *Lambeth*.

Novemb. Several pardons are granted to *Romiſh* Recuſants.

The uſe of ſedans, or chairs, was brought this year into *England*.

March 6. Dr. *William Juxon*, Biſhop of *London*, is made Lord High-Treaſurer.

1635. An information is laid in the Star-Chamber againſt ſe-
Reg. 11. veral hundreds of perſons, for reſiding in *London*, contrary
March. to the King's proclamation.

July 21. The King publiſhes a proclamation, commanding all perſons not to depart the Kingdom without his licence:

Auguſt. And renews a former Commiſſion to confirm the defective titles of ſuch as held lands of the Crown.

Sept. 29. *Thomas Parr*, aged 152 or 153 years, is preſented to the King.

Nov. 22. *Charles Lewis* Elector *Palatine*, and his brother Prince *Rupert*, come to *England*.

1636. By a proclamation, foreigners are forbid fiſhing on the
Reg. 12. coaſts of *England* and *Scotland*.

May 10. *Algernoon Percy* Earl of *Northumberland*, and High-Ad-
June. miral, ſinks ſome of the *Dutch* fiſhing-boats, and diſperſes the reſt: Whereupon the *Dutch* agree to give the King 30,000*l.* for this ſummer's fiſhing, and to pay him a yearly tribute for a licence for the future.

6. The Judges give it as their opinion, that for ſome ſeditious paſſages, in books publiſhed by *John Baſtwick*, M. D. and *Henry Burton*, B. D. no indictment could be found for treaſon, unleſs it was grounded upon ſtatute 25 *Edw.* III.

A difference ariſes between Archbiſhop *Laud*, and the two Univerſities, about his right to viſit them, as Metropolitan.

The

The King grants a Commiſſion to enquire about depopulations. *Ann. C. July* 19.

Ship-money is laid upon the whole Kingdom, which had hitherto been impoſed only upon the maritime towns.

King *Charles* gives inſtructions to the Biſhops in *Scotland*, about ſettling a Conformity in that Kingdom with the Church of *England*. *Oct.* 18.

The tax of ſhip-money brought the King, in the year 1636, 202,240 *l.* ſterling.

The King cauſes the Judges opinion concerning ſhip-money to be publiſhed, and inrolled in all the Courts of *Weſtminſter*. 1636-37. *February.*

A proclamation is iſſued out, forbidding the Preſbyterians to go and ſettle in *America*: And an order of Council made againſt the tranſporting them thither. *Oliver Cromwell* was one of thoſe who were actually imbarked for *America*. 1637. *Reg.* 13. *April* 30. *May* 1.

John Williams, Biſhop of *Lincoln*, is, by ſentence of the Star-Chamber, ſuſpended, condemned to impriſonment, and to a fine of 8000 *l.* for tampering with witneſſes. And *Lambert Okhadeſton*, Maſter of *Weſtminſter-School*, is fined 10,000 *l.* for ſome letters of his to that Biſhop. *June* 12.

William Prynne, *Henry Burton*, and *John Baſtwick*, are queſtioned in the Star-Chamber, for books publiſhed by them. They are condemned to a 5000 *l.* fine each, to have their ears cut off, and their noſes ſlit, and to be impriſoned in *Caernarvon*, *Launceſton*, and *Lancaſter* Caſtles; from whence they were afterwards removed, *Prynne* from *Caernarvon* to *Jerſey*, *Baſtwick* from *Launceſton* to *Scilly*, and *Burton* from *Lancaſter* to *Guernſey*. 14. 30.

The firſt tumult happens at *Edinburgh*, upon reading the Liturgy, ſent down there by the King's order. *July* 23.

Another tumult is raiſed there; and the Malecontents preſent two petitions. *Oct.* 18. 19.

Several proclamations are publiſhed in *Scotland* to ſuppreſs thoſe tumults. *Dec.* 7, *&c.*

John Hampden, Eſq; is proſecuted for refuſing to pay ſhip-money, and caſt. *Nov.* 6. *Dec.* 18.

Such Miniſters as refuſed to read the *Book of Sports* on *Sundays*, are proſecuted. 1637-38. *February.*

A rigorous ſentence is paſſed upon *John Lilburn*, for writing in *Prynne's* behalf, to whom he had been Clerk.

The King ſends a proclamation into *Scotland*, to quell the troubles there. The Malecontents draw up a proteſtation, erect four tables, and ſubſcribe a covenant. 19.

The King appoints *James* Marquiſs of *Hamilton* to be his High-Commiſſioner into *Scotland*. 1638. The *Reg.* 14.

Ann. C.
May 16. The Marquiſs arrives in *Edinburgh*, and, after having
20. founded the Covenanters, lets the King know, that he
must either yield to the *Scots* demands, or prepare for war.
June 6. The King reſolves upon war, and orders the Marquiſs to
11. muſter the Malecontents.
28. His Majeſty's declaration is publiſhed at *Edinburgh*: In
anſwer to which, the Malecontents draw up a proteſtation.
July 6. The Marquiſs returns to *England*, to receive the King's
27. orders: King *Charles* gives him freſh inſtructions.
Aug. 10. The Marquiſs, upon his return to *Scotland*, finds things
in a worſe condition than before.
19. An order is made againſt tranſporting Miniſters into
America, without the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*'s, and the
Biſhop of *London*'s licence.
25. The Marquiſs of *Hamilton* takes a ſecond journey into
England.
Sept. 9. The King gives him new inſtructions, wherein he abates
conſiderably of his former demands; and requires the *Scots*
17. to ſign the old Confeſſion of Faith.
The Marquiſs of *Hamilton* returns to *Edinburgh*, and
publiſhes his Majeſty's proclamation, wherein he revoked,
in ambiguous terms, the orders he had ſent into *Scotland*:
The Malecontents form a proteſtation againſt it, and raiſe
objections againſt the oath annexed to the Confeſſion of
Faith.
22. The High-Commiſſioner convenes a General Aſſembly
to meet at *Glaſgow* the 21ſt of *November* 1638, and a Par-
liament at *Edinburgh* the 15th of *May* 1639.
Oct. 30. *Mary* of *Medicis* the Queen's mother arrives in *England*.
Nov. 3. An order of Council is iſſued out for collecting the ar-
rears of ſhip-money.
21. The General Aſſembly of the Church of *Scotland* begins
to meet at *Glaſgow*.
27. There is read in it a *Declinator* ſent by the Biſhops.
28. The High-Commiſſioner ſeeing the Covenanters inſolent
behaviour, reſolves to diſſolve the Aſſembly.
29. Accordingly, it is diſſolved by proclamation; but the
Aſſembly of the Kirk draws a proteſtation againſt it: And
continuing to ſit, notwithſtanding their diſſolution, deprive
the Biſhops, and aboliſh Epiſcopal Government in *Scotland*.
Archibald Campbel, Marquiſs of *Argyle*, joins the Male-
contents.
Dec. 8. The King forbids by a proclamation, the acknowledging
18. the authority of the General Aſſembly: But the Aſſembly
makes a proteſtation againſt it.

The

The Marquis of *Hamilton* sends the King word, that *Ann. C.* there was no way to reduce *Scotland* to obedience, but by sending a fleet to lie in the *Frith* to block up their trade, and then to follow with a royal army.

By an order of Counsil, all the Counties are commanded to find a certain number of troops for the war with *Scotland*. 16.

Thomas Baron *Coventry*, Lord-Keeper, dies; and is succeeded by Sir *John Finch*. 1638-9. *Jan.* 14.

The King summons the Nobility to meet him at *York*, each, with as many horse as he could raise; and several orders are issued out to the several Counties for raising troops. 26.

Thomas Viscount *Strafford*, Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*, writes a letter to the King, about the preparations for the war with *Scotland*. *Feb.* 10.

The Archbishops of *Canterbury* and *York* send a circular letter to the Clergy, to exhort them to contribute freely to the war against the *Scots*. The Queen writes to the Papists upon the same account. 11.

The *Scots* disperse a declaration [or kind of *Manifesto*] in *England*. 14.

King *Charles* publishes a declaration, to justify his going to war with *Scotland*. 27.

1639.

He sets out for the *North*: *Mar.* 27.

And arrives at *York*. *Reg.* 15.

The *Scots* seize *Dumbarton*, where the King intended to have some troops landed from *Ireland*: They also take *Aberdeen*. 30.

The Privy-Council writes letters to several gentlemen, requiring them to lend the King money. *April* 9.

The King issues a proclamation to revoke sundry monopolies, but it is not put in execution.

He goes from *York* towards *Newcastle*, and then incamps near *Berwick*. 29.

His General was the Earl of *Arundel*, and the Earl of *Essex* Lieutenant-General.

The *Scots* residing in *Ireland* are forced to take an oath of allegiance, whereby they abjured the covenant. *May.*

Henry Rich Earl of *Holland*, General of the King's horse, enters *Scotland*, and reads there a proclamation from the King. 31.

He enters *Scotland* a second time, with four thousand men, and retreats in a hurry. *June* 3.

By an order of Council, the *Scots* living in *England* are enjoined 5.

Ann. C. enjoined to take the ſame oath as had been taken by thoſe in *Ireland*.

The King by the advice of ſome of his friends, reſolves to ſtand upon the defenſive.

6. The *Scots* ſue for peace; and the King agreeing to it,
11. negotiations are ſet on foot.
18. A doubtful peace is concluded, containing ſeven articles of pacification; and the *Scots* disband their army.

July. King *Charles* gains the Earl of *Montroſe* to his ſide.

Aug. 1. He arrives at *Theobald*'s, from his *Scottiſh* expedition.

6. He writes a letter to the Archbiſhop of St. *Andrews*, by which it appears that he intended only to amuſe the *Scots*.

10. The *Scottiſh* Biſhops ſign a *Declinator*.

11. A General Aſſembly meets at *Edinburgh*; wherein the
15. Earl of *Traquair*, the King's High-Commiſſioner, approves of the Covenant.

Sept. 7. A *Spaniſh* fleet is attacked by the *Dutch* in the *Channel*,
8. and diſperſed.

Nov. 10. The King renews his orders for the levying of ſhip-money.

30. The Privy-Council iſſues out injunctions for paying in the arrears of the ſame.

Dec. 15. The Parliament of *Scotland* meets, and paſſes ſeveral acts
18. diſagreeable to the King.

It is prorogued; whereupon the members make a declaration, That the High-Commiſſioner had not power to prorogue the Parliament upon the King's letter, without the conſent of the Parliament itſelf.

They break up, however, but leave a Committee, to preſent a remonſtrance to the King, and attend his anſwer. The King refuſes audience to the Deputies that brought this remonſtrance.

27. *Algernoon Percy*, Earl of *Northumberland*, Lord High-Admiral, is ordered to get 20 ſhips fitted out, beſides thoſe that were to be ſet forth by the City of *London*.

A war between *England* and *Scotland* is fomented by the Court of *France*, and by ſeveral of the *Engliſh* Nobility and Clergy.

1639-40. The Earl of *Northumberland* is appointed Captain-Gene-
Feb. 14. ral, and the Earl of *Strafford* Lieutenant-General of the army that was to be employed againſt *Scotland*.

The Lord *William Hamilton*, brother to the Marquiſs, is made Earl of *Laneric*.

The Committee of *Edinburgh* obtains leave of the King
10. to ſend him their Deputies: Theſe Deputies preſent two petitions to his Majeſty.

They desire him to let the Parliament meet, and confirm the acts of the Assembly. The King objects to them, that their powers were not full enough. *Ann. C. Mar.* 2.

He calls his fourth Parliament in *England*, to meet the 13th of *April*. 4.

The Council of *England* resolves upon a war with *Scotland*: The King publishes a declaration to justify this second war. 11.

He insists, chiefly, upon a letter without date, written by the Malecontents to the King of *France*. 1640.

Orders are sent to the several chief towns and counties, to raise soldiers, and to furnish them with coat and conduct-money. *Mar.* 26. *Reg.* 16.

A proclamation is published against libellous and seditious pamphlets, and discourses from *Scotland*. 30.

Ireland grants the King four subsidies, for the war with *Scotland*.

Sir *John Finch*, Lord-Keeper, is made Baron of *Fordwich*. *April* 7.

The patents for monopolies are called in a second time by the King. 10.

The Lord *Lowdon*, one of the *Scottish* Deputies, is committed to the *Tower*, for being one of those who subscribed the letter above-mentioned to the King of *France*. 11.

The Parliament meets: The King makes a speech to both Houses, to demand money for the war with *Scotland*. 13.

Several petitions are presented to the Commons about Grievances. 16.

The Commons take them into consideration. 17.

They enter into a resolution about the business of Sir *John Finch*, Speaker in the last Parliament, who refused to put the question. 20.

The King sends for both Houses to *Whitehall*, and, in a speech made by the Lord-Keeper, requires them to dispatch the supply. *April* 21.

But, notwithstanding, the Commons proceed in the examination of grievances. 22.

The House of Lords, in a conference, sollicits the Commons to go about the supply: The Commons vote this to be a breach of privilege, and stick to the grievances. 23, 24. 27, &c.

There was then a very full House, no less than 405 Members. 30.

King *Charles* sends a message to them requiring a speedy answer. *May* 2.

He

Ann. G. 4. He propoſes to them, in another meſſage, to aboliſh utterly ſhip-money, if they would grant him twelve ſubſidies.

The Houſe has a debate about it till ſix at night, and come to no reſolution, but put it off till next day.

May 5. The King diſſolves the Parliament, and publiſhes a declaration containing the cauſes of its diſſolution.

6. Several Members of the Houſe of Commons are impriſoned.

7. The King continues the Convocation, notwithſtanding the Parliament's diſſolution.

An order of Council is made for proceeding againſt ſuch High-Sheriffs as neglected to raiſe and collect the ſhip-money.

11. The mob beſets *Lambeth-Houſe*, and highly threatens the Archbiſhop.

16. An order is made for impriſoning thoſe who refuſed to pay coat and conduct-money.

Some Aldermen of *London* are committed to priſon, for refuſing to give in the names of ſuch perſons as were able to lend the King money.

Circular letters are ſent about, to require people to pay in ſhip-money betimes.

20. The Council appoints a Committee to preſs the payment of ſhip-money with all expedition.

29. The Convocation riſes, after having made 17 Canons, injoined a new oath, and granted the King ſix ſubſidies, payable in ſix years; being 4 *s.* in the pound every year, according to the valuation of the benefices in the King's books.

An order is ſent to the Lord-Mayor of *London*, to raiſe 4000 men.

July 1. Commiſſions of array are ſent into every county.

5. The Lord-Mayor and Aldermen of *London* are ordered to be proſecuted, for neglecting to levy ſhip-money.

The King buys all the pepper upon credit, and ſells it again for ready money.

28. He ſeizes the bullion in the *Tower*, belonging to the Merchants, and borrows afterwards, of the Merchants concerned in the Mint, 40,000 *l.* upon the credit of the Cuſtoms.

A project is formed to debaſe the coin, by mixing ſilver and copper together; but it is not put in execution.

Aug. 20. The *Scots* army enters *England*, and publiſhes two manifeſto's.

23. The King arrives at *York*, having ſet out from *London* the 20th.

The

The *Scots* force a paſs over the *Tyne* at *Newburn*, and become maſters of *Newcaſtle*. *Ann. C.* 27.

The King is at *North-Allerton*: He returns to *York*, whither the *Engliſh* troops retire likewiſe. 28. 29.

Writs are ſent to the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, to attend the King in the North, according to their tenures.

The *Scots* ſend a petition to the King, and ſue for peace. *Sept.* 4.

The King ſummons all the Nobility to meet him at *York* the 24th of *September*, and give him their advice upon the ſituation of his affairs. 7. 8.

The *Scots* ſend him their demands.

Twelve Lords petition his Majeſty to call a Parliament.

Other petitions are preſented to him by the City of *London* and the *Yorkſhire* Gentry, to the ſame purpoſe. 10. 11.

A great Council of Lords meets at *York*, to conſider of means how to get the *Scots* out of the Kingdom; which continues ſitting till the 28th of *October*. 24.

The King calls a Parliament to meet the 3d of *November*.

The Lords adviſe the King to make peace with the *Scots*.

They borrow, upon their own credit, 200,000 *l.* of the City of *London*, to pay the King's army.

The King appoints Commiſſioners to treat with the *Scots* about a peace. 29.

The treaty begins at *Rippon*. *Oct.* 1.

The preliminaries for the maintenance of the *Scotch* army, *&c.* are agreed upon. 16.

The treaty is, by mutual conſent, removed from *Rippon* to *London*. 23.

A truce is concluded between the *Engliſh* and *Scots*. 26.

BOOK XX.

The Second Part of the Reign of CHARLES I.

THE 5th Parliament of King *Charles* meets. *Nov.* 3.

The King makes a ſpeech to both Houſes, in which he deſires them to think of means to drive the *Scots* out of the Kingdom.

A vaſt number of petitions about grievances are preſented to the Commons, who apply themſelves entirely to the redreſſing of them.

Ann. C. The Houſe appoints a Committee to draw up a remonſtrance, or repreſentation of the ſtate of the Kingdom.

9.

11. *Thomas Wentworth*, Earl of *Strafford*, is impeached by the Commons of High-treaſon, and ſent to the *Tower* the 22d.

13. *John Digby*, Earl of *Briſtol*, gives both Houſes a relation of his negotiation with the *Scots*.

16. *John Williams*, Biſhop of *Lincoln*, is releaſed out of the *Tower*, and takes his ſeat in Parliament.

17. A faſt is appointed.

20. All the members of the Houſe of Commons are ordered to receive the Communion.

Dec. 7. The Commons vote, that ſhip-money is contrary to the laws of the Realm, *&c.*

Sir *Francis Windebank*, Secretary of State, being complained of in the Houſe of Commons for favouring Popery, flies into *France*, *January* 11.

11. The inhabitants of *London* preſent a petition to the Commons againſt Biſhops, containing twenty-eight grievances.

16. The Canons made by the late Convocation, and the ſubſidies, or benevolence, granted by the Clergy to the King, are voted illegal.

17. The *Scottiſh* Commiſſioners preſent to the Lords articles of impeachment againſt Archbiſhop *Laud*, who is accordingly accuſed by the Commons of High-treaſon.

18. *Matthew Wren*, Biſhop of *Ely*, is obliged to give 10,000 *l.* bail

22. The Lord-Keeper, *Finch*, makes a ſpeech in his own juſtification, before the Houſe of Commons; but being, notwithſtanding, declared a traitor, he flies into *Holland*.

Sir *Edward Littleton* is made Lord-Keeper in his room.

Three of the Judges, Sir *John Bramſton*, Sir *Humphrey Davenport*, and Juſtice *Crawley*, are impeached.

1640-41. A petition is ſent from *Kent* againſt the Biſhops.

Jan. 13. The articles of impeachment againſt *John*, Lord *Finch*,

14. are carried up to the Houſe of Lords.

16. The Houſe of Lords orders, That Divine Service be performed, as it is appointed by the acts of Parliament of this Realm.

19. The Commons ſend up to the Lords a bill for triennial Parliaments.

Some members of the Houſe of Commons are expelled, on account of their having been concerned in monopolies.

23. Several Miniſters, particularly *Peter Smart*, preſent petitions againſt irregularities in the government of the Church.

A diſ-

A diſpute happens between the King and the Houſe of Commons, about *John Goodman*, a Jeſuit. *Ann. C.*

Commiſſioners are ordered to be ſent into all counties, for defacing pictures, and all other relicks of idolatry in Churches.

The King ſends for both Houſes to *Whitehall*, and propoſes ſome reſtrictions to the bill concerning triennial Parliaments. 25.

Both Houſes preſent a remonſtrance to his Majeſty againſt *Goodman*. 29.

The King returns an anſwer to their remonſtrance. *Feb.* 2.

The Commons reſolve to give the *Scots* 300,000 *l.* 3.

Clergymen are ordered to be left out of the Commiſſion of the Peace: And, from this time, till the end of our inteſtine diviſions, above 7000 of the Clergy are deprived of their livings, and other preferments. 5.

The Queen ſends a meſſage to the Commons about the raiſing money by the Recuſants, and the Pope's Nuncio.

The King communicates to the Lords the marriage of the Princeſs *Mary*, his daughter, with the Prince of *Orange*. 10.

Sir *Robert Berkley*, one of the Judges, is impeached, and taken off the Bench, to be committed to priſon. 12.

The King paſſes the act for triennial Parliaments.

The Lords order the record in the *Exchequer* of the judgment in Mr. *Hampden's* caſe concerning ſhip-money, to be annulled: And the ſame is vacated by Act of Parliament. *Feb.* 15. 26.

Articles of impeachment againſt Archbiſhop *Laud* are carried up to the Lords; and he is committed to the Tower. 26. *Mar.* 1.

The Commons vote againſt the Biſhops ſitting in Parliament. 12.

Articles of accuſation are ſent up by the Commons, to the Houſe of Lords, againſt Dr. *John Coſin* Prebendary of *Durham*. 15.

Both Houſes petition the King to remove the Papiſts from Court. 16.

The Houſe of Peers returns thanks to the twelve Lords, who had petitioned the King at *York* to call a Parliament.

The trial of the Earl of *Strafford* begins; but there being no ſufficient cauſe found for his legal condemnation, he is voted guilty of High-treaſon. 22. *Reg.* 17. 1641.

The Commons read thrice in one day a bill of attainder againſt that Earl, and ſend it up to the Lords. *April* 21.

They vote for aboliſhing the Council of the *North*, or the Court of *York*. 24.

Ann. C. A petition from the inhabitants of *London*, ſubſcribed by 20,000 perſons, is preſented to the Parliament.

26. A bill is brought in for laying fines on the Members of the late Convocation.

May 1. The King makes a ſpeech to the Parliament in favour of the Earl of *Strafford*.

3. *John Pym*, Eſq; diſcovers to the Houſe of Commons a plot to ſeduce the army; the Houſe doth thereupon ſubſcribe a proteſtation.

3 *and* 4. The rabble flocks to *Weſtminſter*, and demands juſtice againſt the Earl of *Strafford*.

4. The Earl finding the King was in great anxiety about paſſing the bill for his attainder, he writes a letter to his Majeſty to perſuade him to paſs it.

The Commons examine into the plot for ſeducing the army.

8. The bill of attainder againſt the Earl of *Strafford* paſſes in the Houſe of Lords.

10. The King paſſes it by commiſſion, with another bill for the continuance of the Parliament, that it might not be diſſolved, without the conſent of both Houſes.

11. He writes to the Lords in behalf of the Earl of *Strafford*.

12. *Thomas Wentworth*, Earl of *Strafford*, is beheaded.

13. The Commons explain a clauſe in their proteſtation.

19. *William Juxon*, Biſhop of *London*, reſigns his place of High-Treaſurer.

25. The Cuſtomers offer 150,000*l.* for an act of oblivion, which offer is accepted.

Robert Sidney, Earl of *Leiceſter*, is appointed by the King Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*.

June 7. The Lords vote, that the Biſhops ſhould continue to ſit in Parliament; but the Commons proceed upon the bill for aboliſhing Epiſcopacy.

9. The Commons ſend up to the Lords a bill for regulating the Council, and taking away the Star-Chamber.

The King calls up to the Houſe of Peers *George*, Lord *Digby*, ſon of the Earl of *Briſtol*.

12. A bill is brought in, to reſtore the Earl of *Strafford*'s children in blood and honour, and for ſettling his eſtate upon his heirs.

14. *Henry Wilmot*, Captain *Aſhburnham*, and Captain *Pollard*, are committed to priſon, about the plot for ſeducing the army.

15. The Commons vote, that all Deans, Chapters, Canons, *&c.* ſhould be aboliſhed.

The

The witneſſes about the plot to ſeduce the army are examined. *Ann. C.* 16.

The King gives his aſſent to a bill, whereby tonnage and poundage were granted him for a time. 22.

Count *Roſetti*, the Pope's Nuncio, is ordered to be brought to the Bar of the Houſe of Commons; but he abſconds, and departs for *Rome*. 24.

Father *Philips*, the Queen's Confeſſor, is alſo accuſed. 26.

A vote is paſſed for aboliſhing the High-Commiſſion Court.

The King gives his aſſent to a bill for a poll-tax. *July* 3.

As alſo to two bills, for taking away the Star-Chamber and High-Commiſſion Courts. 5.

Articles of accuſation are brought in againſt the Judges. 6.

The Commons paſs ſome votes about the impriſonment of the Members of Parliament. 8.

Matthew Wren, Biſhop of *Ely*, is impeached. 20.

Robert Devereux, Earl of *Eſſex*, is made Lord High-Chamberlain, in the room of *Philip Herbert*, Earl of *Pembroke*. 23.

The King communicates to both Houſes the engagement he had entered into with *Philip* IV, King of *Spain*, to lend him 4000 men, part of the *Iriſh* army, and the reſt to the King of *France*; but the Parliament finds means to hinder it. 28.

The Houſe of Lords rejects the bill for taking the proteſtation. 30.

An accuſation is brought by the Commons againſt 13 Biſhops, who had aſſiſted at the laſt Convocation. *Aug.* 1.

Both the *Engliſh* and *Scottiſh* armies are diſbanded. 6.

The peace is concluded between *England* and *Scotland*. 7.

The King gives his aſſent to a bill about Knighthood; to one for regulating the Clerks of the market, and to another for the certainty of foreſts, and of the limits and bounds of the foreſts, *&c.* 10.

He ſets out the ſame day for *Scotland*, and in four days arrives thither.

Mary of *Medicis*, the Queen's mother, departs from *England*.

The Parliament ſends a Committee into *Scotland* to watch the King. 17.

The Commons vote againſt the monopoly of ſoap; and about the plantation of *Londonderry*, in *Ireland*; and againſt the King's reſolution of lending the *Iriſh* army to the Kings of *France* or *Spain*. 26.

Ann. C. *Sept.* 1. The Houſe hath a great debate about altering the Common-Prayer-Book; ſhortly after, they vote againſt innovations and images.

8. A declaration upon this matter is ſent up by the Commons to the Lords, who return no anſwer.

9. The Lords communicate to the Commons their order of the 16th of *January*, concerning Divine Service; the Commons order their declaration to be forthwith publiſhed, and put in execution, throughout the Kingdom.

Both Houſes adjourn to the 20th of *October*, and appoint Committees to take care of affairs during the receſs.

October. A conſpiracy is diſcovered in *Scotland* againſt *James* Marquiſs of *Hamilton*, *Archibald Campbel* Earl of *Argyle*, and *William Hamilton* Earl of *Lanerick*.

20. The Parliament meeting again, deſires a guard of the Earl of *Eſſex*, whom the King had made General on the South of *Trent*.

22. They puſh the bill for excluding the Biſhops from their votes in Parliament.

23. The Rebellion breaks out in *Ireland*.

30. The Commons paſs ſome votes about the monopoly of ſoap.

William Seymour Marquiſs of *Hertford*, is made Governor to Prince *Charles*.

The Lord Juſtices of *Ireland* iſſue out a proclamation, to vindicate King *Charles* of an aſperſion thrown upon him, that he was concerned in the *Iriſh* rebellion.

Nov. 1. The Parliament votes large ſums, for ſecuring *Ireland*,

4. and ſuppreſſing the Rebellion there.

5. A remonſtrance of the State of the Kingdom paſſes in

22. the Houſe of Commons by nine voices only.

25. The King returns from *Scotland* to *London*, and is received with great demonſtrations of joy.

27. He diſmiſſes the Parliament's guard, that had been given by the Earl of *Eſſex*. The Earl reſigns his commiſſion of Captain-General.

Dec. 1. The remonſtrance is preſented to the King; to which his Majeſty returns an anſwer ſome time after.

Both Houſes reſolve never to conſent to a toleration of Popery in *Ireland*.

10. The King iſſues out a proclamation, ordering that the uſe of the Common-Prayer-Book ſhould be continued.

14. He makes a ſpeech to the Parliament, wherein he propoſes an accommodation concerning the Bill for preſſing ſoldiers; both Houſes vote this to be a breach of privilege.

Several

Several inhabitants of *London* preſent a petition againſt Colonel *Lunsford* Lieutenant of the *Tower*, put in the room of Sir *William Balfour*, whom the King had diſplaced. *Ann. C.* 23.

The King removes *Lunsford* from that poſt, and gives it to *Montjoy Blount* Earl of *Newport*, whom he alſo removes, immediately after, and gives that place to Sir *John Byron*. *Dec.* 26. 27.

There is a tumult and a great concourſe of people at *Weſtminſter*, crying out againſt the Biſhops.

About this time the name of *Roundheads* came to be uſed.

A proclamation is put out againſt thoſe tumults. 28.

The Biſhops preſent a proteſtation to the King, againſt all laws to be made without their concurrence: His Majeſty communicates it to the Lords, who ſend it down to the Commons. Whereupon the Commons accuſe the twelve Biſhops of High-treaſon, and they are ſent to the *Tower*. 30.

An act of the Common-Council of the City of *London* is paſſed for ſuppreſſing the tumults. 31.

The King iſſues out a proclamation, wherein he declares the *Iriſh*, Rebels and Traitors. 1641-2. *Jan.* 1.

The King's Printer is ordered to print but forty copies of it, and ſend them to Sir *Edward Nicholas* Secretary of State. *Jan.* 2.

The King orders *Edward Montague* Lord *Kimbolton*, a Peer, and five Members of the Houſe of Commons, *viz.* *Denzil Hollis*, Sir *Arthur Haſlerig*, *John Pym*, *John Hampden*, and *William Stroud* to be accuſed of High-treaſon. 3.

King *Charles* goes himſelf to the Houſe of Commons, to demand the five impeached Members. 4.

The Commons vote that by ſo doing, the King had violated the privileges of Parliament. 5.

They appoint a Committee to ſit at *Guildhall*, and adjourn till the 11th; the King comes to *Guildhall*, to demand the five Members.

The Lord-Mayor and Common-Council preſent a petition to his Majeſty, wherein they repreſent their fears. 7.

A proclamation is iſſued out for apprehending the five accuſed Members. 8.

The King retires from *London* to *Hampton-Court*, and then to *Windſor*. 10.

The Commons meet again. 11.

King *Charles* ſends two meſſages to them, declaring that he deſiſted from his proceedings againſt the five Members. 12. 14.

The Parliament receives information, that *George* Lord

Ann. C. *Digby* was in arms at *Kingſton* upon *Thames*, attended with ſeveral Officers: Whereupon both Houſes uſe precautions to hinder the King from becoming Maſter of *Portſmouth*.

They ſend Sir *John Hotham* to ſecure *Hull*, without acquainting the King with it.

George Lord *Digby* withdraws out of the Kingdom.

13. The Sheriffs of *London* and *Middleſex* are ordered to ſet a guard about the *Tower*.

15. The Commons petition to have Sir *John Byron* removed from the Lieutenancy of the *Tower*.

Sir *Edward Herbert*, Attorney-General, is impeached by the Commons.

The *Scotch* Commiſſioners who were come to treat about ſending 10,000 of their own forces to *Ireland*, offer their mediation: The Parliament accepts it, but it is rejected by the King.

20. The King ſends a meſſage to both Houſes, wherein he makes them ſome propoſals: The Commons return for anſwer, that to enable them to do what his Majeſty deſired, it was neceſſary, that the *Tower*, and other principal forts of the Kingdom, and the whole Militia ſhould be put into the hands of ſuch perſons as the Parliament might confide in, and as ſhould be recommended by both Houſes of Parliament.

24. The *Scots* make ſome propoſals for ſending 2500 men into *Ireland*.

28. His Majeſty ſends an anſwer to the Commons, wherein he ſeems to be willing to grant what they deſired.

Feb. 7. He denies that ever he gave any paſſes for *Ireland*.

11. Sir *John Byron* is removed from the Lieutenancy of the *Tower*, which is given to Sir *John Conyers*.

14. The King paſſes by commiſſion, the Bill for taking away the Biſhops votes; and another for preſſing of ſoldiers.

The Queen goes to *Holland*, with the Crown-jewels, to buy arms and ammunition.

March. The buſineſs of the Militia, which was taken into conſideration *Jan.* 20, is debated between the King and the two Houſes in this month, and till the end of *May*; upon the whole, the King will not part with the right of diſpoſing of the Militia.

The King determines to go and reſide at *York* for ſome time, and acquaints both Houſes with his deſign.

Mar. 5. The Lords and Commons make an ordinance about the
Reg. 18. Militia.

1642. King *Charles* propoſes to go in perſon to *Ireland*, and head his army.

He

He comes before *Hull*, wherein Sir *John Hotham*, the Governor, refuſes him admittance. *Ann. C.* *April* 8.

Both Houſes petition the King to deſiſt from his intention of going into *Ireland*. 23. 28.

His Majeſty tries to become maſter of *Hull* by force or ſurprize. *May*.

He ſummons the tenants in chief in *Yorkſhire*, to appear at *York*, *May* 12, and deſires them to grant him a guard.

The Lords and Commons preſent a remonſtrance, or manifeſto, to him: He returns an anſwer to the ſame. 19.

The Commons vote, that the King intended to make war upon his Parliament. 20.

The Earl of *Briſtol* endeavours in vain to procure an accommodation, and to prevent a war.

King *Charles* concludes a peace with *Portugal*. 22.

The Lord Keeper *Littleton* ſends the Great Seal to the King, and goes to him the next day.

The two Houſes petition the King, to disband the horſe and foot raiſed as a guard for him. 23.

The Parliament ſends nineteen propoſitions to the King; which he rejects, and puts out a long anſwer to them. *June* 2.

His Majeſty receives arms and ammunition from *Holland*.

Both Houſes publiſh propoſals for the borrowing of money and plate for the defence of the Kingdom. The King forbids the Citizens to lend them any. 10.

The Lords that were with the King at *York* promiſe to ſtand by him. 13.

The Commons draw up articles of impeachment againſt nine of the Lords that were with his Majeſty; and the Houſe of Peers paſſed this ſentence, that they ſhould not ſit or vote in the houſe, during the preſent Parliament. 15. 27.

The King grants ſeveral commiſſions of array for levying troops.

Both Houſes draw up a declaration againſt thoſe commiſſions. *July* 1.

The King iſſues out a proclamation concerning the Militia. He beſieges *Hull*, but without ſucceſs. 4.

He miſcarries likewiſe in his deſign of making himſelf maſter of the fleet.

The Commons paſs votes for raiſing an army, to be commanded by *Robert Devereux*, Earl of *Eſſex*, who had left the King's ſervice, and been turned out of his place of Lord-Chamberlain. 12.

Francis Ruſſel, Earl of *Bedford*, is appointed General of the horſe. 14.

He

Ann. C. He is routed at *Sherburne*, the 6th of the next month, by *William Seymour*, Marquiſs of *Hertford*.

18. The Parliament forbids the publiſhing the King's proclamation about the Militia.

Auguſt. *George Goring*, Governor of *Portſmouth*, declares for the King; whereupon, the Parliament orders *Portſmouth* to be blocked up.

His Majeſty publiſhes a manifeſto, and orders by proclamation all men that could bear arms to repair to him at *Nottingham*.

8. Both Houſes declare thoſe traitors that ſhould aſſiſt the King.

10. Sir *Richard Gurney*, Lord-Mayor of *London*, is impeached

12. by the Commons. Sentence is paſſed upon him.

18. Colonel *Goring* ſurrenders *Portſmouth* to the Parliament.

20. The gates of *Coventry* are ſhut againſt the King.

21. *Dover* is ſurprized by one *Drake* for the Parliament.

BOOK XXI.

Containing the third and laſt Part of the Reign of CHARLES I.

22. KING *Charles* ſets up his ſtandard at *Nottingham*.

25. He ſends a meſſage to the Parliament, by *Thomas Wriothesley*, Earl of *Southampton*, and others, in which he

28. propoſes a peace; the two Houſes return him no ſatisfactory anſwer.

Sept. 1. Several meſſages paſs between the King and the Parliament about this matter.

27. 9. *Robert Devereux*, Earl of *Eſſex*, ſets out from *London*, to head the Parliament-forces.

19. The King makes a ſolemn proteſtation at the head of his army.

He marches to *Shrewsbury*, where he forms an army of 14000 men; and receives large ſums of money from *London*, and money and plate from *Oxford*.

22. A fight happens at *Powick*-Bridge near *Worceſter*, where Prince *Rupert* gets the advantage.

The Earl of *Eſſex* poſſeſſes himſelf of *Worceſter*, and afterwards ſecures *Hereford*, *Glouceſter*, and *Briſtol*.

27. The King publiſhes a declaration upon the two Houſes refuſing to treat about a peace.

The

The Parliament publiſhes alſo a declaration, and proteſtation about the war. *Ann. C.* *Oct.* 22.

The King advances towards *London*, and is followed by the Earl of *Eſſex*.

The battle of *Keinton* or *Edge-hill* is fought; in which the King got the victory, though it was challenged by the Parliament. After it, the King takes *Banbury* Caſtle, and withdraws to *Oxford*. 23.

The King iſſues out a proclamation, in which he offers a pardon to the Cities of *London* and *Weſtminſter*. *Oct.* 27.

Both Houſes petition the King for a ſafe-conduct, to come and treat with him about a peace. *Nov.* 3.

The Parliament's Deputies repair to *Colebrook*. 11.

The King beats the quarters of ſome of the Parliament's forces at *Brentford*; but the Earl of *Eſſex*, and ſome of the *London* trained bands, ſtop his progreſs. And he returns to *Oxford*. 12.

A fight at *Piercebrig* between *William Cavendiſh*, Earl of *Newcaſtle*, and *Ferdinando* Lord *Fairfax*. They have another engagement at *Tadcaſter*. *Dec.* 1.

Commiſſary-General *Wilmot* takes *Marlborough* for the King. 5.

Sir *William Waller* takes *Farnham*-Caſtle and *Winchester* for the Parliament. 13.

The two Houſes publiſh a declaration, in which they threaten to make uſe of repriſals, if the King put any of his priſoners of war to death, whom he had cauſed to be tried and condemned. 17.

John Lilburn was one of the condemned priſoners.

Waller takes *Chicheſter* for the Parliament.

Aſſociations are formed in ſome Counties for the King, and in others for the Parliament. 29.

The General Aſſembly of the Kirk of *Scotland* preſents a petition to the King, in which they ſue for uniformity of Church Government. 1642-43. *Jan.* 4.

An order is made by the Parliament, for treating ſuch as ſhould come from the King's quarters to *London* as ſpies. 16.

Ralph Lord *Hopton* defeats, near *Bodmin*, a body of Parliamentarians, commanded by *Ruthen*; and, three days after, makes himſelf maſter of *Saltaſh*. 19.

Sir *Hugh Cholmley*, one of the Parliament's Officers, defeats and takes priſoner Colonel *Slingsby* at *Gisborough*.

Sir *Thomas Fairfax* becomes maſter of *Leeds*. 23.

The negotiations for a peace are begun at *Oxford*, and continue till the middle of *April*. 28.

The

Ann. C. The Parliament borrows money, for carrying on the
30. war in *Ireland*.
Febr. 2. Prince *Rupert* takes *Cirencester* by ſtorm.
22. Queen *Henrietta Maria* arrives from *Holland* in *Burlington* bay in *Yorkſhire*.
Mar. 1. *Lichfield* is taken for the Parliament; and *Robert* Lord *Brooke*, one of the Parliament's Officers, ſlain.
7. The Queen arrives at *York*.
The ſame day a plot is formed by *Robert Yeomans*, &c. for delivering *Briſtol* to the King.
An ordinance is made for fortifying *London* by lines and out-works.
19. A battle is fought at *Salt-Heath* near *Stafford*, wherein *Spencer Compton*, Earl of *Northampton*, is ſlain.
Sir *William Waller* relieves *Glouceſter*, beſieged by ſome of the Royaliſts; and afterwards takes *Chepſtow* and *Monmouth*.
The King returns an anſwer to the petition of the General Aſſembly of the Kirk of *Scotland*.
1643. The Parliament makes an ordinance for ſequeſtring the
Reg. 19. eſtates of Delinquents.
Apr. 1. *James Butler*, Marquiſs of *Ormond*, defeats the *Iriſh* Rebels at *Roſs*.
3. Prince *Rupert*, who was ſent to eſtabliſh a communication between *York* and *Oxford*, takes *Birmingham*.
4. A petition from ſome Proteſtant Officers in *Ireland* is preſented to the Lords Juſtices, and afterwards communicated to the King, in which they deplored their miſeries.
7. The King iſſues out a proclamation, forbidding the paying any taxes to the Parliament.
10. The Parliament makes an order about ſpies.
15. The treaty at *Oxford* is broken off without ſucceſs.
16. *Robert Devereux* Earl of *Eſſex* beſieges *Reading*, which had been fortified by the King.
19. The King publiſhes a proclamation, in which he offers a pardon to the ſoldiers in the Parliament's army.
21. Prince *Rupert* takes *Lichfield*, but is recalled by the King to relieve *Reading*.
23. The King ſends a commiſſion to *James Butler*, Marquiſs of *Ormond*, to treat with the *Iriſh* Rebels about a truce.
25. Sir *William Waller* takes *Hereford*, but is repulſed before *Worceſter*.
26. *Reading* capitulates; after which the Earl of *Eſſex* advances to *Thame*.
May 3. The King enjoins the Marquiſs of *Ormond* to haſten the concluſion of the truce with the *Iriſh*.

The

The Parliament orders the *Book of Sports* to be burnt by the common hangman. *Ann. C.* 5.

James Earl of *Northampton* defeats a body of the enemy at *Middle*. 6.

The Lords Juſtices of *Ireland* write a letter to the King, in which they repreſent the miſerable condition of that Kingdom, for want of ſuccours. 11.

A Convention of the Eſtates of *Scotland* is ſummoned.

The Marquiſs of *Hamilton* is made a Duke. 15.

A declaration from the King is ſent into *Scotland*, diſplaying the juſtice of his cauſe againſt the Parliament.

Henry Grey Earl of *Stamford* is defeated near *Stratton* in *Cornwall* by Sir *Ralph Hopton*. 16.

The King requires of the Parliament an anſwer to his meſſage from *Oxford*, and deſires to renew the treaty of peace. 20.

The Lord *Fairfax* takes *Wakefield* by ſtorm, and makes General *Goring* priſoner. 21.

Queen *Henrietta* is accuſed by the Commons of High-treaſon. 23.

The conſpiracy of *Tomkins* and *Challoner*, to force the Parliament to a peace, is diſcovered. 30.

Whereupon, both Houſes unite themſelves by a new oath or covenant. *June* 6.

An ordinance is made for ſequeſtring all the temporalities belonging to Archbiſhop *Laud*: As one had been made before, to deprive him of the right of preſenting to any eccleſiaſtical benefice. 10.

An Aſſembly of Divines is called to meet at *Weſtminſter*, 12.

The Queen comes to *Newark*. 14.

The Parliament publiſhes a declaration to encourage voluntary contributions for the war in *Ireland*. 1643. *June* 16.

Prince *Rupert* beats two of the enemies quarters at *High-Wickham*, and diſperſes another body in *Chaldgrave-Field*; in this laſt action *John Hampden* is wounded, and dies the 24th. 18.

Captain *John Hotham* is apprehended and impriſoned, for endeavouring to deliver *Hull* to the King. 22.

The Eſtates of *Scotland* meet.

Subſcriptions are taken for carrying on the war in *Ireland*, which the King approves of. 24.

The Marquiſs of *Newcaſtle*, and *Ralph* Lord *Hopton*, take *Taunton*, *Bridgewater*, *Wells*, and other places in the Weſt.

Gainsborough is taken by the Lord *Willoughby* of *Parham*,

Ann. C. where *Robert Pierrepoint* Earl of *Kingſton* is killed by accident.

29. *Hull* is preſerved for the Parliament, and Sir *John Hotham* apprehended.

30. *Ferdinando*, Lord *Fairfax*, is defeated on *Atherton-Moor*, by *William Cavendiſh*, Earl of *Newcaſtle*.

July 1. The Aſſembly of Divines meets for the firſt time.

The Marquiſs of *Newcaſtle* takes *Bradford*, and ſhortly after, *Hallifax* and *Beverly* are ſecured for the King.

2. The King writes to the Lords Juſtices of *Ireland*, to haſten the concluſion of a truce for the year.

5. The battle of *Lanſdown* is fought, in which Sir *William Waller* is forced to quit the field; eight days after, he is entirely routed, at the battle of *Roundway-down*, in *Wiltſhire*, and eſcapes to *Briſtol*.

Mr. *Tomkins* and *Challoner* are executed.

13. The King and Queen join their forces at *Edge-hill*.

17. The King forbids all intercourſe of trade with *London*.

19. The Aſſembly of Divines preſents a petition to the Parliament.

The King makes a ſolemn proteſtation at his receiving the Sacrament at *Oxford*.

20. He puts out a proclamation, in which he enjoins all perſons not to obey the orders of the two Houſes of Parliament.

21. An inſurrection breaks out in *Kent*, and a ſkirmiſh happens at *Tunbridge*.

22. The Parliament publiſhes an ordinance for an Exciſe.

Prince *Rupert* takes *Briſtol*, by ſtorm: *Nathan. Fiennes*, the Governor, is condemned to die.

The Marquiſs of *Hertford* takes *Bath*.

Shortly after, *Robert Dormer*, Earl of *Caernarvon*, makes himſelf maſter of *Weymouth*, *Dorcheſter*, and *Portland* Caſtle.

25. The Parliament publiſhes a declaration about the King's conduct, with regard to the rebellion in *Ireland*.

30. *Oliver Cromwell* defeats a detachment of the Earl of *Newcaſtle*'s, near *Gainsborough*.

Auguſt. *William Cavendiſh*, Earl of *Newcaſtle*, takes *Gainsborough* and *Lincoln*.

7. The Parliament's Commiſſioners arrive at *Edinburgh*, being ſent to demand aſſiſtance from the *Scots*.

The Houſe of Lords ſends to the Commons propoſitions for a peace: The Commons approve of them, and agree they ſhould be ſent to the King.

The

The City of *London* preſents a petition againſt thoſe propoſitions; whereupon, the Commons reverſe their former reſolution. *Ann. C.* 8.

Some thouſands of women go and preſent a petition for peace to the Commons, and cauſe a tumult at *Weſtminſter*. *Aug.* 9.

The King beſieges *Glouceſter*. 10.

Plymouth is blocked up by Prince *Maurice*. 15.

A Covenant between the two Nations is agreed upon in *Scotland*, and a proclamation iſſued out for levying troops in that Kingdom. 17.

Henry Rich, Earl of *Holland*, *John Hollis*, Earl of *Clare*, and *Francis Ruſſel*, Earl of *Bedford*, quit the Parliament, and repair to the King at *Oxford*. 25.

The Parliament conſents to the *Scottiſh* Covenant. 28.

William Cavendiſh, Earl of *Newcaſtle*, beſieges *Hull*: He is made Marquiſs of *Newcaſtle*. *Sept.* 2.

Robert Devereux, Earl of *Eſſex*, forces the King to raiſe the ſiege of *Glouceſter*, and then goes and ſurprizes *Cirenceſter*. 5.

The King writes a letter to the Lords Juſtices of *Ireland* to haſten the ceſſation. 7.

Judge *Berkley* is fined 20,000 *l.* and committed to the *Tower*. 12.

The truce between King *Charles* and the *Iriſh* Rebels is ſigned. 15.

The firſt battle of *Newbury* is fought, in which *Henry Spencer*, Earl of *Sunderland*, *Robert Dormer*, Earl of *Caernarvon*, *Lucius Carey*, Viſcount *Falkland*, and many others are ſlain, on both ſides: The Parliamentarians remain maſters of the field. 20.

An ordinance is made by the Parliament, for ſeizing the revenues of the King, the Queen, and the Prince: And the King, on his part, forbids all the tenants and debtors of ſuch as were in open Rebellion againſt him, to pay them any thing. 21.

The Parliament takes the Covenant. 22.

The Earl of *Crawford* is defeated at *Pool*. 24.

Exeter ſurrenders to Prince *Maurice*. 25.

The Parliament publiſhes a declaration againſt the truce with the *Iriſh*. 30.

Dartmouth ſurrenders to Prince *Maurice*. *Oct.* 6.

The King forbids in vain the taking of the Covenant. 9.

Some of the King's forces are routed at *Hern* Caſtle, by *Edward Mountague* Earl of *Manchеſter*. 11.

The ſiege of *Hull* is raiſed. 12.

Aug. C. *Lynn* ſurrenders to the Earl of *Manchester*.
16. The King forbids a ſecond time all trade or commerce
17. with the City of *London*.
18. The Parliament makes an ordinance for treating as ſpies, ſuch as came from the King at *Oxford* to *London*.
23. The Commons add ten freſh articles to Archbiſhop *Laud*'s impeachment.
Nov. 5. *Henry Rich* Earl of *Holland* leaves the King, and comes back to the Parliament; as do alſo the Earls of *Bedford* and *Clare*.
11. The Parliament orders a new Great Seal to be made.
19. The King attempts to become maſter of *Glouceſter*, but miſcarries.
Part of the *Engliſh* troops that had been employed in *Ireland* are brought over to ſerve the King, and land in
21. *Flintſhire*: They beſiege *Hawarden* Caſtle.
24. The Aſſembly of Divines ſends letters to the Proteſtant Churches abroad, in which they vindicate the Parliament's proceedings; and the King, on his part, publiſhes a proteſtation.
27. *Daniel Kniveton*, one of the King's Meſſengers, is hanged.
29. The treaty between the Parliament, and *Scotland*, is ſigned.
30. The new Great Seal is delivered to the Commiſſioners.
Dec. 4. *Hawarden* Caſtle ſurrenders.
8. *John Pym* dies.
22. The King calls a Parliament at *Oxford*, conſiſting of thoſe Members that had deſerted the Parliament at *Weſtminſter*.
He endeavours in vain to gain the Earl of *Eſſex* to his ſide, which renders the Earl ſuſpected.
Edward Mountague, Earl of *Manchester*, is made General of the aſſociated Counties, and ordered to go and oppoſe the Marquiſs of *Newcaſtle*.
The ſiege of *Plymouth* is turned into a blockade.
15. The *Engliſh* forces newly arrived from *Ireland*, take ſome places in *Cheſhire*, and lay ſiege to *Nantwich*; but are entirely routed by the Lord *Fairfax*. In this action Colonel *George Monk* is taken priſoner, and committed to the *Tower*.
1643-44. The *Scotch* enters *England*, amounting to near 22,000
Jan. 15, men.
or 19. The Parliament at *Oxford* meets, and ſends offers of
22. peace to the Earl of *Eſſex*, and to the two Houſes at *Weſtminſter*.

The

The Lords of the Parliament at *Oxford* ſend a letter to the Privy-Council of *Scotland*. *Ann. C.*

The Parliament at *Oxford* votes, that the entrance of the *Scots* into *England* was a declaration of war, and that all who aſſiſted them ſhould be deemed as traitors: They alſo vote the Parliament at *Weſtminſter* guilty of High-treaſon. 26.

The *Scots* come before *Newcaſtle*, which they order to be ſummoned. *Feb.* 3.

William Cavendiſh, Marquiſs of *Newcaſtle*, who came to that place *February* 2, goes in purſuit of them. 6.

The King makes a ſpeech to his Parliament at *Oxford*, to demand aſſiſtance: He borrows money, with the advice of that Parliament, by letters under his Privy-Seal. 7.

The *Scotch* army paſſes the *Tyne*. 14.

The Members of the Parliament at *Oxford* publiſh a manifeſto, concerning their being driven from *Weſtminſter*, by the outrages of the leaders there. 28. *Mar.* 9.

They paſs ſome votes againſt the Parliament's army, declaring them traitors; and againſt the new Great Seal; as alſo, about the *Weſtminſter* Parliament's rejecting the offers of peace. 12.

The Parliament at *Weſtminſter* publiſhes a declaration, or manifeſto.

Archbiſhop *Laud*'s trial begins, and continues till *July* 29 following.

The Conſervators of the peace in *Scotland* ſend an anſwer to the letter of the Lords aſſembled in Parliament at *Oxford*. 18.

Prince *Rupert* defeats Sir *John Meldrum* at *Newark*; then he relieves *Latham-Houſe*, and takes *Stopworth* and *Bolton*, in *May*. 21, 22.

The King iſſues out a proclamation, ordering all thoſe that owe ſervice to the Crown, to repair to him by the 20th of *April*. 22.

The *Scotch* army attack the Marquiſs of *Newcaſtle*'s; but they are repulſed by the bravery of Sir *Charles Lucas*. 24.

An ordinance is made by the Parliament, enjoining every family, in and about *London*, to forbear one meal a week, and contribute the value of it towards carrying on the war. 1644. *Reg.* 20. *Mar.* 26.

Sir *William Waller* defeats Sir *Ralph Hopton*, near *Alreſford*, in *Hampſhire*. 29.

Waller takes *Winchеſter*, and ſome time before *Arundel-Caſtle*, *April* 6.

Ann. C. *Caſtle*, in which Mr. *William Chillingworth* was taken priſoner.

11. A battle is fought at *Selby* in *Yorkſhire*, where Colonel *John Bellaſis* Governor of *York* is defeated, and taken priſoner.

12. The King grants a pardon to Archbiſhop *Laud*.

13. *William Cavendiſh*, Marquiſs of *Newcaſtle*, returns to *York*.

One of the King's ſpies is hanged at *Weſtminſter*.

The *Iriſh* Proteſtants and Papiſts enter into negotiations with the King at *Oxford*.

16. The Parliament at *Oxford* is prorogued.

17. The Queen departs from *Oxford*, and retires into the *Weſt*.

20. *Lyme* in *Dorſetſhire* is beſieged by Prince *Maurice*.

The Lord *Fairfax* joins the *Scots* at *Tadcaſter*, and then they go and block up *York*.

May 1. The Parliament makes an ordinance againſt adjourning he Courts of Juſtice from *Weſtminſter* to *Oxford*.

6. *Edward Mountague*, Earl of *Manchester*, becomes maſter of *Lincoln*.

7. Colonel *Maſſy* takes *Weſtbury* in *Glouceſterſhire*.

A diſpute ariſes between the two Houſes, about the Committee of both Kingdoms.

8. *Newnham*, in *Glouceſterſhire*, is taken by Colonel *Maſſey*.

9. Reinforcements from the *London* trained-bands are ſent to the Earl of *Eſſex*, and to Sir *William Waller*.

An ordinance is made for aboliſhing all the monuments of idolatry.

14. The King quits *Reading*, and demoliſhes the fortifications.

15. *Robert Devereux*, Earl of *Eſſex*, and Sir *William Waller* march towards *Oxford*, with a view to beſiege that City.

The King ſends a declaration to the foreign Proteſtant Churches.

16. *London* preſents a petition to the Commons for continuing the Committee of both Kingdoms.

22. Colonel *Maſſy* takes *Beverſton* and *Malmsbury*, both in

24. *Wiltſhire*.

25. Sir *William Waller* and the Earl of *Eſſex* become maſters of *Abington*.

27. *Patrick Ruthen* the King's General, is created Earl of *Brentford*.

29. The Earl of *Eſſex* advances nearer to *Oxford*, in order to lay ſiege to it.

The

The King withdraws from *Oxford*, with his horſe, and a body of foot. *Ann. C.* *June* 3.

Edward Mountague, Earl of *Manchester*, joins the Lord *Fairfax*, and the *Scots* that kept *York* blocked up; whereupon the ſiege of that City is begun.

The General Aſſembly of *Scotland* writes a letter to the Churches in the *Netherlands*. 4.

Colonel *Maſſy* takes *Tewksbury* in *Glouceſterſhire*. 5.

The King arrives at *Worceſter*, 6.

Robert Devereux, Earl of *Eſſex*, marches into the Weſt contrary to the Parliament's orders; and Sir *William Waller* purſues the King.

Prince *Rupert* takes *Liverpool*. 11.

Prince *Maurice* raiſes the ſiege of *Lyme*. 15.

The King returns to *Oxford*.

The Princeſs *Henrietta* is born at *Exeter*. 16.

Weymouth ſurrenders to the Earl of *Eſſex*.

Some miſunderſtanding happens between the Earl of *Eſſex* and the Parliament. 19.

The Earl of *Eſſex* becomes maſter of *Dorcheſter*; and *Taunton* is alſo taken for the Parliamant.

The King departs from *Oxford*, after having been joined by his foot, which he left there when he went to *Worceſter*, and goes and quarters in *Buckinghamſhire*. 21.

Sir *William Waller* attacking the King's forces, is defeated at *Cropedy*-Bridge. 29.

An Ordinance is made by both Houſes, for excluding from their ſeats thoſe Members that had deſerted the Parliament.

Robert Sidney, Earl of *Leiceſter*, returns to *London* from *Oxford*, after having been amuſed two years with a proſpect of the Lieutenancy of *Ireland*; which was given to the Marquiſs of *Ormond*.

Prince *Rupert* approaches *York*, and raiſes the ſiege of that City. 30. *July* 1.

The King marches towards the Weſt of *England*,

The battle of *Marſton-moor*, in *Yorkſhire*, is fought; in which Prince *Rupert* is defeated, and about 9000 men are killed on both ſides. 2.

Immediately after the battle, the Marquiſs of *Newcaſtle*, with his two ſons, and brother; Dr. *Bramhall*, Biſhop of *London-derry*, and other conſiderable perſons, leave the Kingdom.

The King ſends from *Eveſham* a meſſage to both Houſes to treat of a peace. 4.

Ann. C. the Presbyterians: In pursuance of which, a resolution is taken by the Parliament to new-model the army.

16. Sir *John Hotham*, and his son Captain *John Hotham*, are tried and condemned. (See above *June* 22, 1643.)

23. Sir *Alexander Carew* is beheaded, for attempting to deliver up *Plymouth* to the King.

26. *Roger Lestrange* is condemned, for trying to reduce *Lynn* to the King's obedience; but reprieved.

1644-45. *Jan.* 1. Captain *John Hotham* is executed, and his father Sir *John* the next day.

3. An ordinance is passed for taking away the Book of Common Prayer, and for establishing the Directory in its room.

4. The House of Lords consents to the ordinance for the attainder of Archbishop *Laud*, which had passed in the House of Commons, *Nov.* 16.

10. The Archbishop is beheaded, and buried in *All-hallows-Barking*.

13. The House of Lords throws out the self-denying ordinance.

21. The army is new-modelled, and Sir *Thomas Fairfax* appointed General, instead of the Earl of *Essex*.

30. Negotiations for a treaty of peace are begun at *Uxbridge*, and carried on till the 22d of *February*, when they break off, without success.

Feb. 2. *James Graham*, Marquis of *Montrose* gains a victory at *Innerlogh*.

19. Sir *Thomas Fairfax* comes to the House of Commons, and is complimented by the Speaker.

1645. *Reg.* 21. *April* 2. *Robert Devereux*, Earl of *Essex*, *Basil Fielding*, Earl of *Denbigh*, and *Edward Mountague*, Earl of *Manchester*, surrender their Commissions.

3. The Lords pass the self-denying ordinance.
Sir *Thomas Fairfax* new-models the army.

4. The Marquis of *Montrose* is defeated at *Dundee*.

11. An ordinance is passed for exempting the University of *Cambridge* from taxes.

22. Colonel *Massey*'s forces are totally routed by Prince *Rupert* at *Ledbury* in *Herefordshire*.

24. *Oliver Cromwell* defeats a brigade of the King's horse at *Islip-Bridge*.
Colonel *Windebank* is shot by the King's order, for surrendering *Blechington-House* upon the first summons.

26. The Parliament makes an ordinance, That no person be permitted to preach who is not ordained a Minister either in this or some other Reformed Church, *&c.* Sir

Sir *Thomas Fairfax* marches towards the Weſt, to relieve *Taunton*, in *Somerſetſhire*. *Ann. C.* 28.

But receiving an order to march back, he ſends Colonel *Welden* with ſome troops, to the relief of *Taunton*. *May* 4.

Cromwell is repulſed in an aſſault upon *Farrington*. 6.

The King takes the field, and marches to the relief of *Cheſter*, which was beſieged by Sir *William Brereton*. 7.

The ſiege of *Taunton* is raiſed by *Welden*. 12.

At the King's approach the ſiege of *Cheſter* is raiſed; whereupon his Majeſty marches back to *Leiceſter*. 17.

General *Fairfax* receives orders to go and beſiege *Oxford*; he approaches that city, and begins the ſiege. 22.

The King takes *Leiceſter* by ſtorm. 30.

Colonel *Welden* is beſieged in *Taunton*.

King *Charles* marches to *Harborough* in *Leiceſterſhire*, and ſends for General *Goring* to come and join him, but his letter is intercepted. *June* 4.

General *Fairfax* raiſes the ſiege of *Oxford*, to go and meet the King; he is repulſed in an aſſault upon *Borſtal*-Houſe in *Buckinghamſhire*. 5.

Oliver Cromwell is made Commander of the Horſe, notwithſtanding the ſelf-denying ordinance.

The battle of *Naſeby* in *Northamptonſhire* is fought, in which the King is entirely routed, and loſes all his artillery and baggage, and even his cabinet of papers. After this defeat, the King retires into *Wales*, and Prince *Rupert* to *Briſtol*. 14.

Leiceſter ſurrenders to General *Fairfax*. 18.

He marches into the Weſtern parts, and relieves *Taunton*, &c. 20.

A remonſtrance from the Kirk of *Scotland* is preſented to the King at *Hereford*. 25.

The *Scots* become maſters of *Carliſle*. 28.

The Marquiſs of *Montroſs* obtains a victory at *Alford*; and another more conſiderable at *Kilſyth*, on the 17th of *Auguſt*. *July* 2.

General *Fairfax* comes to *Dorcheſter* in *Dorſetſhire*, and confers with the Club-men. 3.

Sligo in *Ireland* is beſieged, and the Archbiſhop of *Tuam* happens to be killed there: In his pockets are found copies of the full powers granted by King *Charles* for treating with the *Iriſh* Rebels. 7.

An ordinance is made by the Parliament, for raiſing 10,000 *l.* for the redemption of the captives in *Algiers*. 8.

Ann. C. Sir *Thomas Fairfax* defeats General *Goring* at *Langport* in
10. *Somerſetſhire.*
20. *Bridgewater* is ſtormed by the Parliament's forces.
21, 25. *Pontefract* and *Scarborough* in *Yorkſhire* are taken for the Parliament.
22. *Bridgewater* in *Somerſetſhire* is alſo taken.
29. As is likewiſe *Bath.*
31. The *Scots* lay ſiege to *Hereford.*
Aug. 5. The Parliament publiſhes a declaration concerning the ambaſſy of the *States* of the *United Provinces* to *England.*
6. *Cromwell* puts 4000 Club-men to rout.
7. The Commons vote to ſend propoſitions for peace to the King.
Edward Somerſet, Earl of *Glamorgan*, concludes a treaty with the Confederate *Iriſh* Catholics, having full powers from the King for that purpoſe.
15. *Sherbourn*, in *Dorſetſhire*, ſurrenders to the Parliament.
23. An ordinance is paſſed by the Parliament, for the more effectual putting in execution the *Directory.*
23. Sir *Thomas Fairfax* beſieges *Briſtol*, which was defended by Prince *Rupert.*
24. The King takes *Huntingdon*, and then marches to *Oxford.*
27. *Edward*, Lord *Littleton*, Keeper of the Great Seal, dies there.
31. The King marches from *Oxford* to *Campden.*
Sept. 6. Lieutenant-General *David Leſley* goes into *Scotland*, with a party of horſe and dragoons, to oppoſe the Earl of *Montroſs.*
13. The Marquiſs of *Montroſs* is defeated at *Philiphaugh*, and withdraws into the *Highlands.*
Several Royaliſts are executed at *Edinburgh.*
Prince *Rupert* ſurrenders *Briſtol*; at which the King is ſo angry, that he orders him to depart the Kingdom, and revokes all his commiſſions.
15. The Parliament publiſhes a ſecond declaration concerning the ambaſſy from the *States* of the *United Provinces.*
The *Scots* raiſe the ſiege of *Hereford*, where the King advances, and continues there till *September* 20.
23. *Oliver Cromwell* becomes maſter of the *Devines.*
24. The King is defeated near *Cheſter*, and *Bernard Stewart*, Earl of *Lichfield*, with other officers of quality, ſlain. After this defeat, the King retires to *Denbigh* Caſtle in *Wales*; from whence, after ſome time, he comes to *Newark.*
26. *Cromwell* takes *Berkley* Caſtle, in *Glouceſterſhire.*
28. An ordinance is made for ſettling 10,000*l.* a year on the Earl of *Eſſex.*

Cromwell

Cromwell becomes maſter of *Wincheſter* City and Caſtle. *Ann. C.*
Chepſtow Caſtle, in *Monmouthſhire*, is taken by Colonel *Morgan*. *Oct.* 5. 10.
George, Lord *Digby*, is routed at *Sherbourn*, by Colonel *Copley*: He is defeated a ſecond time in *Cumberland*, and eſcapes into *Ireland*.
Cheſter is beſieged by the Parliament's forces.
Baſing Caſtle is taken by ſtorm, after having withſtood ſeveral ſieges. 14.
General *Fairfax* takes *Tiverton*. 19.
John Baptiſt Rinuccini, the Pope's Nuncio, comes into *Ireland*. 22.
Sir *William Vaughan* is defeated at *Denbigh*.
The *Scots* lay ſiege to *Newark*.
Prince *Rupert* leaves the Kingdom. *Novemb.*
The King returns ſafe to *Oxford*. 6.
From thence, his Majeſty ſends a meſſage to the Parliament, to propoſe a peace. *Dec.* 5. 8.
Hereford is taken by ſurprize for the Parliament.
Charles, Prince of *Wales*, aſſembles all the King's forces in the Weſt, with the Militia of *Cornwal*, and forms an army. 15.
The King ſends a ſecond meſſage about a peace; 26.
And a third, wherein he offers to come perſonally to *London*, for concluding a peace.
The Parliament returns an anſwer to the two firſt meſſages.
The King ſends a fourth meſſage to the two Houſes; 29.
The Supreme Council of Papiſts in *Ireland* ſends a letter of thanks to the Pope, for ſending the Nuncio. 1645-46. *Jan.* 7.
General *Fairfax* takes a brigade of horſe at *Bovey-Tracy*, in *Devonſhire*, belonging to the Prince of *Wales*. 9.
The Parliament ſends an anſwer to the King's meſſages of the 26th and 29th of *December*. 13.
The King ſends a fifth meſſage to both Houſes, 15.
And an anſwer to the Parliament's letter of the 13th. 17.
Sir *Thomas Fairfax* takes *Dartmouth* by ſtorm. 18.
The Parliament appoints *Philip Sidney*, Lord *Liſle*, Chief Governor of *Ireland*. 21.
The King makes a reply to the anſwer of the two Houſes. 24.
Exeter is blocked up by *Fairfax*. 27.
The King ſends a ſixth meſſage to the Parliament. 29.
A battle is fought at *Torrington*, where *Ralph*, Lord *Hopton*, is defeated by Sir *Thomas Fairfax*. *Feb.* 18.

Both

Ann. C. Both Houſes of Parliament make an ordinance for chuſing Ruling-Elders in every Pariſh.

20.

23. General *Fairfax* marches into *Cornwal*; whereupon, the Prince of *Wales* retires into *Scilly*,

26. The King ſends a ſeventh meſſage about a peace.

Mar. 14. *Ralph*, Lord *Hopton*, capitulates with General *Fairfax*; and his army is diſbanded.

23. The King ſends an eighth meſſage concerning a peace.

1646. Votes are paſſed by the Parliament, on a rumour of the King's intending to come privately to *London*: And an

Reg. 22. order is made for all thoſe that had borne arms againſt the

Mar. 31. Parliament, to depart from *London*.

Montreuil is ſent by the Court of *France*, to procure a private agreement between King *Charles* and the *Scots*.

April 1. *Dennington* Caſtle, in *Berkſhire*, is taken by the Parliament.

3. An ordinance is made for eſtabliſhing a Court-Martial.

9. *Exeter* ſurrenders to *Fairfax*.

12. *Barnſtable* in *Devonſhire* is taken.

The Parliament cauſes the *Preface* to the book of the *Scotch Papers* to be burnt by the common hangman.

16. *Charles*, Prince of *Wales*, embarks from *Scilly*, and lands the next day at *Jerſey*, from whence he paſſes into *France*.

17. Both Houſes put out a declaration, in which they manifeſt their intentions to maintain the antient and fundamental Government of the Kingdom, according to the covenant and treaties.

18. General *Fairfax* marches towards *Oxford*.

26. *Woodſtock* ſurrenders to the Parliament.

Bridgnorth, in *Shropſhire*, is likewiſe taken.

27. The King departs privately from *Oxford*, for fear he ſhould be hemmed in there.

John Williams, Archbiſhop of *York*, ſides with the Parliament.

May 1. Sir *Thomas Fairfax* comes before *Oxford*.

4. Both Houſes make an order for diſcovering the King, if he was in *London*, upon pain of death.

5. King *Charles* goes and puts himſelf into the hands of the *Scotch* army, then before *Newark*, in *Nottinghamſhire*.

6. He orders *Newark* to be ſurrendered up to the Commiſſioners of the Parliament.

Banbury is taken by the Parliament's troops.

7. The *Scots* army marches northwards, and comes to *Newcaſtle*, carrying the King along with them: He arrives there the 13th.

From thence his Majeſty ſends a meſſage to both Houſes, containing offers for an accommodation. *Ann. C.* 18.

By another meſſage, he preſſes the two Houſes to ſend their propoſitions for peace, that he might give them all juſt ſatisfaction; and deſires again the liberty to come to *London*, and treat in perſon. *June* 10.

He ſends orders to *James Butler*, Marquiſs of *Ormond*, to break off the treaty with the *Scots*. *June* 11.

Major-General *Monroe*, Commander of the *Scotch* forces in *Ireland*, is defeated at *Benburgh*.

Oxford capitulates, and ſurrenders upon articles. 20, 24.

The propoſitions for peace, that were to be ſent to the King, are approved by both Houſes. 27.

The *Scotch* army publiſhes a proclamation, to juſtify their proceedings, with regard to the King's coming to take refuge among them. 29.

Charles, Prince of *Wales*, goes from *Jerſey* into *France*. *July* 3.

The Commons vote, that *England* had no further need of the *Scots* army. 6.

Prince *Rupert* embarks for *France*, and Prince *Maurice* for the *Hague*. 15.

Both Houſes give audience to the Preſident *de Beliévre*, Ambaſſador from *France*. 17.

Worceſter is taken; and ſo is alſo *Wallingford*. 19.

The Parliament's Commiſſioners preſent the propoſitions for peace to the King at *Newcaſtle*. 22.

Prince *James*, Duke of *York*, is conducted to *St. James's*. 24.

The Princeſs *Henrietta* is carried over into *France*. 28.

A peace is proclaimed between King *Charles* and the *Iriſh* Rebels. *July* 30.

The King returns only a general anſwer to the Parliament's propoſitions. *Aug.* 1.

Conway in *North-Wales* is taken for the Parliament. 9.

The Parliament orders the Great Seal that was brought from *Oxford* to be broken. 11.

Part of the Popiſh Clergy in *Ireland* publiſhes a declaration againſt the peace concluded by the Council of *Kilkenny* with the Marquiſs of *Ormond*. 12.

The Pope's Nuncio is declared ſupreme Commander of that party of Clergy.

Ragland Caſtle in *Wales* ſurrenders to the Parliament; as doth alſo *Pendennis* Caſtle in *Cornwal*. 17.

Differences happen between the Parliament and the *Scots* Commiſſioners, about the arrears due to the *Scotch* army; at length, the Parliament agrees to allow them four hundred thouſand pounds. 27.

Robert

Ann. C. *Robert Devereux* Earl of *Eſſex* dies, and was buried,
Sept. 14. *October* 22.

18. It is voted, that the King's perſon ſhould be diſpoſed of, as both Houſes of Parliament ſhould think fit.

Oct. 1. Conferences paſs between the Parliament's and the *Scots* Commiſſioners, about the manner how to diſpoſe of the King's perſon.

9. An ordinance is made by the Parliament for ſelling the Biſhops lands, and applying the money towards the payment of the public debts: And at the ſame time, the whole order of Archbiſhops and Biſhops is aboliſhed.

Nov. 13. *George Monk* a priſoner in the *Tower*, takes the Covenant, and embraces the Parliament's party.

Dec. 16. It is debated in the Parliament of *Scotland*, what ſhould be done with the King's perſon; and upon the whole, they agree, not to admit him into *Scotland*, unleſs he would take the Covenant, *&c.*

20. The King hearing of that, ſends a meſſage to both Houſes at *Weſtminſter*, to deſire again to come to *London*, or any of his houſes thereabouts.

22. The Lords vote, that he might come to *Newmarket*; but the Commons vote *Holmby*-houſe in *Northamptonſhire* was the fitteſt place; to which the Lords conſent.

From *October* to *February* 1646-7, negotiations paſſed between *James Butler* Marquiſs of *Ormond*, and the Parliament's Commiſſioners, for getting *Dublin* delivered up by the Marquiſs to the Parliament; but all to no purpoſe.

1646-7. A Committee of both Houſes is appointed to go down,
Jan. 5. and receive the King from the *Scots*.

The Parliament of *Scotland* notifies in a declaration to that of *England*, that they conſented the King ſhould be delivered up to them, and conducted to *Holmby*-houſe.

30. King *Charles* is accordingly delivered up to the Commiſſioners of the Parliament of *England*; the *Scots* ſet out the ſame day from *Newcaſtle* to return to *Scotland*.

Feb. 16. The King arrives at *Holmby*.

Reg. 23. Some officers of the army prepare a petition to be pre-
1647. ſented to the General, which is by the Commons voted ſe-
Mar. 30. ditious, and the officers have orders to ſuppreſs it.

April 1. Differences begin to ariſe between the Parliament and the army, the former conſiſting chiefly of Presbyterians, and the latter of Independents.

2. Major General *Philip Skippon* is appointed Commander of the army that was to go into *Ireland*.

The Parliament's deſign, was to pick out of the whole

army a certain number of officers and of ſoldiers, both horſe and foot; out of which an army was to be formed for the ſervice of *Ireland*, and the garriſons in *England* ſupplied; and then to disband the reſt of the army. But the army unwilling to be disbanded, ſought for occaſions of quarrelling with the Parliament, in order to come either to an open rupture, or to procure an accommodation, by which it ſhould be left upon the ancient eſtabliſhment. *Ann. C.*

The Houſe of Commons nominates the regiments of horſe that were to be continued, at which the reſt are diſſatisfied. 8.

Both Houſes agree to augment the pay of the officers and ſoldiers that ſhould ſerve in *Ireland*. 9.

Commiſſioners are appointed by the Parliament, to go and make propoſitions to the army about the ſervice in that Kingdom. 13.

The Commiſſioners aſſemble the officers together at *Saffron-Walden*. Several engage to ſerve in *Ireland*; others, and much the greater number, refuſe to go thither, unleſs they had for Commanders, *Fairfax*, *Cromwell*, and *Skippon*, the two former of which were diſagreeable to the Commons. 15.

Some *Scottiſh* Commiſſioners preſs the King to take the Covenant. 19.

Great oppoſition is found in the army about ſerving in *Ireland*.

The Commons vote to disband the army, and to give the ſoldiers ſix weeks pay, when diſmiſſed. 27.

One hundred and fifty-one officers preſent a ſeditious declaration to the Houſe of Commons, in their own vindication.

Major General *Skippon* preſents alſo to that Houſe a letter from eight regiments of horſe, who refuſed to ſerve in *Ireland*; whereupon *Skippon*, *Cromwell*, *Ireton*, and *Fleetwood* are ſent to the army to ſatisfy them. 30.

Philip Sidney Lord *Liſle* returns from *Ireland*. *May* 1.

An ordinance is made for changing the officers of the Militia of *London*. 4.

The army makes great oppoſition to the Parliament's orders and deſigns, about disbanding and going into *Ireland*. 8.

The Univerſity of *Oxford* is viſited by Commiſſioners appointed by the Parliament; and ſuch of its Members as refuſed to take the Covenant, *&c.* are expelled.

The Houſe of Commons offers ſix weeks pay extraordinary, to the officers and ſoldiers that would go into *Ireland*; 14.

and

Ann. C. and orders eight weeks pay in all to thoſe that ſhould be disbanded.

The Council of Agitators is ſet up.

18. The King returns an anſwer to the propoſitions ſent to him at *Newcaſtle*, with ſome reſtrictions.

The Commons vote that all the forces that would not engage to ſerve in *Ireland* ſhould be caſhiered.

21. An ordinance is made for granting an indemnity to the army.

25. And another ordinance for disbanding the army ſeparately, and in different bodies.

29. The army is not ſatisfied with the terms on which it was to be disbanded; and the General contracts the quarters of the army in order to break the Parliament's meaſures.

The diviſion between the Parliament and the army increaſing, the Parliament recalls their Commiſſioners; and endeavours to ſow diſſenſion in the army.

June 1. The Commons order a month's pay to thoſe forces that

3. would quit their regiments, and ſerve in *Ireland*; and paſs ſome votes for ſatisfying the army; but theſe latter were reſolved not to be ſatisfied.

4. The King is carried away by force from *Holmby*, by Cornet *Joyce*, with a detachment of 500 horſe.

5. The ſeveral regiments preſent a petition to General *Fairfax*, againſt their being disbanded; and alſo ſign an engagement to keep themſelves from being disbanded.

The Parliament votes, that the ſoldiers ſhould have their full pay upon disbanding.

6. A petition is preſented from the County of *Eſſex* to Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, deſiring him not to ſuffer the army to be disbanded, till the Kingdom was freed from the vaſſalage of the Parliament.

7. New Commiſſioners are ſent to the army to appeaſe it.

8. The city of *London* petitions the Parliament for leave to raiſe horſes for their own defence; an ordinance is accordingly made for that purpoſe.

The Parliament revokes the declaration of the 30th of *March*, concerning the firſt petition of the army's officers.

Feſtivals are aboliſhed.

The Houſe of Commons gets a regiment of the Militia of *London* for a guard.

10. They confirm and renew the ſelf-denying ordinance, and declare void all places held by members of Parliament.

The King is conducted to *Newmarket*.

The

The army marches towards *London*, and advances as far as *St. Albans*. *Ann. C.* *June* 11.

An order is made for raiſing the trained bands, for the defence of the Parliament and City of *London*.

Both Houſes write to the General, deſiring that the army might not come within 25 miles of the City.

The Parliament orders, that 10,000 *l.* ſhould be paid to ſuch officers and ſoldiers, as ſhould leave the army and engage in the ſervice of *Ireland*; in order to ſow diſſenſions in the army.

Petitions from *Norfolk* and *Suffolk* are preſented to General *Fairfax*, againſt the pretended tyranny of the Parliament. 12.

A month's pay is ordered to the army, provided they did not draw their quarters nearer *London* than twenty miles. 13.

The army publiſhes a repreſentation or manifeſto, in which they deſire that the Parliament might be purged; would fix a time for their diſſolution, *&c.* 14.

A petition is preſented from *Buckinghamſhire* to the General, againſt diſbanding the army. 15.

The army accuſes eleven Members of the Houſe of Commons of treaſon; and demand, the next day, that they might be ſuſpended from ſitting in the Houſe. 16.

The Parliament repeals the order for the raiſing of forces, and arming the Militia of *London*.

The Marquiſs of *Ormond* ſurrenders *Dublin* and *Drogheda* to the Parliament, rather than ſee them fall into the hands of the *Iriſh* Rebels.

A petition from ſeveral inhabitants of *Hertfordſhire* is preſented to General *Fairfax*, againſt diſbanding the army.

Glamorganſhire ſends Deputies to *London* to complain of the tyranny and oppreſſion of the Parliament, and their Committees.

An inſurrection happens in *Glamorganſhire*.

The army ſends up a remonſtrance to the Parliament, wherein they complain, of not having received an anſwer about the eleven Members; that the King was invited to come to *Richmond-Houſe*, *&c.* 23.

The Commons refuſe to ſuſpend the eleven impeached Members from ſitting in the Houſe; but deviſe this expedient, That thoſe Members ſhould deſire leave to abſent themſelves. 25.

The army advances towards *London*, as far as *Uxbridge*, and deliver their reaſons againſt the eleven Members. 26.

The

Ann. C. The Parliament paſſes ſome votes in order to ſatisfy the army; whereupon, the army removes at a further diſtance from *London*, and the head quarters were at *High-Wickham*.

30. *July* 1. They diſown the having made any private treaty with the King.

A plot is formed at *London* to compel both Houſes vigorouſly to oppoſe the army; and the plotters ſend private Agents to *Scotland* for aſſiſtance.

2. To forward the buſineſs, a petition is preſented by the Common-Council to the Parliament, againſt the army, *&c.*

The Parliament's Commiſſioners are impowered to treat with the army.

The King is carried to *Windſor*.

2. The treaty between the Parliament's Commiſſioners and the Army begins.

The army ſends to the Houſe of Commons a particular charge againſt the eleven Members.

13. The Apprentices in *London* petition the Parliament, that the Preſbyterian Government may be firmly eſtabliſhed.

14. Another petition, of a different nature, is preſented by Apprentices of a contrary party.

15. The army in the North publiſhes a declaration of their free conſent and coherence with the army under the command of General *Fairfax*.

The King is permitted to ſee his children at *Caverſham*.

20. The eleven accuſed Members obtain leave to withdraw for ſix months, and even to go beyond ſea.

The army demands, that a declaration ſhould be publiſhed againſt the bringing in of foreign forces; that the Committee of the Militia of *London* ſhould be reſtored

23. again, as it was before the 4th of *May*, *&c.* An ordinance is accordingly made for that purpoſe.

An engagement againſt the army is ſigned by great numbers of perſons in *London*, though the Parliament forbids

24. the ſigning of it.

Two petitions are preſented to the Common-Council of *London*, for re-eſtabliſhing the Militia, according to the ordinance of *May* 4; and accordingly they petition the Parliament for that purpoſe.

26. Great multitudes of young men and apprentices flock to *Weſtminſter*; by whom the Parliament is compelled to revoke the ordinance of *July* 23, concerning the Militia, the declaration againſt the ſolemn engagement, and to conſent to the King's coming to *London*.

The army advances towards the City of *London*, which puts itſelf in a poſture of defence.

General

General *Fairfax* ſends a letter to the Common-Council of *London*, ſhewing his diſlike of their petition. *Ann. C.* 28.

The two Speakers (the Earl of *Mancheſter*, and *William Lenthall*, Eſq;) with ſeveral Members of both Houſes, having abſented themſelves, and repaired to the army, new Speakers are choſen, *viz.* *William*, Lord *Grey*, of *Warke*, and *Henry Pelham*, Eſq; 30.

The Commons vote, that the King ſhould come to *London*; that the Militia of the City ſhould have power to raiſe ſuch forces as they ſhould think fit for their defence; and that they ſhould chuſe a Commander; accordingly, they make choice of Major-General *Maſſey*.

The City publiſhes an apology, or manifeſto; and orders the General to remove his army further from *London*; they vote alſo to receive the eleven accuſed Members.

Maſſey, *Waller*, and *Poyntz*, form regiments and companies for the defence of the City and Parliament; in the mean time, the army continue their march to the general rendezvous at *Hounſlow-Heath*. 31.

The General delivers to the Parliament's Commiſſioners propoſals to be negotiated between the Parliament and Army, for ſetling the peace of the Kingdom; but the troubles hinder theſe propoſals from being preſented. *Aug.* 1.

Both Houſes invite the King to come to *London*. 2.

The army comes to *Colebrook* in *Buckinghamſhire*.

The City of *London* ſends a letter to the General, in order to pacify him.

The army publiſhes a manifeſto, containing the reaſons of their marching to *London*. They come to *Hounſlow*. 3.

The City of *London* ſubmits to General *Fairfax*, and delivers to him all the forts on the weſt-ſide of the City.

The King denies his having had any hand in the plots againſt the army. 4.

The army advances as far as *Hammerſmith*. 5.

General *Fairfax* comes to *London*, and reſtores the two Speakers [*Edward Mountague*, Earl of *Mancheſter*, and *William Lenthall*, Eſq;] with ſixty-ſix Members, that had abſented themſelves. He receives the thanks of both Houſes. 6.

From this day the Parliament was entirely governed by the army.

Colonel *Jones* gets a great victory over the *Iriſh* Rebels near *Trym*. 8.

An ordinance is paſſed for ratifying and approving what the army had done. 14.

Ann. C. General *Fairfax* is made Conſtable of the *Tower*.

The authors of the tumult on *July* 26, are proceeded againſt.

15. The King comes to *Oatlands*, in *Surrey*: He is flattered by the army, and imagines he could manage the Presbyterians and Independents as he pleaſed; but he is overreached by *Cromwell*.

The army preſents a remonſtrance, for purging the Parliament of its corrupt Members.

21. An ordinance is paſſed, for annulling all the acts made by the Parliament, from the 26th of *July*, to the 6th of *Auguſt*.

24. The King is conducted to *Hampton-Court*, and neglected by the army, after they had him in their power: During his confinement there, the *Scotch* Commiſſioners treat with him.

26. The Commons agree to the army's propoſals for a peace.

28. The army offers 6000 foot, 4000 horſe, and 500 dragoons, for the ſervice of *Ireland*.

Sept. 2. An ordinance is made for ſettling the Militia of *London*, on the foot it was put upon by the ordinance of the 4th of *May*.

6. The *Scots* Commiſſioners refuſe their concurrence to the army's propoſitions for peace.

Colonel *Robert Hammond* is made Governor of the Iſle of *Wight*.

The *Scots* Commiſſioners give their concurrence to the propoſitions of peace to be ſent to the King, but proteſt againſt ſome of the articles.

Seven Lords, and ſome Members of the Houſe of Commons, are accuſed of High-treaſon, for being concerned in the tumult of the 26th of *July*.

8. The army's propoſitions for peace are preſented to the

12. King: His Majeſty returns an ambiguous anſwer to them.

23. The Commons reſolve to preſs his Majeſty once more to give his aſſent to them.

24. Sir *John Gayre*, Lord-Mayor of *London*, is committed to the *Tower*, on account of the tumult of the 26th of *July*.

Oct. 18. The Houſe of Commons ſends up to the Lords 16 propoſitions to be preſented to the King.

Monſieur *de Belièvre* takes his audience of leave of the King and the Parliament.

The

The Agitators of five regiments of horſe preſent propoſitions to General *Fairfax.* *Ann. C.*

The ſame regiments preſent other propoſals, as do alſo four regiments more, and ſeven regiments of foot. Thoſe propoſals are rejected by the Council of war. *Nov.* 1. *Nov.* 9.

The King eſcapes out of *Hampton-Court*, and withdraws into the Iſle of *Wight.* 11.

The Lord *Inchiquin* obtains a victory in *Ireland* over the *Iriſh* Rebels.

The King writes a letter to both Houſes, to demand a perſonal treaty. 16.

The Lords propoſe to the Commons, to treat perſonally with the King, upon condition he would give his aſſent to four preliminary bills. 26.

The Commons agree to it. 27.

The Common-Council of *London* preſents a petition to both Houſes, in which they acknowledge the Parliament to be the Supreme Power. *Dec.* 1.

The repreſentation of the army is preſented to the Parliament. 7.

The King ſends a ſecond meſſage to both Houſes, for a perſonal treaty. 9.

Commiſſioners are appointed to carry the four bills to the King. 14.

An ordinance is made about the election of Common-Council-Men in *London.* 17.

The *Scotch* Commiſſioners preſent to both Houſes a declaration, complaining, that the Parliament violated the covenant in labouring for peace, without the concurrence of *Scotland.* 20.

The ſame Commiſſioners proteſt againſt the ſending the four bills to the King, and are for treating with him without them: But, notwithſtanding their oppoſition, the four bills are preſented to the King. 24.

The *Scotch* Commiſſioners preſent to the King a declaration of their diſſent to the bills, and propoſitions, *&c.* 25.

A riot happens at *Canterbury*, about keeping of *Chriſtmas-day.*

A private treaty is concluded between the King and the *Scotch* Commiſſioners. 26.

Captain *Burley* forms a plot to reſcue the King out of his confinement in *Carisbrook* Caſtle. 30.

General *Fairfax* gives orders to Colonel *Hammond* to keep a ſtrict guard upon the King; which the Houſe of Commons approves of.

Ann. C. The Parliament's Commiſſioners come back with the King's anſwer, highly diſſatisfied.

The army declares, they would live and die with the Parliament.

From the year 1641, to 1647, there was levied by the Parliament in money, and money-worth, above forty millions.

1647-48. *Jan.* 3. The Houſe of Commons, upon hearing the King's anſwer read, votes, That no more addreſſes ſhould be made to the King, nor meſſages received from him.

11. The army ſends a declaration to the Houſe of Commons, in which they promiſe to adhere to the Parliament, againſt the King.

15. The Lords concur with the Commons vote, of preſenting no more addreſſes to the King.

16. One regiment of horſe, and another of foot, are quartered at *Whitehall*, and the *Meuſe*, to be a guard to the Parliament.

17. The army notifies, in a declaration, that they had no deſign to overthrow the dignity of the Peers, as ſome affirmed.

19. The Houſe of Lords releaſes ſix of the impriſoned Peers, and draws up a declaration upon that ſubject.

A plot is formed for ſeizing *Glouceſter*.

24. Captain *Burley*, who had endeavoured to ſtir up an inſurrection, in order to reſcue the King, is condemned to die, and executed *February* 10.

The *Scotch* Commiſſioners depart from *London*.

27. The eleven impeached Members are declared incapable of ever ſitting in the preſent Parliament.

The Committee of Eſtates in *Scotland* is called for the 6th of *February*, and a Parliament for the 10th of *March*; and a reſolution is taken, to levy an army in that Kingdom for King *Charles*'s ſervice.

28. The Lord-Mayor and Aldermen of *London*, and the ſeven Lords, are ordered to be proſecuted with the utmoſt rigour, for being concerned in the tumult of the 26th of *July*.

31. Both Houſes paſs an ordinance for dividing the ſeveral Counties into Claſſical Preſbyteries.

Feb. 2. The Houſe of Commons fixes the number of the King's Houſhold ſervants to thirty.

6. The Committee of Eſtates in *Scotland* meets.

8. Commiſſioners from the Parliament of *England* are ſent to *Edinburgh*.

The

The Committee of the General Aſſembly of the Kirk meets. *Ann. C.*

The three Colonels, *Langhorne*, *Powell*, and *Poyer*, who had hitherto ſerved the Parliament in *Wales*, reſolve to declare for the King.

Colonel *Poyer*, who was Governor of *Penbroke* Caſtle, refuſes to deliver it up to Adjutant-General *Fleming*, though he had orders for it from General *Fairfax*. *March* 2.

The Parliament of *Scotland* meets. 4.

The Houſe of Commons orders Colonel *Poyer* to be declared a traitor, if he did not ſurrender the Caſtle aforeſaid.

Both Houſes publiſh a declaration, to vindicate their conduct with reſpect to *Scotland*. 7.

Captain *Wogan* withdraws into *Scotland* with a company of horſe, that was to have been disbanded. 11.

Ferdinando Lord *Fairfax*, the General's father, dies; by whoſe death the General becomes a Lord. 13.

The Houſe of Commons receives information of a deſign formed by the Royal party to ſeize *Berwick*. 26.

Colonel *Langhorn* joins Colonel *Poyer* in *Penbrokeſhire*; whereupon an inſurrection breaks out in *Wales*. 1648. *Reg.* 24.

The Commiſſioners of the Kirk of *Scotland* oppoſe the project of levying an army againſt the Parliament of *England*, for which a Committee was appointed, called the *Committee of Danger*. 31.

The *Committee of Danger* returns anſwers to the Commiſſioners of the Kirk's demands.

Eighteen Lords, and forty other Members of the Parliament of *Scotland*, enter a proteſtation againſt the deſign of levying an army.

The troubles in *Wales* increaſe; and at length all *South-Wales* declares for the King. *April* 9.

A tumult happens in *London*, occaſioned by ſome of the King's friends.

The Parliament of *Scotland* reſolves to raiſe an army.

Murrough O-Brien, Lord *Inchiquin* in *Ireland*, embraces the King's party.

The viſitation of the Univerſity of *Oxford* began about this time, when many Maſters and Fellows of Colleges were ejected, and others put into their places. 11.

James Duke of *York* eſcapes from St. *James*'s palace, and withdraws into *Holland*. 21.

The Parliament of *Scotland* prepares for war againſt *England*.

Ann. C. inſiſted upon; and that his Majeſty be removed to ſome of his houſes within ten miles of *London*.

July 3. It is reſolved by the Commons, that the King ſhould ſubſcribe the three bills, before a treaty is ſet on foot.

George Villiers Duke of *Buckingham*, *Henry Rich* Earl of *Holland*, and *Henry Mordaunt* Earl of *Peterborough*, take up arms for the King, and aſſemble about 500 horſe at *Kingſton* upon *Thames*.

6. From thence they write to the Lord-Mayor and Common-Council of *London*, deſiring their aſſiſtance; and declaring, their intention was to releaſe his Majeſty, *&c.*

Charles, Prince of *Wales*, comes from *Paris* to the eight men of war above-mentioned, then at *Helvoet-Sluys*, and ſends back to the *Hague* his brother *James* Duke of *York*, who had been received on board as Admiral.

7. The three Lords [mentioned juſt above] are declared Traitors by the Parliament, and defeated by Colonel *Leveſey* at *Kingſton*; from whence they retire to *St. Albans*.

8. The Lords deſire the Commons not to inſiſt upon the three bills, *&c.*

9. The *Scots* army enters *England*, commanded by *James* Duke of *Hamilton*.

10. *George* Duke of *Buckingham*, and *Henry* Earl of *Holland*, are entirely routed at *St. Neot's* in *Huntingdonſhire*, by Colonel *Scroop*, and the Earl of *Holland* taken priſoner.

11. A conference paſſes between a Committee of both Houſes, and a Committee of the Common-Council of *London*, about treating with his Majeſty.

The Common-Council of *London* gets an engagement ſigned by the inhabitants, in order to force the Parliament to a perſonal treaty with the King.

12. *Penbroke* Caſtle ſurrenders, and *Oliver Cromwell* begins his march towards the North.

14. The Parliament declares the *Scotch* army enemies of the Kingdom.

The Commons inſiſt upon the three bills.

17. The inhabitants of *Weſtminſter* preſent a petition for a perſonal treaty.

22. The Commons order *Skippon* privately to liſt ſoldiers, for fear the mob ſhould attempt to force them to a compliance with the Lords: The Lord-Mayor complains of it in vain.

25. The differences between the two Houſes concerning the three bills continue.

26. *Charles* Prince of *Wales* comes before *Yarmouth*, with a deſign

design to seize that place: He publishes a declaration, but is refused admittance into *Yarmouth*. *Ann. C.* 27.

The Commons give up at length the three bills; whereupon, both Houses agree upon entering into a personal treaty with the King, at *Carisbrook* Castle in the Isle of *Wight*. 28.

The Prince of *Wales* comes into the *Thames*, and seizes some ships. 29.

Aug. 2. Commissioners are sent to the King, to agree upon the place for the treaty.

Major *Robert Huntington* presents a memorial to the House of Lords against *Oliver Cromwell*.

The Prince of *Wales* writes to the City of *London* about some ships he had taken.

He writes to the House of Peers about the treaty with the King. 8.

The Common-Council of *London* petitions, that the King should be set at liberty during the treaty.

The Lords order Major *Huntington* protection.

The King chuses *Newport*, in the Isle of *Wight*, for the place of treaty: And desires that some *Scots* Deputies may come there. 10.

Colonel *Henry Lilburn*, Governor of *Tinmouth* in *Northumberland*, declares for the King.

Charles Prince of *Wales* lands in *Kent*, where *Deal* and *Sandwich* had declared for him, but is beaten back. 14.

The Lords pass some votes preliminary to the treaty. 16.

John Maitland, Earl of *Lauderdale*, carries to Prince *Charles* an invitation from the Estates of *Scotland*, to come into that country, and head their army in *England*.

The Commons examine the Lords votes, and add some restrictions to them. 17.

They refuse to consent to any *Scottish* Commissioners being invited to the treaty; and order, that however, if any of that Nation should be sent for, to advise about the affairs of *Scotland* only, they should be admitted. 18.

Prince *Charles* threatens to use reprisals, if the Colonels, *Poyer*, *Langhorn*, and *Powell*, were put to death. 19.

The *Scots* army commanded by *James* Duke of *Hamilton*, is entirely routed by *Cromwell* near *Preston* in *Lancashire*; and the Duke taken prisoner, at *Uttoxeter* in *Staffordshire*. 17, 18, 19.

Cromwell marches towards the North against General *Monroe*, who was bringing forces from *Scotland*. 21.

Colchester surrenders at discretion to General *Fairfax*, after 27.

Ann. C. 29. ter having been blocked up ever since *June* 15, and been reduced to the greateſt extremities: Sir *George Liſle* and Sir *Charles Lucas* are ſhot to death.

The two fleets, commanded by *Charles* Prince of *Wales*, and *Robert Rich* Earl of *Warwick*, approach one another, but part without fighting, and the Prince ſails back to *Holland*.

Sept. 1. *Oliver Cromwell* continues his march towards *Scotland*, in queſt of *Monroe*, who avoids a battle.

11. The Independents (exalted with the army's ſucceſs againſt the *Scots*, &c.) preſent a petition to the Parliament full of complaints and reproaches againſt the Commons.

13. The Parliament's Commiſſioners ſet out from *London* for the Iſle of *Wight*.

The Prince of *Wales* comes to the *Hague*.

18. The treaty at *Newport* begins, and ſeven days are ſpent in ſettling the preamble of one of the three bills.

Pontefract is beſieged by the Parliament's forces.

20. *Oliver Cromwell* comes near *Scotland*, and writes to the Eſtates to recall *Monroe*, and deliver up *Berwick* and *Carliſle*, which the *Scots* had ſeized.

General *Fairfax* after the taking of *Colcheſter*, marches to *St. Albans* with his army.

Cromwell marches to *Edinburgh*, and forces the Committee of Eſtates to fly.

An agreement is concluded in *Scotland* between *Archibald Campbel* Marquiſs of *Argyle*, *George Hamilton* Earl of *Lanerick*, and General *Monroe*.

Berwick ſurrenders to *Cromwell*'s forces, who blocked it up.

James Butler Marquis of *Ormond*, goes over to *Ireland*.

Octob. 7. The King ſends a meſſage to both Houſes, with his offers concerning the Aſſembly of Divines, the Directory, Biſhops lands, the Covenant, the Militia, &c.

11. *Oliver Cromwell* comes back from *Scotland* into *England*.

Carliſle is reſtored by the *Scots* to the *Engliſh*.

Cromwell comes to *Newcaſtle*.

The regiments begin to preſent petitions, under pretence of demanding their pay; but chiefly tending to obſtruct the treaty, and to bring the King to the block.

21. The King ſends a meſſage to both Houſes with his offers concerning Epiſcopacy: He conſents to the aboliſhing of Archbiſhops and the reſt of the Hierarchy, except Biſhops; and

and to the Parliament's nominating the Great Officers of the Kingdom. *Ann. C.*

The Parliament of *Scotland* condemns the laſt war, and the Duke of *Hamilton*'s engagement. 26.

The King's offers about Epiſcopacy and the Covenant are rejected by both Houſes, and ſo the treaty of *Newport* ended.

Colonel *Rainsborough* is aſſaſſinated at *Doncaſter* in *Yorkſhire*, by a party of the garriſon of *Pontefract*. 29.

The King's propoſals about Delinquents are voted unſatisfactory. 30.

The officers of *Ingoldsby*'s regiment preſent a petition to General *Fairfax* againſt the treaty of *Newport*.

The Parliament's Commiſſioners are recalled from *Newport*, except three. *Nov.* 4.

Charles, Prince of *Wales*, hath the ſmall-pox at the *Hague*. He gives the command of his fleet to Prince *Rupert*.

The King gives his final anſwer concerning Epiſcopacy; which is voted unſatisfactory. 11.

Colonel *Lambert* departs from *Scotland*, where he had been left by *Cromwell*.

Some of the Prince of *Wales*'s ſhips come away from *Holland*, and join the Earl of *Warwick*'s ſquadron. 17.

A remonſtrance from the officers of the army is preſented to the Parliament by Colonel *Ewers*, requiring that the King be brought to juſtice; that no King be hereafter admitted but upon election of the People, *&c.* 20.

The treaty at *Newport* being nigh concluded, General *Fairfax* through the practices of the Independents, recalls Colonel *Hammond* from his government of the Iſle of *Wight*; and ſends Colonel *Ewers* in his room, with orders to keep the King in cloſe cuſtody: The Commons vote, that Colonel *Hammond* ſhould ſtay in the Iſle of *Wight*, but are not obeyed. 21.

Petitions from the regiments under *Cromwell* are ſent to General *Fairfax*, all agreeing in demanding juſtice upon the King.

The army marches towards *London*, and publiſhes a Declaration or Manifeſto, concerning the evil and danger of the treaty with the King. 30.

The King is removed to *Hurſt* Caſtle in *Hampſhire*, by Lieutenant Colonel *Cobbet* and a detachment from the army.

General *Fairfax* comes to *Whitehall* with ſeveral regiments. *Dec.* 2.

The

Ann. C.

The Commons vote that the removing the King to *Hurſt* Caſtle was without their conſent.

4.

5. At five of the clock in the morning they vote, that the King's conceſſions were ſufficient grounds for ſettling the peace of the Kingdom.

6. Several other regiments come to *London*.

Two more regiments are placed as a guard to the Parliament, and the city trained-bands are diſcharged.

Forty-one Members of the Houſe of Commons are put under arreſt by the army, as they were going into the Houſe.

The army preſents to the Houſe of Commons propoſals and deſires in vindication of their conduct, againſt *Holles*, *Brown*, and the reſt of the 41 Members.

7. *Oliver Cromwell* comes to *London*, and receives the thanks of the Houſe of Commons for his great ſervices.

About 90 of the Members are hindered by the ſoldiers from going into the Houſe of Commons.

The Parliament conſiſted at preſent only of Independents, Anabaptiſts, *&c.*

11. The army preſents to the General a new repreſentative, or an agreement of the People, for ſettling the Government.

13. The Commons vote, that no further addreſſes ſhould be made to the King, and that the treaty of *Newport* was highly diſhonourable to the Nation.

15. The ſecluded Members publiſh a proteſtation againſt the violence offered to them, which is declared ſcandalous.

16. An ordinance is made by the Parliament concerning the election of the Lord-Mayor and other Officers of *London*.

The King is brought from *Hurſt* Caſtle to *Windſor*.

The vote of the Commons declaring the King's propoſitions a ſufficient ground for peace is revoked.

19. *Scarborough* ſurrenders to the Parliament.

The officers under Major-General *J. Lambert* ſend up a petition to General *Fairfax* agreeable to the army's remonſtrance.

21. A petition from the inhabitants of *Somerſetſhire* is preſented to the Parliament, deſiring that ſpeedy juſtice may

23. be executed upon the chief Delinquents. Accordingly, a Committee is appointed to draw up a charge againſt the chief Delinquents.

The fleet commanded by the Earl of *Warwick*, ſends a declaration wherein they concurred with the army in their remonſtrance.

The

The inhabitants of *Norfolk* petition that the King might be brought to juſtice. *Ann. C.* 25.

James Butler Marquiſs of *Ormond* concludes a peace with the *Iriſh* Rebels, but *Owen Roe O Neal* refuſes to come into it.

The garriſon at *Kingſton* upon *Hull* preſents a petition againſt the King; and ſeveral other petitions of the like nature are preſented from ſeveral parts.

The Council of war orders all the uſual ceremonies to the King, as ſerving upon the knee, *&c.* to be laid aſide, and moſt of his domeſtics to be diſmiſſed. 27.

An ordinance is drawn up for erecting a High-court of Juſtice for trying the King. *Jan.* 1.

Both Houſes declare, That, by the fundamental laws of this realm, it is treaſon in the King of *England*, for the time to come, to levy war againſt the Parliament and Kingdom of *England*.

The Ordinance, and the Commons vote, are carried up to the Lords, who reject them, and adjourn from *Tueſday* till *Thurſday* ſeven-night; whereupon, the Commons vote, That the concurrence of the Lords was not neceſſary. 1648-49. *January.*

They vote again, That the People are the original of all Power; That the Commons of *England*, aſſembled in Parliament, choſen by, and repreſenting the People, have the Supreme Authority; and that whatſoever is enacted by them, aſſembled in Parliament, hath the force of law, without the conſent of King or Houſe of Peers. 4.

The ordinance for trying the King paſſes the Houſe of Commons. 6.

The Committee of Eſtates of *Scotland* ſend a letter to the Parliament, deſiring that the King might not be tried, without the advice of their Nation.

A Herald makes proclamation, That all people come in to give their charge againſt the King. 9.

The ſoldiers, and other inhabitants of the Iſle of *Wight*, petition that notorious criminals be brought to juſtice.

John Bradſhaw is appointed Preſident of the High-Court of Juſtice. 10.

Petitions are ſent from *Exeter* and *Oxford* againſt the King; and alſo from the Common-Council of *London*.

The Parliament of *Scotland* declares for the Covenant; as alſo againſt the trial of the King, and againſt all alteration in the Government; but thoſe that were concerned in the late war, are not admitted into this Parliament.

Major-General *Maſſey* eſcapes from *St. James's*, where he was priſoner. 18.

The

Ann. C.
19. The King is brought from *Windſor* to *St. James*'s Palace.

North-Wales ſends up a petition of the ſame nature as the reſt.

The High-Court of Juſtice meets in *Weſtminſter-Hall.*

20. The King is brought before this Court, and accuſed of High-treaſon, and High-miſdemeanors; and his charge is read; but his Majeſty refuſes to anſwer, and will not acknowledge the authority of the Court.

Some papers, and a declaration from the Parliament of *Scotland* againſt the trial of the King, are preſented to the Houſe of Commons.

22. The King is brought the ſecond time before the High-Court of Juſtice. He refuſes again to anſwer, and delivers in writing his reaſons againſt the juriſdiction of the Court.

23. The King is brought a third time before the Court, and refuſes to anſwer.

24, 25. The Court examines the witneſſes againſt the King.

27. Sentence of death is paſſed upon him.

29. He is permitted to ſee his children.

30. King *Charles* I. is beheaded, before the *Banquetting-Houſe* at *Whitehall*, after a troubleſome Reign of 23 years, 10 months, and 3 days, being aged 48 years, 2 months, and 1*f* days; and was buried the 9th of *February* following, in *Henry* the Eighth's vault, in St. *George*'s Chapel at *Windſor.*

The Character *of* CHARLES I.

It is no eaſy thing to give a juſt and exact character of *Charles* I, amidſt the exceſſive commendations beſtowed on him by ſome, and the calumnies wherewith others have endeavoured to blacken his reputation. If the parties born in his Reign, had died with him (ſays *Rapin*) we might find in the Hiſtories of that time, compoſed after the troubles were over, an impartiality which might help to form a true judgment of this Prince's character. But the ſame parties continuing in the following Reigns, with a mutual animoſity, it may be ſaid, there is not an impartial *Engliſh* Hiſtorian upon this ſubject. Some had no other view than to vindicate the King, and others, whoſe aim was to juſtify the Parliament, could not do it without loading the King, and rendering him odious. We muſt therefore proceed with the utmoſt caution when we are in ſearch of this Prince's character, for fear of being miſled, and drawn into error by the different repreſentations given their readers by the

Hiſtorians. Notwithſtanding theſe difficulties, I ſhall briefly ſpeak my thoughts, free from all party paſſion and prejudice.

I do not find, the commendations beſtowed on *Charles* I, with regard to ſobriety, temperance, and chaſtity, were ever conteſted. All agree likewiſe, that he was a good husband, a good father, and a good maſter. But ſome accuſe him, and perhaps not unjuſtly, of ſuffering his Queen to have too great an influence over him, and too large a ſhare in State-affairs. The Kingdom being Proteſtant, and the Queen a very zealous Catholick, her power, which ſhe greatly abuſed, in cauſing the moſt important offices to be conferred on Papiſts, muſt have been looked upon with a jealous eye. This was the chief ground of the opinion ſpread about the Kingdom, that the Court intended to reſtore the Catholick Religion in *England*.

He was ſo great a lover of juſtice, that no temptation could diſpoſe him to a wrongful action, except it was ſo diſguiſed to him, that he believed it to be juſt. Theſe are the Lord *Clarendon*'s own words, which may be very true, if applied to the concerns of particular perſons. But beſides the juſtice which a King ought to adminiſter impartially to private perſons, there is another kind of juſtice due from him, to all his people in general. With reſpect to this laſt, it may juſtly be doubted, that the Lord *Clarendon*'s encomium is inconſiſtent with the project of altering the Conſtitution, and aſſuming a power, which certainly was illegal. Nay, I do not believe, that this was one of the things diſguiſed to him, and I ſhould rather think, it was by him, that his miniſters and courtiers framed their conduct, and adapted their notions to his, in order to make their court, and advance their fortune. T. III. P. 197.

Never was King perhaps ſo punctual and regular in his devotions both publick and private. This was of ſome uſe to him, to repel the charge of his not being well-affected to the Proteſtant Religion, and he knew how to improve it on occaſion.

He abhorred all debauchery, and could not endure an obſcene or prophane word. His Court was very different from his father's, where oaths, prophane jeſts, and obſcene diſcourſe were but too much in vogue. It is hard to conceive, how the Duke of *Buckingham*, who was uſed to King *James*'s ways, could accommodate himſelf to the gravity and ſeverity of *Charles* I, or how King *Charles* could adapt himſelf to the Duke of *Buckingham*'s manners.

James

James I, was laviſh, and his Son *Charles* inclined towards avarice, but this failing may be excuſed by the conſideration, that he never abounded with money, from the beginning to the end of his reign.

His enemies would repreſent him as a cruel and bloody Prince; but as they have not been able to reproach him with any particular action denoting ſuch a diſpoſition, it is eaſy to perceive, this charge is founded on the ſuppoſition of his having been author of a war wherein ſo much blood was ſpilt.

Sincerity as appears in his Hiſtory, was not his favourite virtue. He made frequent uſe of mental reſervations, concealed in ambiguous terms, and general expreſſions, of which he reſerved the explication at a proper time and place. For this reaſon, the Parliament could never confide in his promiſes, wherein there was always either ſome ambiguous term, or ſome reſtriction that rendered them uſeleſs. This may be ſaid to be one of the principal cauſes of his ruin, becauſe giving thereby occaſion of diſtruſt, it was not poſſible to find any expedient for a peace with the Parliament. He was thought to act with ſo little ſincerity in his engagements, that it was believed there was no dependence on his word. The Parliament could not even reſolve to debate on the King's propoſitions, ſo convinced were they of his ability to hide his real intentions under ambiguous expreſſions. But they ſent their own propoſitions to the King, with the liberty only of ſaying *Content*, or not *Content*, ſo apprehenſive were they of his explications. But as I may be accuſed of loading the King too much upon the point of ſincerity, I think it incumbent on me, to juſtify what I have ſaid, by an unexceptionable evidence. I mean the Earl of *Clarendon*.

Clarendon, III. p. 335. *A Law enacted by violence and force*, ſays that illuſtrious Hiſtorian, *is not rightfully enacted, was one of thoſe poſitions of* Ariſtotle, *which hath never been ſince contradicted, and was an advantage, that being well managed, and ſtoutly inſiſted upon, would, in ſpite of all their machinations have brought his Majeſty's enemies to a temper of being treated with. But I have ſome cauſe to believe, that even this argument which was unanſwerable for the rejecting the bill* [for taking away the Biſhop's votes,] *was applied for the confirming it; and an opinion, that the violence and force uſed in procuring it, rendered it abſolutely invalid and void, made the confirmation of it leſs conſidered, as not being of ſtrength to make that act good, which was in itſelf null. And I doubt*

doubt this logick had an influence upon other acts of no leſs moment than theſe.

Let the Reader judge after this, if we may boaſt of King *Charles*'s ſincerity, ſince even in paſſing Acts of Parliament, which is the moſt authentick and ſolemn promiſe a King of *England* can make, he gave his aſſent, merely in an opinion, that they were void in themſelves, and conſequently he was not bound by this engagement. I paſs over in ſilence the manifeſt breach of the petition of right, perhaps upon the ſame principle, and of his many aſſurances to his Parliament of his intention to maintain their privileges, which he violated within a few days, becauſe theſe things have been ſufficiently ſpoken of in the Hiſtory of his Reign.

Some accuſe him of an inclination for the *Roman* Catholick Religion, nay, there are who carry this charge ſo far as to ſay, he intended to reſtore it in *England*. Theſe imputations are groundleſs. But it cannot be denied, that he gave occaſion for them by his conduct, though contrary to his intention. During the firſt fifteen years of his Reign, the *Roman* Catholicks were not only ſcreened from the rigour of the Law, but even encouraged and countenanced to ſuch a degree, that he made them Privy-Counſellors, Secretaries of State, and Lords-Lieutenants of Counties. Two things induced him to this condeſcenſion. The firſt, the Queen's importunities, who was extremely zealous for her Religion. The ſecond, his project to render himſelf abſolute, for the execution of which, he believed the aſſiſtance of the Catholicks, as well *Engliſh* as foreigners, to be neceſſary. But I will not affirm, that the Queen, and ſome of the Miniſtry had not formed with regard to Religion, more extenſive projects, which they did not think proper to impart to the King. The aſſiſtance of the Catholicks, whom the King had managed for another occaſion, became neceſſary for his own defence, after his breach with the Parliament. How unwilling ſoever he ſeemed to receive any aid from the Papiſts, it is certain, many were entertained in his ſervice, and that he was privately aſſiſted by the Catholicks on ſundry important occaſions.

Though it cannot be proved that he excited the *Iriſh* rebellion, it may however be affirmed, it was not againſt him that the *Iriſh* took arms, ſince they never had leſs cauſe to complain, than in this and the late Reign. Beſides, the Papiſts, both *Iriſh* and *Engliſh*, always looked upon this Prince as their Protector, and were ever ready to aſſiſt him. Had he ſucceeded in his deſigns, very like-

to 42 *l.* by tale; namely, into Unites at 20 *s.* Double Crowns at 10 *s.* or *British* Crowns at 5 *s.* a piece. And a pound of Silver of the old Standard, of eleven Ounces, Two-penny weight fine, into ſixty-two Shillings by tale; namely, into Crowns, Half-Crowns, Shillings, Half-Shillings, Two-pences, Pence, and Half-pence.

The Gold Coins of this King (as appears by the Indenture above) are, Roſe-Rials, Angels, Unites, Double and Britiſh Crowns. The Roſe-Rial has, on one ſide, the King's figure in wrought Armour, crowned, and holding in his right hand the Scepter, reſting upon his Shoulder; and in his

1

4

2

3

5

6

7

8

his left hand the Ball, CAROLUS. D. G. MAG. BRITAN. FRAN. ET. HIB. REX. Reverſe, under a Crown, the Arms quartered, *Scotland* in the firſt and fourth Quarter, between C. R. crowned, HIS. PRÆSVM. VT. PROSIM. ſtruck, probably, when the King was in *Scotland*, and weighing Six Penny weights, eight Grains, and a quarter. (*Fig.* 1.) The Spur-Rial, weighing juſt half the other, exhibits the King's head crowned, looking the contrary way, and extending to the edge, CAR. D. G. MAG. BRIT. FRAN. ET. HIB. REX. Reverſe, the Arms, as before, VNITA TVEMVR. The Unite has XX. behind the King's head crowned in Ruff, CAROLVS. D. G. MAG. BRIT. FRA. ET. HIB. REX. Reverſe, Arms in a ſquare ſhield crowned, CULTORES. SVI. DEVS PROTEGIT. Another, with the falling Band, has a Sun for the Mint-mark; and reverſe, the Arms in an oval Shield crowned, C. R. FLORENT. CONCORDIA. REGNA.—— The Silver Coins of this King are Crowns, Half-Crowns, Shillings, Six-pences, Two-pences, Pence, and Half-pence: As alſo, ten and twenty Shilling-pieces, peculiar to this King, which have his Figure on horſe-back. The Crown piece has the King on horſe-back, with his Sword in his hand, CAROLVS. D. G. MAG. BRITA. FRAN. ET. HIBER. REX. Reverſe, between C. R. the Arms in an oval Shield crowned, CHRISTO. AVS-

PICE REGNO. Another has on one ſide a plain Croſs, on the other V. with s above it. The Half-Crowns are various; ſome with the Arms in an Oval, ſome in a ſquare Shield. They have for Mint-marks, a Lion Paſſant, and in ſome Gardant, Anchor, Harp, Fleur-de-lis, &c. The *Newark* Half-Crown, in form of a Lozenge, has C. R. on each ſide of a Crown, and XXX. below. Reverſe, OBS. NEWARK. 1646. (There is alſo a *Newark* Shilling, exactly in the ſame form, and with the ſame inſcription; only it has XII. inſtead of XXX.) (*Fig.* 6.) The *Pontefract* Half-Crown is in the ſame form as that of *Newark:* On one ſide C.R. crowned, DUM. SPIRO. SPERO. Reverſe, the Caſtle, and a hand out of one of the Towers, holding a drawn Sword, OBS. P. C. 1648. (The *Pontefract* Shilling wants the Sword and Hand, and has XII. inſtead of XXX. but in other reſpects it is like the Half-Crown.) (*Fig.* 5.) There is alſo a three Shilling piece, coined at the Siege of *Carliſle*, having C. R. and III. below: Reverſe, OBS. CARL. 1645. Of the Shillings, ſome have the King's head crowned, with the Ruff, and XII. behind the Head: Reverſe, the Arms, and CHRISTO AUSPICE REGNO. a croſs the Mint-mark. (*Fig.* 2.) Another is with a falling Band, (*Fig.* 3.) One has 1637, and ARCHETYPUS MONETÆ. ARGENTÆ. ANGLIÆ. The *Carliſle* Shilling, which is an *Octogone*, has a Crown with C. R. XII. Reverſe, OBS. CARL. 1645. The Six-pences are ſtrictly like the Shilling, only have VI. inſtead of XII. The *Carliſle* Six-pence, has C. R. crowned. Reverſe, VI. The *Carliſle* Groat, is *Octogone*, and has on the Reverſe IIII. (*Fig.* 7.) The Three-pence has the King's Head, Title, and Arms, as the larger pieces, CHRISTO. AVSPICE. REGNO. One has the Oſtrich-Feathers, (becauſe made of *Welſh* Silver,) with this Motto, EXVRGAT. DEVS. DISSIPENTVR. INIMICI. In the Field, RELIG. PRO. LEG. ANG. LIBER. PAR. 1645. (*Fig.* 4.) The Two-pence has II. behind the King's head, with Title and Arms as the Three-pence, Legend IVSTITIA. THRONVM. FIRMAT. One has the King in Ruff, bareheaded, CAR. DG. MAG. BRIT. FRAN. ET. HIB. Reverſe, two Cs. interlinked under a Crown, FIDEI DEFENSOR. (*Fig.* 8.) The Penny has I. behind the King's head.

The

Ann. C.

The NOBILITY, created in this Reign, was as follows:

Oliver St. John (Viſcount *Grandiſon* in *Ireland*) Baron *Tregoze.* 1625. 21 *May.*

Horatio Vere, Baron *Vere* of *Tilbury.* 25 *July.*

Henry Baron *Mountague*,—Earl of *Manchester.* 1625-26. 5 *Feb.*

George Baron *Carew*,—Earl of *Totneſs.*
Thomas Howard, Viſcount *Andover*—Earl of *Berkſhire.*
Thomas Lord *Wentworth*—Earl of *Cleveland.*
James Lord *Ley* —— Earl of *Marlborough.*

Edmund Lord *Sheffield*—Earl of *Mulgrave.* 1626. 22 *May.*

Dudley Carleton, Baron *Carleton*, of *Imbercourt.*

——— Viſcount *Dorcheſter.* 1628. 25 *July.*

William Lord *Knollys*, Viſcount *Wallingford* — Earl of *Banbury.* 18 *Aug.*

Edward Lord *Denny*—Earl of *Norwich.* 24 *Oct.*

Nicholas Tuſton, Baron *Tuſton.* 1 *Nov.*

——— Earl of *Thanet.* 1628. 5 *Auguſt.*

Thomas Savage, Lord *Darcy*, Viſcount *Colcheſter*—Earl *Rivers.* 1 *Nov.*

Robert Bertie, Lord *Willoughby* of *Eresby*—Earl of *Lindſey.* 22 *Nov.*

William Craven, Baron *Craven.* 1626-27. 16 *Mar.*

Thomas Brudenel, Baron *Brudenel.* 1627. 26 *April.*

Thomas Bellaſis, Baron *Faucenbergh.* 27 *May.*

——— Viſcount *Faucenbergh.* 1642-43. 31 *Jan.*

Montjoy Blount (Baron *Montjoy* in *Ireland*) Baron *Montjoy* of *Thurveſton* in *Derbyſhire.*

——— Earl of *Newport.* 1628. 3 *Auguſt.*

Nevil Lovelace, Baron *Lovelace.* 31 *May.*

Edward Conway, Viſcount *Conway.* 6 *June.*

Emanuel Baron *Scrope*—Earl of *Sunderland.* 19 *June.*

John Paulet, Baron *Paulet* of *Hinton St. George.* 23 *June.*

Robert Pierrepont, Baron *Pierrepont*, and Viſcount *Newark.* 29 *June.*

Ann. C.

1628. ——— Earl of *Kingſton.*

25 *July.*

1627-28. *William Harvey* (Baron *Harvey* of *Roſs* in *Ireland*) Baron

7 *Feb.* *Harvey* of *Kidbrook.*

27 *Feb.* *Paul Bayning*, Baron of *Horkeſley*, and *Bentley* in *Eſſex.*

8 *Mar.* ——— Viſcount *Bayning* of *Sudbury.*

1627-28. *William Cavendiſh*, Baron of *Ogle*, and Viſcount *Manſ-*

7 *Mar.* *field*——Earl of *Newcaſtle.* See 27 *October* 1643.

8 *Mar.* *Henry Carey*, Baron of *Hunſdon*, and Viſcount *Rochford*——Earl of *Dover.*

9 *Mar.* *John* Lord *Mordaunt*, Earl of *Peterborough.*

14 *Mar.* *William Maynard* (Baron *Maynard* of *Wicklow* in *Ireland*) Baron *Maynard* of *Little-Eaſton.*

1628. *Henry Grey*, Earl of *Stamford.*

26 *Mar.*

Henry Percy, Earl of *Northumberland*——Baron *Percy.*

10 *April.* *Thomas Coventry*, Baron *Coventry* of *Aleſborough.*

13 *April.* *Richard Weſton*, Baron *Weſton* of *Neyland.*

1632. ——— Earl of *Portland.*

14 *April.* *George Goring*, Baron *Goring* of *Hurſt-Pierrepont.*

1644. ——— Earl of *Norwich.*

8 *Nov.*

15 *April.* *John Mohun*, Baron *Mohun* of *Oakhampton.*

29 *April.* *Edward Howard*, Baron *Howard* of *Eſcrick.*

5 *May.* *Baptiſt Hicks*, Baron *Hicks* of *Ilmington*, and Viſcount *Campden.*

12 *July.* *Elizabeth Finch*, Counteſs of *Winchilſea.*

21 *July.* *John Saville*, Baron *Saville* of *Pontefract.*

22 *July.* *Thomas Wentworth*, Baron of *Wentworth-Woodhouſe.*

1628. ——— Viſcount *Wentworth.*

10 *Dec.*

1639. ——— Baron *Raby*, and Earl of *Straffor.d.*

12 *Jan.*

31 *July.* *William Leigh*, Baron *Dunſmore.*

2 *Aug.* *Robert Dormer*, Viſcount *Aſcot*, and Earl of *Caernarvon.*

4 *Aug.* *Philip Stanhope*, Earl of *Cheſterfield.*

23 *Aug.* *Richard Burgh* [or *Burk*] (Earl of *Clanricard* in *Ireland*) ——— Earl of *St. Albans.*

20 *Sept.* *John Boteler*, Baron *Botel.r* of *Bramfield.*

18 *Oct.* *Edward Noel*, Viſcount *Campden.*

4 *Dec.* *Catherine Ogle* (wife of *Cavendiſh* Earl of *Newcaſtle*) Baroneſs *Ogle.*

1629. *William Herbert*, Baron *Powis.*

2 *April.*

Edward

Ann. C.

Edward Herbert (Baron of *Caſtle-Iſland* in *Ireland*) Baron *Herbert* of *Cherbury*. 7 *May.*

Edward Noel (Baron *Noel* of *Ridlington*) Baron *Hicks* of *Ilmington*. 18 *Oct.*

Francis Cottington, Baron *Cottington* of *Hanworth*. 1631. 20 *July.*

Henry Howard, Baron *Mowbray*, by deſcent and ſumm. 1639-40. 21 *Mar.*

John Finch, Baron *Finch* of *Fordwich*. 1640. 7 *April.*

William Seymour, Marquiſs of *Somerſet*. 3 *June.*

——— *Longueville*, Baron *Grey* of *Ruthyn*. Allowed 3 *Nov.* in Parliament.

William Howard, Baron *Stafford*. 11 *Nov.*

——— Viſcount *Stafford*. 16 *Nov.*

Edward Littleton, Baron *Littleton* of *Munſtow*. 1640-41. 18 *Feb.*

Francis Seymour, Baron *Seymour* of *Trowbridge*. 19 *Feb.*

Elizabeth [*Darcy*] (widow of *Thomas Savage* Earl *Rivers*) Counteſs *Rivers*. 21 *April.*

Thomas Bruce (Earl of *Elgin* in *Scotland*) Baron *Bruce* of *Wharlton*. 1 *Aug.*

Arthur Capel, Baron *Capel* of *Hadham*. 6 *Aug.*

James Stewart, Duke of *Richmond*. 8 *Aug.*

Conyers Darcy, Baron *de Darcy*, and *Conyers* of *Hornby*. 10 *Aug.*

Richard Newport, Baron *Newport* of *High-Ercall*. 1642. 14 *Oct.*

Henry Somerſet, Marquiſs of *Worceſter*. 2 *Nov.*

——— *Minſhull*, Baron *Minſhull*. 18 *Dec.*

John Craven, Baron *Craven* of *Ryton*. 1642-43. 21 *Mar.*

Henry Spencer, Earl of *Sunderland*. 1643. 8 *June.*

Rupert (Prince) Earl of *Holderneſs*. 24 *June.*

——— Baron of *Holderneſs*. 1643-44. 1 *Jan.*

——— Duke of *Cumberland*. 24 *Jan.*

Henry Percy, Baron *Percy* of *Alnwick*. 28 *June.*

Henry Wilmot (Baron *Wilmot* of *Athlone* in *Ireland*) Baron *Wilmot* of *Adderbury*. 29 *June.*

Thomas Leigh, Baron *Leigh* of *Stoneley*. 1 *July.*

Chriſtopher Hatton, Viſcount *Hatton* of *Kirby*. 29 *July.*

Ralph Hopton, Baron *Hopton* of *Stratton*. 4 *Sept.*

Ann. C.

8 *Sept.* *Henry Jermyn*, Baron *Jermyn* of *St. Edmundsbury.*
23 *Oct.* *Henry Haſtings*, Baron *Haſtings* of *Loughborough.*
24 *Oct.* *John Byron*, Baron *Byron* of *Rochdale.*
25 *Oct.* *Richard Vaughan* (Earl of *Carlbery* in *Ireland*) Baron *Vaughan* of *Emlyn.*
27 *Oct.* *William Cavendiſh*, Earl of *Newcaſtle*, Baron *Bothal* and *Hepple*, and Marquiſs of *Newcaſtle.*
31 *Oct.* *Charles Smith*, Baron *Carrington* of *Wotton-Waven.*
10 *Nov.* *William Widdrington*, Baron *Widdrington* of *Blanckney.*

1643-44. *James Steuart*, Duke of *York*, afterwards King *James* II.
27 *Jan.*
23 *Mar.* *Humble Ward*, Baron *Ward* of *Birmingham.*
1644. *Alice* [*Leigh*] wife of Sir *Robert Dudley*, Kt. and Duke
23 *May.* of the Empire, Ducheſs *Dudley.*
25 *May.* *Thomas Saville*, Earl of *Suſſex.*
27 *May.* *Patrick Ruthen* (Earl of *Forth* in *Scotland*) Earl of *Brentford*, including Barony.
3 *June.* *Francis Leigh*, Earl of *Chicheſter.*
21 *Oct.* *John Colepepyr*, Baron *Colepepyr* of *Thorſway.*
4 *Nov.* *Jacob Aſtley*, Baron *Aſtley* of *Reading.*
Richard Boyle (Earl of *Cork*) Baron *Clifford* of *Lanesborough.*

1644-45. *John Lucas*, Baron *Lucas* of *Shenfield.*
3 *Jan.*
John Brook, Baron *Cobham.*
27 *Jan.* *John Belleſis*, Baron *Belleſis* of *Worlaby.*
28 *Jan.* *Lewis Watſon*, Baron *Rockingham.*
1645. *Henry Pierrepont*, Marquiſs of *Dorcheſter.*
25 *Mar.*
1 *Sept.* *Robert Cholmley* or *Cholmondley* (Viſcount *Cholmley* of *Kellis* in *Ireland*) Baron *Cholmley* of *Wich-Malbank.*
8 *Nov.* *Charles Gerard*, Baron *Gerard* of *Brandon.*
21 *Nov.* *Robert Sutton*, Baron *Lexington* of *Averham.*
10 *Dec.* *Charles Stewart*, Baron *Newbury*, and Earl of *Lichfield.*
Francis Leke, Earl of *Scarſdale.*
Edward Somerſet, Viſcount *Grafmont* and *Caldecot*, and Earl of *Glamorgan.*

Knights of the Garter elected in the Reign of King CHARLES I.

Claude de Lorrain, Duke of *Chevreuſe.*
Guſtavus Adolphus, King of *Sweden.*
Henry Frederic de Naſſau, Prince of *Orange.*

Theophilus

Theophilus Howard, Earl of *Suffolk*.
William Compton, Earl of *Northampton*.
Richard Weſton, Lord *Weſton*, Lord Treaſurer of *England*, and afterwards Earl of *Portland*.
Robert Bertie, Earl of *Lindſey*.
William Cecil, Earl of *Exeter*.
James Hamilton, Marquiſs of *Hamilton*, Earl of *Cambridge* and *Arran*.
Charles Lodowick, Count *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, Prince Elector of the Empire, and Duke of *Bavaria*.
James Stewart, Duke of *Lenox*, and Earl of *March*, afterwards Duke of *Richmond*.
Henry Danvers, Earl of *Danby*.
William Douglas, Earl of *Morton*.
Algernoon Percy, Earl of *Northumberland*.
Charles, Prince of *Wales*, afterwards King of *England*, of that name the ſecond.
Thomas Wentworth, Earl of *Strafford*.
James Stewart, Duke of *York*, afterwards King *James*, of that name the ſecond.
Rupert, Count *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, and Duke of *Bavaria*, afterwards Earl of *Holderneſs*, and Duke of *Cumberland*, ſecond ſon of the King of *Bohemia*.
William de Naſſau, Prince of *Orange*.
Bernard de Nogaret de Foix, Duke *d'Eſpernon*, and *de la Valette*.

Baronets created by King CHARLES I. —

206 Sir John Aſhfield of Netherhall in Suffolk. Kt. July 27, 1626. extinct.
207 Henry Harpur of Calk in Derbyſhire, Eſq; Sept. 8.
208 Edward Seabright of Beſford in Worceſterſhire, Eſq; December 20.
209 John Beaumont of Grace-dieu in Leiceſterſhire, Eſq; June 29. ex.
210 Sir Edward Dering of Surrenden-Dering in Kent, Kt. February 1.
211 George Kemp of Pentlow in Eſſex, Eſq; — 5. ex.
212 William Brereton of Hanford in Cheſhire, Eſq; March 10. ex.
213 Patricius Curwen of Workington in Cumberland, Eſq; — 12. ex.
214 William Ruſſel of Witley in Worceſterſhire, Eſq; — 12. ex.

215 John

215 John Spencer of Offley in Herefordſhire, Eſq; — 14. ex.
216 Sir Giles Eſtcourt of Newton in Wiltſhire, Kt. — 17. ex.
217 Thomas Aylesbury, Eſq; one of the Maſters of the Requeſts, April 19, 1627. ex.
218 Thomas Style of Watringbury in Kent, Eſq; — 21. ex.
219 Frederic Cornwallis of Brome in Suffolk, Eſq; now an Engliſh Baron, Lord Cornwallis, May 4.
220 Drue Drury of Riddleworth in Norfolk, Eſq; — 7. ex.
221 William Skeffington of Fiſherwick in Staffordſhire, ſince Viſcount Mazarene, — 8. *Iriſh.*
222 Sir Robert Crane of Chilton in Suffolk, Kt. — 11. ex.
223 Anthony Wingfield of Goodwins in Suffolk, Eſq; — 17. ex.
224 William Colepeper of Preſton-Hall in Kent, Eſq; — 17. ex.
225 Giles Bridges of Wilton in Herefordſhire, Eſq; Duke of Chandois. — 17. *E.*
226 John Kirle of Much-Marcle in Herefordſhire, Eſq; — 17. ex.
227 Sir Humphrey Stiles of Beckenham in Kent, Kt. — 20. ex.
228 Henry Moor of Fadley in Berkſhire, Eſq; — 21. ex.
229 Thomas Hele of Fleet in Devonſhire, Eſq; — 28. ex.
230 John Carleton of Holcomb in Oxfordſhire, Eſq; — 28. ex.
231 Thomas Maples of Stow in Huntingdonſhire, Eſq; — 30. ex.
232 Sir John Iſham of Lamport in Northamptonſhire, Kt. — 30.
233 Hervy Bagot of Blithfield in Staffordſhire, Eſq; — 30
234 Lewis Pollard of King's-Nymph in Devonſhire, Eſq — 31. ex.
235 Francis Mannock of Gifferds-Hall in Stok juxta Neyland in Suffolk, Eſq; June 1.
236 Henry Griffith of Agnes-Burton in Yorkſhire, Eſq; — 1. ex.
237 Lodowick Dyer of Staughton in Huntingdonſhire, Eſq; — 8. ex.
238 Sir Hugh Stukely of Hinton in Hampſhire, Kt. — 9. ex.
239 Edward Stanley of Bickerſtaffe in Lancaſhire, Eſq; — 16.
240 Edward Littleton of Pillaton-Hall in Staffordſhire, Eſq; — 18.
241 Ambroſe Brown of Beachworth Caſtle in Surrey, Eſq; July 7. ex.

242 Sir

242 Sackvile Crow of Lanherne in Caermarthenſhire, Eſq; — 8. ex.
243 Michael Liveſey of Eaſt-Church in the Iſle of Sheppy in Kent, Eſq; — 11. ex.
244 Simon Bennet of Beauchampton in Buckinghamſhire, Eſq; — 17. ex.
245 Sir Thomas Filher, of the parish of St. Giles's in the Fields, in Middleſex, Kt. — 19. ex.
246 Thomas Bowyer of Leighthorn in Suſſex, Eſq; — 25.
247 Buts Bacon of Milden-Hall in Suffolk, Eſq; — 29.
248 John Corbet of Stoke in Shropſhire, Eſq; Sept. 19.
249 Sir Edward Tyrrel of Thorneton in Buckinghamſhire, Kt. October 31.
250 Sir Richard Young, Kt. March 10. ex.
251 William Feanyman, jun. of Mark, alias Marſk, in Yorkſhire, Eſq; March 10. 1628. ex.
252 William Stonehouſe of Radley in Berkſhire, Eſq; — 7
253 Sir Thomas Fowles of Iſlington, in Middleſex, Kt. — 21. ex.
254 Sir John Fenwick of Fenwick in Northumberland, Kt. June 9. ex.
255 Sir William Wray of Trebitch in Cornwall, Kt. — 30. ex.
256 John Trelawney of Trelawney in Cornwall, Eſq; July 1.
257 John Conyers of Hordon in the Biſhopric of Durham, Gent. — 14.
258 John Boles of Scampton in Lincolnſhire, Eſq; — 24. ex.
259 Thomas Aſton of Aſton in Cheſhire, Eſq; — 25.
260 Kendine Jenoure of Much-Dunmore in Eſſex, Eſq; — 30.
261 Sir John Price of Newton in Montgomeryſhire, Kt. Auguſt 15. ex.
262 Sir Richard Beaumont of Whitley in Yorkſhire, Kt. 19. ex.
263 William Wiſeman of Canfield-Hall in Eſſex, Eſq; — 29.
264 Thomas Nightingale of Newport-Pond in Eſſex, Eſq; September 1. ex.
265 John Jaques of Middleſex, Eſq; one of his Majeſty's Gentlemen Penſioners, — 2. ex.
266 Robert Dillington of Knighton in the Iſle of Wight, in Southampton, Eſq; — 6. ex.
267 Francis Pile of Compton in Berkſhire, Eſq; — 12.
268 John Pole of Shute in Devonſhire, Eſq; — 12.
269 William Lewes of Langors in Brecknockſhire, Eſq; — 14. ex.

270 Wil-

270 William Colepepper of Wakehurſt in Suſſex, Eſq; — 20. ex.
271 Peter Van-Loer of Tylehuſt in Berkſhire, Eſq; October 3. ex.
272 Sir John Lawrence of Iver in Bucks, Kt. — 9. ex.
273 Anthony Slingſby of Scriven in Yorkſhire, Eſq; — 23.
274 Thomas Vavaſour of Haſlewood in Yorkſhire, Eſq; — 24.
275 Robert Wolſeley of Wolſeley in Staffordſhire, Eſq; November 24.
276 Rice Rudd of Aberglaſney in Caermarthenſhire, Eſq; December 8. ex.
277 Richard Wiſeman of Thunderſley in Eſſex, Eſq; — 18. ex.
278 Henry Ferrers of Skellingthorpe in Lincolnſhire, Eſq; — 19. ex.
279 John Anderſon of St. Ives in Huntingdonſhire, Eſq; January 3. ex.
280 Sir William Ruſſel of Chippenham in Cambridgeſhire, Kt. — 19.
281 Richard Everard of Much-Waltham in Eſſex, Eſq; — 29.
282 Thomas Powell of Berkinhead in Cheſhire, Eſq; — 31. ex.
283 William Luckin of Waltham in Eſſex, Eſq; Mar. 2.
284 Richard Grahme of Eſke in Cumberland, Eſq; Viſcount Preſton, March 29, 1629. *Scots.*
285 George Twiſleton of Barlow in Yorkſhire, Eſq; April 2. ex.
286 William Acton of the City of London, Eſq; May 30. ex.
287 Nicholas L'Eſtrange of Hunſtanton in Norfolk, Eſq; June 1.
288 John Holland of Quiddenham in Norfolk, Eſq; — 15.
289 Edward Aleyn of Hatfield in Eſſex, Eſq; — 24. ex.
290 Richard Earl of Craglethorp in Lincolnſhire, Eſq; July 2. ex.
291 Robert Ducy of the City of London, Alderman, ſince Viſcount Downe, November 28. *I.* ex.
292 Sir Richard Grenevile, of Kilkhampton in the County of Cornwall, Kt. April 9, 1630. ex.
293 Edward Moſeley of Rolleſton in Staffordſhire, Eſq; July 20. ex.
294 Martin Lumley of Great Bradfield in Eſſex, Eſq; January 8.

295. Wil-

295 William Dalſton of Dalſton in Cumberland, Eſq; February 15.
296 Henry Fletcher of Hutton in the Foreſt in Cumberland, Eſq; — 19. ex.
297 Sir Nicholas Cole of Branſpath in the Biſhopric of Durham, Kt. March 4. ex.
298 Edmund Pye of Leckhamſtead in Bucks, Eſq; April 27, 1641. ex.
299 Simon Every of Eggington in Derbyſhire, Eſq; May 26.
300 William Langley of Higham-Gobion in Bedfordſhire, Eſq; — 29.
301 William Paſton of Oxnead in Norfolk, Eſq; ſince Earl of Yarmouth, June 8. *E.* ex.
302 James Stonehouſe of Amerden-Hall in Eſſex, Eſq; — 11. ex.
303 John Palgrave of Norwood Barningham in Norfolk, Eſq; — 24. ex.
304 Gerard Napper of Middle-Marſh-Hall in Dorſetſhire, Eſq; — 25.
305 Thomas Whitmore of Apley in Shropſhire, Eſq; — 28. ex.
306 John Maney of Linton in Kent, Eſq; — 29. ex.
307 Sir Thomas Cave, of Stanford in Northamptonſhire, Kt. — 30.
308 Sir Chriſtopher Yelverton of Eaſton-Mauduit in Northamptonſhire, Kt. Earl of Suſſex, — 30. *E.*
309 William Boteler of Teſton in Kent, Eſq; July 3.
310 Sir Thomas Hatton of Long-Stanton in Cambridgeſhire, Kt. — 5.
311 Thomas Abdy of Felix-Hall in Eſſex, Eſq; — 7.
312 John Bampfield of Poltimore in Devonſhire, Eſq; July 14.
313 Sir John Cotton of Landwade in Cambridgeſhire, Kt. — 14.
314 Sir Simonds d'Ewes of Stow-Hall in Suffolk, Kt. — 15.
315 Henry Frederic Thynn of Cauſe-Caſtle in Shropſhire, Eſq; ſince Viſcount Weymouth, — 15. *E.*
316 John Burgoyn of Sutton in Bedfordſhire, Eſq; — 15.
317 John Northcote of Hayne in Devonſhire, Eſq; — 17.
318 Sir William Drake of Sherdelow in Bucks, Kt. — 17. ex.
319 Thomas Rouſe of Rouſe-Linch in Worceſterſhire, Eſq; — 23. ex.
320 Ralph Hare of Stow-Bardolph in Norfolk, Eſq; — 23.

321 Sir

321 Sir John Norwich of Brampton in Northamptonſhire, Kt. July 24.
322 John Brownlow of Belton, near Grantham in Lincolnſhire, Eſq; — 26. ex.
323 William Brownlow of Humby in Lincolnſhire, Eſq; Viſcount Tyrconnel, — 27. *I.*
324 John Sidenham of Brimpton in Somerſetſhire, Eſq; — 28. ex.
325 Henry Prat of Colefhall in Berkſhire, Eſq; — 28. ex.
326 Francis Nichols of Hardwick in Northamptonſhire, Eſq; — 28. ex.
327 Sir William Strickland of Boynton in Yorkſhire, Kt. — 30.
328 Sir Thomas Wolriche of Dudmaſton in Shropſhire, Kt. Auguſt 4. ex.
329 Thomas Maleverer of Allerton-Maleverer in Yorkſhire, Eſq; — 4. ex.
330 William Boughton of Lawford in Warwickſhire, Eſq; — 4.
331 John Chicheſter of Raleigh in Devonſhire, — 4.
332 Norton Knatchbull of Merſham-Hatch in Kent, Eſq; — 4.
333 Hugh Windham of Filliden-Court in Dorſetſhire, Eſq; — 4. ex.
334 Richard Carew of Anthony in Cornwall, Eſq; — 9.
335 William Caſtleton of St. Edmonds-Bury in Suffolk, Eſq; — 10.
336 Richard Price of Gogarthan in Cardiganſhire, Eſq; — 10. ex.
337 Hugh Cholmley of Whitby in Yorkſhire, Eſq; — 10. ex.
338 William Spring of Pakenham in Suffolk, Eſq; — 11. ex.
339 Thomas Trevor of Enfield in Middleſex, Eſq; — 11. ex.
340 Sir John Curſon of Keddleſton in Derbyſhire (a Baronet of Scotland.) — 11.
341 Hugh Owen of Orielſton in Pembrokeſhire, Eſq; — 11.
342 Morten Brigs of Haughton in Shropſhire, Eſq; — 12.
343 Henry Heyman of Somerfield in Kent, Eſq; — 12.
344 Thomas Sandford of Hougill Caſtle in Weſtmoreland, Eſq; — 12. ex.
345 Sir Francis Rhodes of Barlbrough in Derbyſhire, Kt. — 14.

346 Richard

346 Richard Sprignell of Coppenthorp in Yorkſhire, Eſq; — 14. ex.
347 Sir John Potts of Mannington in Norfolk, Kt. — 14. ex.
348 Sir John Goodrick of Ribſton in Yorkſhire, Kt. — 14.
349 Robert Binloſs of Barwick in Lancaſhire, Eſq; — 16. ex.
350 William Walter of Sareſden in Oxfordſhire, Eſq; — 16. ex.
351 Thomas Lawley of Spoonhill in Shropſhire, Eſq; — 16.
352 William Fairfax of Eſſon Neſſon in Northamptonſhire, Eſq; Earl of Pomfret, September 6. *E.*
353 John Davye of Creedy in Devonſhire, Eſq; — 9.
354 Thomas Pettus of Rockheath in Norfolk, Eſq; — 22.
355 William Andrews of Donton, alias Dodington, in Northamptonſhire, Eſq; December 11.
356 John Meaux of Kingſton in the Iſle of Wight, Eſq; — 11. ex.
357 Sir Richard Gurney, Kt. Lord Mayor of the City of London. — 14. ex.
358 Thomas Willys of Fen-Ditton in Cambridgeſhire, Eſq; — 15. ex.
359 Francis Armitage of Kirklees in Yorkſhire, Eſq; — 15.
360 Richard Halford of Wiſtow in Leiceſterſhire, Eſq; — 18.
361 Sir Humphry Tufton of the Mote, near Maidſtone in Kent, Kt. — 25. ex.
362 Edward Coke of Langford in Derbyſhire, Eſq; — 30.
363 Isaac Aſtley of Melton-Conſtable in Norfolk, Eſq; Jan. 21. ex.
364 Sir David Cunningham of London (a Baronet of Scotland.) — 21. ex.
365 Sir John Rayney of Wrotham in Kent (a Baronet of Scotland.) — 22. ex.
366 Revet Eldred of Saxham Magna in Suffolk, Eſq; — 29. ex.
367 John Gell of Hopdon in Derbyſhire, Eſq; — 29. ex.
368 Sir Vincent Corbett of Morton-Corbett, in Shropſhire, Kt. — 29. ex.
369 Sir John Kaye of Woodſham in Yorkſhire, Kt. February 4.
370 Thomas Trollop of Caſwick in Lincolnſhire, Eſq; — 5.
371 Edward Thomas of Michael-Town in Glamorganſhire, Eſq; March 3. ex.
372 Sir William Cowper of Ratling Court, in Kent, ſince created a Baron of England, Lord Cowper. — 4.
373 Denner Strut of Little Warley-Hall in Eſſex, Eſq; — 5. ex.

374 William St. Quintin of Harpham in Yorkſhire, Eſq; —8.
375 Sir Robert Kemp of Giſſing in Norfolk, Eſq; — 14.
376 John Read of Brocket-Hall in Hertfordſhire, Eſq; — 16. ex.
377 James Enyan of Flowre in Northamptonſhire, Eſq; April 9, 1642. ex.
378 Sir Edmund Williams of Marnehull in Dorſetſhire, Kt. — 19. ex.
379 John Williams of Minſter in the Iſle of Thanet in Kent, Eſq; — 22. ex.
380 George Wintour of Huddington in Worceſterſhire, Eſq; — 29. ex.
381 John Borlace of Bockmer in Bucks, Eſq; May 4. ex.
382 Henry Knolleys of Grove-Place in Hampſhire, Eſq; May 6.
383 John Hamilton of the City of London, Eſq; — 11. ex.
384 Edward Morgan of Llanternam in Monmouthſhire, Eſq; — 12. ex.
385 Sir Nicholas Kemeys of Keven-Mabley in Glamorganſhire, Kt. — 13. ex.
386 Trevor Williams of Llangibbyl in Monmouthſhire, Eſq; — 14.
387 John Rereſby of Thriberg in Yorkſhire, Eſq; — 16.
388 William Ingleby of Ripley in Yorkſhire, Eſq; — 17.
389 Poynings More of Loſeley in Surrey, Eſq; — 18. ex.
390 Chriſtopher Dawney of Conſick in Yorkſhire, Eſq; Viſcount Downe. — 19. *I.*
391 Thomas Hampſon of Taplow in Bucks, Eſq; June 3.
392 Thomas Williamſon of Eaſt-Markham in the County of Nottingham, Eſq; — 3.
393 William Denny of Gillingham in Norfolk, Eſq; — 3. ex.
394 Sir Richard Hardres of Hardres in Kent, Kt. — 3.
395 Chriſtopher Lowther of White-Haven in Cumberland, Eſq; — 11.
396 Sir Thomas Alſton of Odell in Bedfordſhire, Kt. — 13.
397 Edward Corbet of Leighton in Montgomeryſhire, Eſq; — 20.
398 George Middleton of Leighton in Lancaſhire, Eſq; — 24. ex.
399 Edward Payler of Thoralby in Yorkſhire, Eſq; — 28. ex.
400 Sir William Widdrington of Widdrington in Northumberland, Kt. (an Engliſh Baron, Lord Widdrington.) July 9. Attainted 2 King George I.
401 Matthew Volckenburge of Middle-Ing in Yorkſhire, Eſq; — 20, ex.

402 Phi-

402 Philip Conſtable of Everingham in Yorkſhire, Eſq; --20.
403 Ralph Blackſton of Gibſide in the Biſhopric of Durham, Eſq; --- 30. ex.
404 Edward Widdrington of Cartington in Northumberland, Auguſt 8. ex.
405 Robert Markham of Sedgbrook in Lincolnſhire, Eſq; --- 15. ex.
406 Philip Hungate of Saxton in Yorkſhire, Eſq; Aug. 15. ex.
407 Stephen Lennard of Weſt-Wickham in Kent, Eſq; --- 15. ex.
408 Sir William Thorold of Marſton in Lincolnſhire, Kt. --- 24.
409 Walter Radſton of Hayton in Yorkſhire, Eſq; ---29. ex.
410 Walter Wroteſley of Wroteſley in Staffordſhire, Eſq; --- 30.
411 Thomas Bland of Kippax-Park in Yorkſhire, Eſq; ---30.
412 Robert Throckmorton of Coughton in Warwickſhire, Eſq; September 1.
413 William Halton of Sampford in Eſſex, Eſq; --- 10.
414 Brocket Spencer of Offley in Hertfordſhire, Eſq; ---26. ex.
415 Edward Golding of Colſton-Baſſet in Nottinghamſhire, Eſq; --- 27. ex.
416 William Smith of Crantock in Cornwall, Eſq; --27. ex.
417 Henry Henn of Wingfield in Berkſhire, Eſq; October 1, 1628. ex.
418 Walter Blount of Soddington in Worceſterſhire, Eſq; --- 5.
419 Adam Littleton of Stoke-Milburgh in Shropſhire, Eſq; --- 14. ex.
420 Thomas Lydell of Ravenſholm-Caſtle in the Biſhopric of Durham, Eſq; November 2.
421 Richard Lawday of Exeter in Devonſhire, Eſq; ---9. ex.
422 Thomas Chamberlain of Wickham in Oxfordſhire, Eſq; February 4.
423 Henry Hunlock of Wingerworth in Derbyſhire, Eſq; --- 28.
424 Thomas Badd of Canes-Oyſells in Hampſhire, Eſq; --- 29. ex.
425 Richard Crane of Wood-Riſing in Norfolk, Eſq; March 20. ex.
426 Samuel Danvers of Culworth in Northamptonſhire, Eſq; --- 21.
427 Henry Anderſon of Penley in Hertfordſhire, Eſq; July 3, 1643.

428 William Vavaſour of——in Yorkſhire, Eſq; ---17. ex.
429 Sir Henry Jones of Abermarles in Caermarthenſhire, Kt. --- 25. ex.
430 Sir Edward Walgrave of Hever-Caſtle in Kent, Kt. Baron Waldgrave, Auguſt 1. *E.*
431 Thomas Haggerſton of Haggerſton in Northumberland, Eſq; --- 15.
432 John Pate of Syſonby in Leiceſterſhire, Eſq; October 28. ex.
433 John Bale of Carleton-Curlew in Leiceſterſhire, Eſq; November 9. ex.
434 Brian O Neale in Com' Dublin' in the Kingdom of Ireland, --- 13.
435 Willoughby Hickman of Gainsborough in Lincolnſhire, Eſq; --- 16.
436 John Butler of Brampfield in Hertfordſhire, Eſq; December 7. ex.
437 Edward Bathurſt of Lechlade in Glouceſterſhire, Eſq; ---9.
438 Edward Acton of Aldenham in Shropſhire, Eſq; January 17.
439 Sir Francis Hawley of Buckland in Somerſetſhire, Kt. now Baron Lord Hawley, March 14. *I.*
440 John Preſton of the Mannor —— in Furneſſe in Lancaſhire, Eſq; April 1, 1644. ex.
441 John Webb of Odſtoke in Wiltſhire, Eſq; --- 2.
442 Thomas Preſtwick of Holme in Lancaſhire, Eſq; ---25. ex.
443 Henry Williams of Guernevet in Brecknockſhire, Eſq; May 4. ex.
444 Gervaſe Lucas of Fenton in Lincolnſhire, Eſq; --20. ex.
445 Robert Thorold of Hawley in Lincolnſhire, Eſq; June 14. ex.
446 John Scudamore of Bolingham in Herefordſhire, Eſq; July 23. ex.
447 Sir Henry Bard of Stanes in Middleſex, Kt. ſince Viſcount Bellamont, October 8. *I.* ex.
448 Sir Richard Vivian of Trelowarren in Cornwall, Kt. February 12.
449 William Van-Colſter of Amſterdam in Holland, Eſq; — 28. ex.
450 William Boreel of Amſterdam aforeſaid, Mar. 21. ex.
Sir Hugh Ackland of Columb-John in Devonſhire, Kt. with precedency before all Baronets created after 1644, created January 21, 1677.

Sir

Sir Francis Edwards of Shrewſbury, Kt. to take place of all Baronets created after 1644, created April 22, 1678.

451 George Carteret of Meteſches in the Iſle of Jerſey, Eſq; Lord Carteret, May 9, 1645. *E.*

452 Thomas Windibanke of Haynes in Wiltſhire, Eſq; November 25.

453 Benjamin Wright of Dennington in Suffolk, Eſq; whoſe patent was ſuperſeded by the King's warrant, February 7.

454 Edward Charleton of Heſleyſide in Northumberland, March 6. ex.

455 Sir Richard Willis of Fen-Ditton in Cambridgeſhire, June 11, 1646. ex.

456 Sir Evan Lloyd of Yale in Denbighſhire, Kt. ex.

BOOK XXII.

The COMMONWEALTH *of* ENGLAND.

THE Houſe of Commons paſſes an act to forbid the proclaiming *Charles Stewart*, commonly called the Prince of *Wales*, or any other perſon. *Ann. C.* 1648-9.

The Prince of *Wales*, then at the *Hague*, takes the title of King, under the name of *Charles* II. *February.*

He is proclaimed at *Edinburgh*. 3.

The Houſe of Commons votes the Houſe of Lords to be uſeleſs and dangerous, and therefore to be aboliſhed. 5.

The Commons alone aſſume the name of Parliament; and vote, that the Kingly office ſhould be aboliſhed, as unneceſſary, burdenſome, and dangerous; and take upon themſelves the Supreme Authority, under the title of *Repreſentatives of the Commonwealth.* 7.

James, Duke of *Hamilton*, *Henry Rich*, Earl of *Holland*, and *Arthur*, Lord *Capel*, are condemned to death by the new High-Court, for having appeared in arms againſt the Parliament, and are beheaded the 9th of *March* following. *Mar.* 6.

An act is paſſed for aboliſhing Kingly Government, and turning the Monarchy into a Commonwealth. 17.

The new King gives *James Graham*, Marquiſs of *Montroſs*, a commiſſion to raiſe forces in *Germany*, and invade *Scotland*. 1649. *April.*

Dr. *Deriſlaus*, who had been one of the Counſellors at the *May* 3.

Ann. C. the trial of King *Charles* I, and was now the Parliament's agent at the *Hague*, is aſſaſſinated there, by 12 *Engliſh* and *Scotch* Cavaliers.

18. The Levellers riſe up in arms at *Burford*, but are diſperſed, by *Fairfax*'s order.

Oliver Cromwell is made Lord-Lieutenant of *Ireland*.

June 21. *James Butler*, Marquiſs of *Ormond* (after having taken *Dundalk*, *Newry*, *Trim*, *Drogheda*, &c.) lays ſiege to *Dub-*

July. *lin*; whereupon, *Cromwell* ſends a reinforcement to the garriſon of that City.

Aug. 2. Colonel *Jones*, Governor of *Dublin* Caſtle, makes a ſally, and defeats the Marquiſs of *Ormond*.

Oliver Cromwell lands at *Dublin* with 15,000 men.

The ſiege of *Londonderry* is raiſed, by Sir *Richard Coot*.

Sept. 11. *Cromwell* takes *Drogheda* by ſtorm, and becomes alſo maſter of *Kilkenny*.

King *Charles*, inſtead of going to *Ireland*, as he at firſt deſigned, retires into the Iſle of *Jerſey*.

October. *George Windrom* comes to him there, from the Eſtates of *Scotland*: His Majeſty receives him graciouſly, and names *Breda* as the propereſt place for treating with the *Scottiſh* Commiſſioners.

Oliver Cromwell puſhes his conqueſts into *Ireland*.

1649-50. King *Charles* preſſes the Marquiſs of *Montroſs* to haſten

Jan. 30. his expedition againſt *Scotland*, that he might not be tied, if poſſible, to the Covenanters conditions.

Mar. 11. The *Scottiſh* Commiſſioners arrive at *Breda*, and enter into negotiations with the King, which laſted till *June* following.

25. *John Williams*, Archbiſhop of *York*, dies.

1650. *James Graham*, Marquiſs of *Montroſs*, lands in *Scotland*,

April. but is defeated, and taken priſoner.

29. And being tried, and condemned, is hanged and quar-

May 20, tered at *Edinburgh*.

21. The treaty between King *Charles* and *Scotland* being

June. concluded, his Majeſty imbarks at *Scheveling*, for *Scotland*, but is obliged to take the Covenant, before he is ſuffered to land.

The Parliament of *England* reſolves to make war againſt *Scotland*, and recall *Cromwell* from *Ireland*.

21. *Thomas*, Lord *Fairfax*, reſigns his poſt of General, and *Oliver Cromwell* is made General in his room.

The *Scots* raiſe an army of above 50,000 men, under the command of General *David Leſley*.

July 22. *Cromwell* enters into *Scotland*, with an army of above 19,000 men.

He

He meets with great difficulties in this war, and prepares, for want of provisions, to return into *England*. *Aug. 6. Auguſt.*

But the *Scotch* purſuing him, he engages them at *Dunbar*, and entirely defeats them. *Sept. 3.*

Cromwell becomes maſter of *Edinburgh*, and beſieges the Caſtle.

Diſturbances ariſe in *Scotland* upon occaſion of the two parties, of the Reſolutioners and Proteſters. *Oct. & Novemb.*

The King publiſhes a very extraordinary declaration to gain the Proteſters; but this declaration making him rather loſe the confidence of both parties, he withdraws from *St. John's-town*, but is brought back thither again, and better treated.

William-Henry, Prince of *Orange*, after King *William* III. of *England*, is born, eight days after his father's death. *Nov. 4.*

The Caſtle of *Edinburgh* ſurrenders to *Cromwell*. *Decemb.*

King *Charles* II. is crowned at *Scone*, in *Scotland*. 1650-1.

Oliver St. John, and *Walter Strickland*, are ſent to *Holland*, to negotiate an union between *England* and the *States*, but do not ſucceed. *Jan. 1.*

A new army is raiſed in *Scotland*, into which the *Hamiltonians* and the King's Friends are admitted. 1651. *Mar. &*

The King puts himſelf at the head of the *Scots* army, conſiſting of 15,000 foot, and 3000 horſe, and incamps at *Torwood*; where *Cromwell* advances, but dares not attack him, as he was ſtrongly intrenched. *April. June.*

Cromwell conveys his army by ſea into the County of *Fife*, and gets behind the King. *July 3.*

Whereupon his Majeſty enters *England*, and comes to *Carliſle*, where he is proclaimed by his army, but does not receive the aſſiſtance he expected. 31. *Aug. 6.*

Cromwell follows him, and leaves Major-General *George Monk* to command in *Scotland*; where *Monk* becomes maſter of *Stirling*. 14.

The King ſtops at *Worceſter*, and is proclaimed there. 22.

James Stanley, Earl of *Derby*, is defeated, near *Wigan*, with 1500 horſe, but finds means to eſcape to the King. 25.

Monk takes *Dundee*, in *Scotland*; and, the ſame day, *Cromwell* arrives at *Worceſter*. *Sept. 1.*

The battle of *Worceſter* is fought, in which the King is entirely routed by *Cromwell*: His Majeſty eſcapes, with great difficulty, and hides himſelf in the royal oak. 3.

Cromwell returns to *London*. 21.

James Stanley, Earl of *Derby*, having been taken priſoner at the battle of *Worceſter*, is beheaded at *Bolton*. *Oct. 15.*

Ann. C. The King ſafely arrives in *France*, after having run in-
20. credible dangers, and croſſed the beſt part of *England*, from *Worceſter* to *Brightelmſtead* in *Suſſex*, where he imbarked.

22. *Jerſey*, *Barbadoes*, and other Iſlands, are taken for the
Novemb. Parliament.

January. The Parliament makes an act, prohibiting the importa-
Novemb. tion of all foreign commodities, except upon *Engliſh* bottoms, or ſuch as were of the country from whence the commodities came; which gives riſe to the war between *England* and *Holland*.

Dec. 25. The *States* ſend an ambaſſy to *England* to ſollicit a revocation of that act, and to try to avert the war; accordingly, negotiations are entered into at *London*, but without ſucceſs.

The *Scots* agree to an union with *England*, in one Commonwealth, without a King, or Houſe of Lords.

1652. An engagement happens between the *Engliſh* and *Dutch*
May 17. fleets, near *Dover*.

June 3. The Ambaſſadors of the *States* uſe all their endeavours to pacify the Parliament, but in vain.

July. Whereupon, the *States* recall their Ambaſſadors; and
Aug. 2. manifeſto's are publiſhed by both Nations.

Admiral *Martin Van Trump* puts to ſea, with a fleet of 70 ſail, which is diſperſed by a tempeſt.

16. An engagement happens between Admiral *de Ruyter* and Sir *George Aſcough* in the Channel.

Van Gallen falls upon the *Engliſh* fleet in the *Mediterranean*, and is killed during the engagement.

The *Engliſh* are formidable at ſea, and take great numbers of *Dutch* ſhips.

Nov. 29. Admiral *Van Trump* encounters Admiral *Blake* in the Channel, and hath a ſharp fight with him; but the *Dutch* get the advantage.

1652-3. A furious engagement happens between the two fleets,
Feb. 18, which laſts three days, with great loſs on both ſides.

19, 20. The *States*, being weary of the war, ſue for peace.

1653. The officers of the army, by *Cromwell*'s direction, po-
Apr. 20. tition that the Parliament might be diſſolved; but the Parliament refuſes to diſſolve itſelf.

20. *Cromwell* doth, by his own authority, turn all the Members out of the Houſe, and diſſolves the Parliament.

May. He makes choice of 144 perſons to be the repreſentatives of the people, and to take care of the Government.

The

The *Dutch* and *English* fleets have an engagement, near the *Downs*, in which the *Dutch* are worſted. *Ann. C.* *June* 2.

The new Parliament meets, and *Cromwell* delegates the Supreme Power to them. This Parliament is, in deriſion, called *Praiſegod Barebone's* Parliament, from a famous Speaker in it, of that name. And, in purſuance of an ordinance for uniting *England* and *Scotland*, the latter ſent 30 Repreſentatives to this Parliament. A like ordinance was ſoon after made, for the ſending of 30 Members from *Ireland*. *July* 4.

Another fight happens between the *Engliſh* and *Dutch* fleets, in which Admiral *Van Trump* is killed. 29.

A peace is negotiated between the two contending Powers at *London*.

The Parliament reſigns the Sovereign Power into the hands of *Cromwell*, and of the Council of Officers. *Dec.* 12.

OLIVER CROMWELL PROTECTOR.

OLIVER CROMWELL is choſen, by the Council of Officers, Protector of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*.

He takes an oath to obſerve the *Inſtrument of Government*, which was comprehended in forty-two articles: And a Council was therein appointed for him. 16.

A treaty of peace between *Cromwell* and the *United Provinces* is ſigned. 1654. *April* 5.

Several conſpiracies are formed againſt the Protector, particularly by *John Gerard*, and Mr. *Vowel*, for which they are both executed.

A peace is ſigned between *England* and *Portugal*; and, even on the ſame day, *Don Pantaleon Sa*, the *Portugueſe* Ambaſſador's brother, is beheaded, in *London*, for a murder. *July* 10.

Prince *Maurice* is loſt in a hurricane in *America*: Prince *Rupert* arrives at *Nantes*, with a few ſhips, which King *Charles* ſells to the King of *France*. Both King *Charles* and Prince *Rupert* go and reſide at *Cologne*.

Lieutenant General *Fleetwood* is made Governor of *Ireland*, in the room of *Henry Ireton*, who died *November* 27, 1651. *Fleetwood* had married his widow *Bridget*, *Cromwell's* eldeſt daughter.

Cromwell calls a new Parliament.

The Parliament meets. *Sept.* 3.

Such

Ann. C. Such perſons as refuſed to ſign an engagement to be faithful to the Protector, are excluded from this Parliament.

1654-5. *Jan.* 22. *Cromwell* diſſolves the Parliament, after they had voted him and his ſucceſſors a revenue of 200,000*l.* a year.

Towards the end of the year 1654, the Protector puts out a fleet of 30 ſail, commanded by *William Penn*, having on board 9000 men and a troop of horſe, under the command of Mr. *Venables*, in order to go and ſeize *Hiſpaniola*. They ſail from *Portſmouth December* 27.

Febr. Conſpiracies are formed againſt *Oliver*'s Perſon and Government, by *J. Wildman*, &c.

Mar. 11. A deſign is laid for two inſurrections, one in the North, under the conduct of *John Wilmot*, Earl of *Rocheſter*, and the other in the Weſt, by Sir *Joſeph Wagſtaff*; the latter ſurprizes *Salisbury*, but is immediately defeated, and Colonel *John Penruddock*, Captain *Jones*, and *Hugh Grove*, are taken, and executed.

1655. *Cromwell* reſolves upon a war with *Spain*.

April. The *Engliſh* make an attempt upon *St. Domingo*, the chief town in the Iſle of *Hiſpaniola*; but failing of ſucceſs

May 7. there, they go and make themſelves maſters of *Jamaica*.

Oct. 23. The antient treaties between *England* and *France* are renewed.

The war is carried on with *Spain*.

25. *Oliver* divides *England* into 11 diſtricts, and conſtitutes Major-Generals over each.

1656. He calls a new Parliament of the three Kingdoms.

July 26. The Parliament meets, and is well-affected to *Cromwell*.

Sept. 7. Admiral *Blake* takes, near *Gadiz*, two *Spaniſh* ſhips richly loaden.

10.

1656-7. *Miles Sindercombe*, a Leveller, conſpires to aſſaſſinate the

Jan. 19. Protector; but being diſcovered by ſome of his accom-

Feb. 9. plices, he is condemned, and found dead in priſon.

Mar. 13. A league offenſive and defenſive is concluded between *France* and *Cromwell*, in which it is agreed, that *Dunkirk* ſhould be beſieged. In purſuance of this league, *James*, Duke of *York*, and the reſt of the *Engliſh*, are forced to leave *France*.

Several Anabaptiſts engage in a plot againſt *Cromwell*'s

1657. life, for which many are impriſoned.

Apr. 10. Admiral *Blake* burns the *Spaniſh* Galleons at the *Canaries*:

20. He dies in his return to *England*.

Sept. 4. King *Charles* goes to reſide at *Bruges* in *Flanders*, in conſequence of a league concluded by him with the King of

Spain, who allows penſions to him, and his brother *Henry* Duke of *Gloucester*. *Ann. C.*

The Parliament offers *Cromwell* the title of King, but (though he much liked it) through his friends perſuaſions, he refuſes to accept of it. *April.* *May* 8.

Whereupon he is confirmed in his Protectorſhip by an Act called the Humble petition and advice. 25.

Cromwell is ſolemnly inaugurated in his dignity of Protector. *June* 26.

The Parliament is prorogued.

Oliver ſends 6,000 men into *France* to join the *French* army. *Sept.* 23.

They take fort *Mardyke* near *Dunkirk*, which is delivered to the *Engliſh*. *Oct.* 23

Mr. *Lockhart* Ambaſſador to *France*, ſucceeds Sir *John Reynolds* in the command of the 6000 *Engliſh*. *Novemb.* 1657-8.

The Parliament meets again, with the addition of a new Houſe, called the other Houſe, framed by *Cromwell* to ſupply the place of the Houſe of Lords. *Jan.* 20.

All the elected Members of the former Parliament, who had refuſed to ſign the engagement, and been therefore excluded, are admitted into this; and they being above 100 in number, and Republicans and Presbyterians, give *Cromwell* trouble, and form deſigns againſt him.

They call the authority of the other Houſe in queſtion, that it might not have a negative upon them; but it is ſupported by the Protector.

They proceed further, to examine the validity of the humble petition and advice.

Whereupon *Cromwell* diſſolves this Parliament. *Feb.* 4.

J. Lambert is turned out of his poſt of Lieutenant-General, for acting againſt *Cromwell*, and ſucceeded by *Fleetwood*.

The power of the Major-Generals is abridged. 1658.

Henry Cromwell the Protector's ſecond ſon is made Lieutenant of *Ireland*. *April.*

Conſpiracies are formed by the Royaliſts againſt *Cromwell*, particularly by *John Mordaunt*, Sir *Henry Slingsby* and Dr. *John Hewet*.

The former finds means to eſcape, but Sir *Henry Slingsby* and Dr. *Hewet* are condemned and executed. *May* 25. *July* 8.

Oſtend is like to be ſurprized by the *French* and *Engliſh*, but they are diſappointed.

Dunkirk is beſieged by the *French*, and the 6000 *Engliſh*, under the command of Mr. *Lockhart* and Major-General *Morgan*.

The

trary, it is certain, he promoted virtuous men; as, on the other hand, he was inflexible in his punishments of vice and ill actions. It is true, his own preservation obliged him sometimes to employ men of ill principles, but this is not uncommon to those, who are at the head of a Government.

Though, as to his Religion, he was an Independent, his principle was to leave every man at liberty in the Religion he had chosen, and never persecuted any person on that account. He even connived at the private meetings of those who remained attached to the Church of *England*, though he was well informed of them. If they were not favoured with the free and publick exercise of their Religion, it was because they were considered by him as Royalists, always ready to form plots in the King's favour, and from whom, consequently, he had great reason to secure himself. Though he was in the sentiments of the Independents, and therefore averse to all union with the national Church, he however considered all Protestant Churches, as part of the Protestant Church in general; and without aiming to establish Independency and Fanaticism by force and violence, he expressed on all occasions, an extreme zeal for the Protestant Religion. Dr. *Burnet*, in the *History of his own Times*, says, that if *Cromwell* had accepted the title of King, he intended to establish a Council, in imitation of the congregation *de propagandâ fide* at *Rome*, to have an eye to what passed all over the world, with regard to the interests of the Protestant Religion. He adds, that a fund was to have been settled upon this Council, of ten thousand pounds a year, for ordinary emergencies, besides a salary of five hundred pounds a-piece to four Secretaries. p. 77.

It may also be added, to *Cromwell*'s honour, that never man was better acquainted with the inward springs of human actions, though he seemed not to have made it his particular study: Never man had more address to manage people, and lead them to his ends, nor more natural capacity for affairs, which had received no assistance from learning; for he scarce remembred the little *Latin* he had brought from school: In a word, never man chose at once his most advantagious course with more judgment, or executed a design with more vigour and readiness. Such, in short, were the virtues and shining qualities of *Cromwell*; but we must not conceal the vices and imperfections with which he is charged. Burnet. p. 65.

This charge turns solely upon three points. The first, that through a boundless ambition, he seized a Government

to

to which he had no right. The ſecond, that he maintained himſelf, in his poſt, by an exceſſive diſſimulation. The third, that he put to death many of his private enemies, without any regard to laws immemorially practiſed in *England*. Upon theſe three articles I ſhall offer ſome conſiderations to the Reader, to aſſiſt him in forming a juſt idea of *Cromwell*'s character.

Upon the firſt, it muſt be conſidered, that though the Royaliſt Authors traduce *Cromwell*'s memory as much as poſſible, and, though in particular, the action by which he was poſſeſſed of the Government, is the principal foundation of all their complaints, it is certain, the King was no way intereſted in the change it produced. It was not *Charles* II, but a Republican Parliament, that was deprived of the ſupreme power by *Cromwell*. Though he had been ſubjected to this Parliament; though he had miſcarried, and himſelf been ruined by his ambition, the King's affairs would have received no advantage, ſince the Parliament was not leſs his enemy than *Cromwell*. Of what therefore do they complain with reſpect to the King? It muſt be one of theſe two things, either that *Cromwell* was too wiſe, to ſuffer himſelf to be ſupplanted by all the efforts of the Royaliſts; or that, after ſeizing the ſupreme power, he did not reſtore it to the King, to whom alone it belonged; that is, that *Cromwell* did not at once turn Royaliſt, and entirely change his principles. But this charge lies no more againſt *Cromwell*, than againſt all the Independents and Preſbyterians, who were at leaſt three parts in four of the Kingdom, and who, no more than *Cromwell*, thought it proper to declare for the King.

As for the Republicans, they have not left us many writings on their ſide. The only *Memoirs* of that party, which I know of, are thoſe of *Edmund Ludlow*. It appears there, that the Republicans were enraged againſt *Cromwell*, and deemed him the moſt perfidious of men. This is not very ſtrange, ſince he had wreſted from that Parliament the ſovereign power, ſeized by theſe Republicans without any lawful authority. But, what was this Parliament? It was an aſſembly of Independents, Anabaptiſts, Fanatics, Enthuſiaſts, and others of no Religion, who, under colour of eſtabliſhing a free Commonwealth, held the Nation in ſervitude; who, to confirm their own authority, had treated their fellow-members with unheard of violence, and dared to embrue their hands in the blood of the late King, at a time when he had almoſt granted every thing

Ludlow, T. II. Burnet, p. 65.

that

that was deſired; who, in ſhort, were induſtrious to break the union of the Church, to ſubvert all Religion, or introduce the moſt ridiculous and extravagant one. Was it therefore more eligible for *England* to be governed by theſe men, than by a *Cromwell*? If, therefore, *Cromwell* be blameable, it is not for diſſolving a Parliament, which certainly deſerved to continue no longer, and had ſtrangely abuſed the power they had aſſumed. But if, after the diſſolution of that Parliament, *Cromwell* had reſtored the King, (for this, in all appearance, is what the Royaliſts would have) he had drawn upon himſelf the hatred and curſes of all *England*, which, at that time, was by no means diſpoſed to ſuch a reſtoration, whatever the Royaliſts may ſay. He was, therefore, to do one of theſe three things; either to reſtore the King, contrary both to his own principles, and to thoſe of the Preſbyterians and Independents; or to abandon the State to a horrible Anarchy, which muſt have followed, if he had left things in the ſtate they were in after the diſſolution; or to take himſelf the adminiſtration of the Government, unleſs he had intruſted it with ſome other perſon, which, in reſpect of the juſtice of the action, had been the ſame. Let it now be examined, which was moſt advantagious for *England*, conſidering her circumſtances, and whether it was not better, he ſhould himſelf take the Government, than attempt a reſtoration, in which he could never have ſucceeded? Since his ſole ſupport was the army, which at that time was very oppoſite to the King, not to mention the oppoſition he would have met from the Republicans and Preſbyterians. On ſuppoſition that he was in the right to diſſolve the Parliament, was it not alſo better for him to aſſume the Government, than relinquiſh the State to a fatal Anarchy? Thoſe who pretend, he had long before projected his advancement, ſpeak only by conjecture. They conſider not, that they had never been in a condition to form ſuch a deſign, before the battle of *Worceſter*; nor that this Parliament, which he diſſolved, had, in ſeeking to ruin him, reduced him to a neceſſity of deſtroying them, for his own preſervation.

But what cannot be juſtified in his conduct, is, his throwing himſelf, from the beginning of the Parliament, into a violent party, which aimed at the ruin of Church and State; his directing afterwards that party; and his being the chief author of the violences put upon the Parliament and the King. This, however, is ſlightly paſſed over, becauſe it is common to him with the whole Independent party;

party; and yet, it is, in my opinion, the only thing he can juſtly be reproached with, and on which it is hardly poſſible to excuſe him.

The ſecond charge againſt him is, his exceſſive diſſimulation; but here we are to diſtinguiſh. If it be true, as is pretended, though without proof, that he carried his diſſimulation ſo far, as to mock God and Religion, by expreſſing a piety and devotion which he had not, and by making long prayers, full of ſeeming zeal. If it be true, that his mouth uttered what his heart never meant, no man ought to endeavour to vindicate him. But his ſtrong byaſs to Enthuſiaſm is well known; and who can affirm, it was rather out of hypocriſy than real perſuaſion? We are not raſhly to aſcribe to men inward motives, which no mortal can know. His diſſimulation practiſed for the better management of the ſeveral parties, all equally his enemies, has nothing that I can ſee very blameable in it, unleſs it was a crime, not to leave it in the power of his enemies to deſtroy him with eaſe. I ſhall juſt mention ſome of his methods, to maintain himſelf in his dignity, by which it may be judged, whether *Cromwell*'s diſſimulation is to be juſtly imputed to him as a crime. Welwood. Warwick's Mem. Burnet, p. 79.

The Parliament he diſſolved, was compoſed of Independents, Republicans, Enthuſiaſts, or Fifth-Monarchy-men. If this Parliament had continued longer, things would have been carried to the laſt extremity. They began to talk of pulling down the Churches, [diſcharging the Tithes,] deſtroying the Clergy, and every thing that looked like the union of a national Church. The Presbyterians, who knew this, were in continual apprehenſions of their executing their deſigns, and conſequently, the diſſolution of this Parliament was conſidered by them, as a great happineſs. *Cromwell* to gain their confidence, poſitively promiſed, he would maintain their miniſtry on the foot of the preſent eſtabliſhment, and kept his word, though he was far from being Presbyterian. By this means, the Presbyterians were attached to his intereſt, by reaſon of their dread to fall again under the tyranny of the Independents. Whitelock, p. 560, 681. Burnet, p. 67. Ibid.

In the Republican party were two ſorts of men, whom it was very difficult to govern. The one were Deiſts, or men very indifferent as to Religion, who acted only upon the principles of civil liberty. The others were Enthuſiaſts, who expected every day when Chriſt ſhould appear to reign upon earth. Theſe were the moſt difficult to manage, becauſe they would not hear reaſon, when it contradicted Ibid.

tradicted their headſtrong and violent zeal. *Cromwell*'s accepting the Protectorſhip, was conſidered by them as a ſtep to Kingſhip, to which they were ſuch enemies, that they affirmed it to be the great Antichriſt, that hindered Chriſt's reign upon earth. *Cromwell* found means ſo to divide theſe two parties, that all combinations betwixt them for his ruin, became impoſſible. To the Deiſts, he made himſelf merry with the extravagant zeal of the Fanaticks; and to theſe laſt, he talked of the others as of Heathens and Infidels. But as the Enthuſiaſts were the moſt obſtinate, he intimated to ſome of them, that he would rather have taken a Shepherd's ſtaff than the Protectorſhip, had it not been to prevent every thing from running into confuſion: That he would reſign this dignity with more joy than he accepted it, as ſoon as things ſhould be ſettled: That nothing was more contrary to his inclination, and principles, than a grandeur which obliged him to aſſume an outward ſuperiority over his fellow labourers. To convince them of what he ſaid, he frequently called them into his cloſet, and ſhutting the door, made them ſit covered, familiarly talking with them as his equals. Commonly theſe diſcourſes ended in a long prayer. It is not to be doubted, but there was in this much diſſimulation. The queſtion is, whether it was ſo criminal as it is pretended?

Id. p. 68.

Phillips, p. 631.

He had likewiſe Chaplains of all ſorts. So, hinting ſometimes to one, ſometimes to another, that he was not averſe to their principles; the report was ſpread throughout the whole party, and made each hope for an advantagious change.

Burnet, p. 68.

He took care to have ſpies amongſt all the parties, and was thereby fully informed of what was contriving againſt his perſon or government. Among others, he gained Sir *Richard Willis*, Chancellor *Hyde*'s agent, for conveying the King's orders to his friends in *England*. All the Royaliſts confided in *Willis*, knowing he received the King's orders, and yet he betrayed them. But to keep the correſpondence more ſecret, *Cromwell* aſſured him, that the informations from him ſhould only be uſed to diſconcert the plots of his enemies, that none might ever ſuffer for them; and if he impriſoned any of them, it ſhould only be for a little time, and on other pretences. By that means, he defeated their deſigns, as by accident, in committing them to priſon for ſuppoſed crimes, and releaſing them when their meaſures were broken.

Burnet's Hiſt. p. 65. 66, 71.

He

He ſometimes intimated a willingneſs to treat with the King. Probably his aim was to engage the Royaliſts to offer propoſitions, which would have given him opportunity to amuſe them, and prevented any conſpiracies againſt his perſon; for he was informed from ſeveral parts of deſigns to aſſaſſinate him. Wherefore he affected to ſpeak publickly of aſſaſſinations with the utmoſt deteſtation, and to declare, he would never begin them, but if an attempt was made upon his life, and miſcarried, he ſhould not ſcruple to uſe the ſame method, and that he did not want inſtruments to execute it, nor money to reward them. This declaration kept the Royaliſts in awe, through a fear of their own danger, or that of the King and Royal Family. Burnet, p. 65.

If this conduct of *Cromwell* be conſidered impartially, it will, doubtleſs, appear, that his diſſimulation and artifices for his own preſervation, were not ſo criminal as they have been repreſented. What has moſt offended thoſe who ſpeak of them with moſt paſſion, is, that they were proper to diſconcert the projects of his enemies. The diſſimulation of Queen *Elizabeth*, for the ſame reaſon, has been extolled, though ſhe uſed it only for her own preſervation.

The third and laſt charge againſt *Cromwell*, is, cruelty, for having, whilſt Protector, put ſome men to death, for conſpiring againſt his perſon and government. That is, according to this reproach, he ſhould have patiently ſuffered the plots againſt him, and when one failed, liberty ſhould have been given for a ſecond and a third, till ſome one had ſucceeded. This deſerves no confutation. But to ſhew, that *Cromwell* was not for an unneceſſary effuſion of blood, we need only recite what is owned by the Earl of *Clarendon* in his Hiſtory, who aſſures, that when it was propoſed in a council of officers that there might be a general maſſacre of the Royaliſts, *Cromwell* would never conſent to it. Clarendon, III. p. 509.

To finiſh *Cromwell*'s character, I will add, that in the beginning of the Long-Parliament, he was a Presbyterian. After that, he threw himſelf into the Independent party, and was even one of their leaders, and affected to be of the number of the Enthuſiaſts. But when he had accepted the Protectorſhip, he was neither Presbyterian, nor Independent, nor Republican, nor Enthuſiaſt. As he had to manage all theſe different Parties, who were equally oppoſite to him, he was not to appear an enemy to any in particular,

ticular, and this management furniſhes convincing proofs of his great ability.

It is nevertheleſs certain, that *Cromwell* was very much hated, while he lived, by all the parties then in *England*, though they could not help fearing and eſteeming him. But if it be now conſidered, that the prejudices againſt him are not ſo ſtrong as they were then, it will be found that the hatred of him was owing to intereſt, and founded chiefly upon his ability to diſconcert the meaſures and deſigns of all the parties. This general hatred is ſolely referred to his principal action; that is to the uſurpation of the Government, which equally diſguſted the Royaliſts, Presbyterians, and Republicans. The Royaliſts thereby ſaw their hopes more deſperate than ever of the King's reſtoration. The Presbyterians could hardly expect, by their intrigues, to render themſelves once more ſuperior in the Parliament, after the diſſolution. The Republicans were enraged to ſee the ſupreme power, which they had aſſumed, wreſted from them. It is therefore no wonder, that he has incurred ſo much cenſure, ſince all the people of *England*, that is, theſe three parties, were equally concerned to aſperſe him. It was not for the enormity of the action, but becauſe by his advancement, each party deſpaired of acquiring the ſuperiority over the reſt. This is what has drawn from many writers, expreſſions ſo injurious to his memory. The Lord *Clarendon* ſpeaks thus of him, and his uſurpation. *Without doubt no man with more wickedneſs ever attempted any thing, or brought to paſs what he deſired more wickedly, more in the face and contempt of Religion and moral honeſty. Yet wickedneſs as great as his, could never have accompliſhed thoſe deſigns, without the aſſiſtance of a great ſpirit, an admirable circumſpection and ſagacity, and a moſt magnanimous reſolution.* It is eaſily ſeen, that this wickedneſs is referred only to his uſurpation of the Government. *In a word*, (continues the ſame author) *as he was guilty of many crimes, againſt which damnation is denounced, and for which hell-fire is prepared, ſo he had ſome good qualities which have cauſed the memory of ſome men in all ages to be celebrated, and he will be looked upon by poſterity as a brave wicked man.* Here the author, no doubt, has an eye to the murder of *Charles* I. In which *Cromwell* was too deeply concerned for me to pretend to excuſe him. I ſhall only obſerve, that this accuſation is not peculiar to him, but is common to him, with the whole independent Parliament.

Id. p. 506.

p. 509.

To

To form a juſt and rational idea of *Cromwell*'s character, his conduct and actions in themſelves, muſt be examined, and joined to the juncture of the time, independently of the opinions of his enemies. We have no other Hiſtorians of thoſe times than the Royaliſts, who have laid down certain principles, by which he is condemned. But, it muſt be obſerved, theſe principles were not generally received, in *England*, during his life. What can never be entirely excuſed in him, is the death of *Charles* I, to which he contributed to the utmoſt of his power, and which will be an indelible blot upon his memory. Another principle, and of which he made great uſe, is likewiſe to be condemned in him: Which was, that moral laws were only binding on ordinary occaſions, but might be diſpenſed with upon extraordinary caſes, which is abſolutely falſe. His uſurpation of the Government has been already conſidered, and the Reader is left to his judgment. I ſhall only obſerve, that the confuſion which prevailed in *England*, ſoon after the death of *Cromwell*, clearly ſhews the neceſſity of this uſurpation. Burnet, p. 79.

In general, it cannot be denied, that *Cromwell* was one of the greateſt men of his age, if it is conſidered, that without the advantages of birth or fortune, he roſe ſo near a throne, that it was in his power to mount it. Hiſtory furniſhes very few inſtances of this kind.

Cromwell's death was followed with ſo many alterations in the Government, that the interval between that and the reſtoration, may be juſtly called a time of true Anarchy. *Cromwell* ſhould have had a ſucceſſor like himſelf, to finiſh what he had ſo ably begun. But two ſo great men are not commonly found ſo near one another, nor often in the ſame age.

By OLIVER CROMWELL.

Ann. C. 1657. 20 *July.*

Charles Howard of *Gilleſland*, was created Baron *Gilleſland*, and Viſcount *Howard* of *Morpeth*.

RICHARD CROMWELL, PROTECTOR.

Decemb. 1658-9. *January.*

RICHARD calls a Parliament conſiſting of two Houſes.

He forms the project of rendering himſelf Maſter of the Council and army; but the principal officers of the army combine againſt him.

Ann. C. To break his meaſures, the Great Council of the army is formed at *London*; they preſent a petition to Protector *Richard*, who rejects it.

27. The Parliament meets.

Feb. Debates paſs in the Houſe of Commons about the other

March. Houſe, and the *Scotch* and *Iriſh* Members.

1659. The queſtion is decided in favour of the Members of

28. the other Houſe.

An Act is made to recognize *Richard* for Protector of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*.

April 6. The officers preſent a petition to *Richard*, in which they demand *Charles Fleetwood* for General; but their petition is rejected.

The Houſe of Commons votes againſt the holding any Council of officers during the Seſſion of the Parliament.

22. The officers force *Richard* to diſſolve the Parliament.

Richard, upon that loſing all his credit and authority, the officers ſeize the Government, and chuſe *Fleetwood* for their General; and having caſhiered Colonel *Ingoldsby*, *Goff*, *Whaley*, Lord *Falconberg*, and *Charles Howard*, they reinſtate *J. Lambert*.

Next they reſtore the long Parliament, diſſolved by *Cromwell*, in 1653; which Parliament is called in deriſion, *The Rump*. But ſuch Members as in the year 1648, refuſed to ſign the engagement are excluded.

The new Parliament ſends *Thomas Clarges* to *George Monk*, who ſubmits to the authority of the Parliament.

May 12. The officers preſent a petition to the Parliament.

13. *Richard Cromwell* ſubmits to the Powers in being; whereupon the Parliament gives him 20,000*l.* and requires him to remove from *Whitehall*.

PARLIAMENT.

Henry Cromwell is recalled from *Ireland*, and *Edmund Ludlow* is appointed Commander of the forces there.

June. Differences begin to ariſe between the Parliament and the army.

18. The Parliament continues the monthly tax impoſed upon the whole Kingdom by the Parliament which ſat in 1656.

The Royaliſts form a plot in favour of King *Charles* II. which the Presbyterians come into.

The King repairs to *Calais*, and then to *St. Malo's*, to be nearer *England*, if the plot ſucceeded; but the Royaliſts are betrayed by Sir *Richard Willis*.

Sir *George Booth* ſeizes *Cheſter*, and publiſhes a Manifeſto againſt

againſt the Parliament; he is joined by Sir *Thomas Middleton*. *Ann. C.*
They are both defeated by *J. Lambert*. *Aug.* 19.
Sir *George Booth* is taken and committed to the *Tower*.

The army in *Scotland* is reformed; at which *Monk* is ſo offended, that he deſires his own diſmiſſion.

The King croſſes *France incog.* in his way to *Fontarabia*, *Septemb.* where he was going in order to be preſent at the treaty of peace negotiating at *St. Jean de Luz*.

The officers of the army commanded by *J. Lambert* 16. meet at *Derby*, and draw up a petition to the Parliament, which is ſent to *London* to the Great Council of officers: The Parliament votes againſt that petition.

The Great Council of officers preſent a petition to the *Oct.* 5. Parliament, which returns a mild anſwer thereto: But the officers ſuſpect the Parliament of ill deſigns againſt the army.

General *Monk* promiſes the Parliament to ſtand by them.

The Parliament returns a haughty anſwer to the officers 10. petition; whereupon *J. Lambert* comes to *London*, with his forces.

The Parliament having declared it High-treaſon to levy money upon the people without the conſent of Parliament, proceeds with reſolution againſt the officers, caſhiers ſeveral, and vacates *Fleetwood*'s commiſſion; but *Lambert* hinders the Parliament from meeting. 13.

ANARCHY.

Charles Fleetwood places a ſtrong guard at the door of the Parliament-Houſe, to hinder the Members from aſſembling.

Several officers of the army are ſuſpended by the Council of officers.

This Council appoints General *Fleetwood* to be Commander in chief, and forms a Council of ten, and another of ſeven perſons.

They ſend Colonel *Cobbet* to General *Monk*, to try to gain him to their party.

COMMITTEE OF SAFETY.

They erect a Committee of Safety, to whom they commit the adminiſtration of the Government.

General *Monk* hearing of what had paſſed, reſolves to march into *England*, in order to forward the King's reſtoration.

Aug. C. The Committee of Safety ſends *Thomas Clarges* to him, to propoſe an accommodation: *Monk* accepts of the propoſal, in order to amuſe them, and ſends Commiſſioners to *London* to treat with the Committee.

Nov. 15. Theſe Commiſſioners of his conclude and ſign a treaty with the Committee of Safety, contrary to *Monk*'s intention, who ſeeks evaſions to hinder the ratification of it.

24. The Council of State ſends *Monk* a Commiſſion, conſtituting him General of the armies of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*.

Decemb. The Members of the Parliament are very buſy in trying to reſtore themſelves.

Colonel *Whetham* Governor of *Portſmouth*, and Vice-Admiral *Lawſon*, declare for the Parliament againſt the army.

PARLIAMENT AGAIN.

26. The Committee of Safety is forced to give way, and *Fleetwood* reſigns his uſurped authority.

The Rump-Parliament is reſtored, and names a Committee to govern the army.

Major-General *Lambert* is put under arreſt by his own ſoldiers and ſent to the *Tower*.

1659-60. General *Monk* enters *England*: The Parliament grows
Jan. 2. jealous of him, and deſires him to ſtop his march.

11. He is received into *York* by the Lord *Fairfax*, who had aſſembled ſome troops, in order to ſtop the Committee of Safety from poſſeſſing themſelves of that City.

A Council of State is formed, into which *Monk* is admitted: Every Member of it is obliged to abjure *Charles* II, and the whole Royal Family.

The Parliament ſends *Thomas Scot* and *Luke Robinſon*, two of their Members, to be ſpies upon him.

General *Monk* receives in his march ſeveral addreſſes from *London*, and other places, in which he is deſired to reſtore the Members excluded from the Parliament in 1648; but he uſes great diſſimulation.

He deſires that the regiments quartered in the City ſhould retire at a diſtance, and make room for his; which is granted him.

Feb. 3. General *George Monk* enters *London*: He repairs to the Council of State, and refuſes to take the Abjuration-oath.

6. He goes to the Parliament, and receives the compliments and thanks of the Speaker.

The

The City of *London* refuſing to pay taxes, General *Monk* is ordered by the Parliament to go and chaſtiſe it: He leads his army into the City, and takes down the gates, chains, and portcullices belonging to it; and then returns to *Whitehall*. *Ann. C.* 8. 9.

But repenting of what he had done, he writes a letter to the Parliament full of complaints and reproaches; and coming back into the City of *London*, reconciles himſelf to the Magiſtrates, which occaſions great rejoicings. 10. 11.

General *Monk* comes to *Whitehall*, attended by the ſecluded Members, to whom he gives a guard to introduce them again into the Parliament; whereupon the chief of the Independent Members withdraw. 21.

The Rump Parliament ſummons a free Parliament, compoſed of a Houſe of Peers, and a Houſe of Commons; and diſſolves itſelf. *Mar.* 16.

But, before their diſſolution, they releaſe Sir *George Booth*, and all the impriſoned friends of the King; they repeal the oath of abjuration of *Charles Steuart*, and all the Royal Family; they appoint a new Council of State; make great changes in the Militia of *London*, and abrogate the engagement to be true and faithful to the Commonwealth, without a King or Houſe of Peers, *&c.*

J. Lambert eſcapes out of the *Tower*, and puts himſelf at the head of ſome troops. *April* 9.

He is defeated, and taken priſoner by *R. Ingoldsby*.

The Republicans endeavour to perſuade General *Monk* to take the Government upon himſelf. 22.

Sir *John Greenvill* comes from the King to General *Monk*.

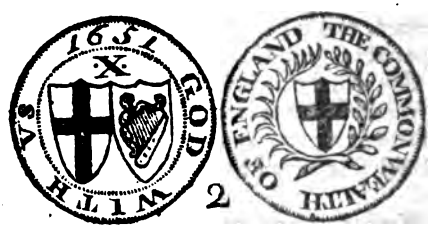
The Parliament meets, and the King's declaration being read, they reſolve to recall his Majeſty, and reſtore him to the Throne. 1660. *April* 25.

General *Monk* receives a commiſſion from the King, conſtituting him General of the three Kingdoms.

An Account of the MONEY *coined under the* COMMONWEALTH.

The Parliament, on *April* 25, 1649, agreed upon a new ſort of Coin, whereof there were coined, Crowns, Half-Crowns, Shillings, Six-pences, Pence, and Half-pence. The larger pieces were inſcribed on one ſide, THE COMMONWEALTH OF ENGLAND, and had *St. George's* croſs in a ſhield, betwixt a palm-branch and a laurel: Reverſe, the ſame ſhield conjoined to another, in which is a harp

harp for *Ireland* (vulgarly called the Breeches) above which there is XII. the legend GOD WITH US. The Six-pence has VI. above the ſhields. The Two-pence and Pence have no inſcription, only the initial figures; and the Half-penny only the ſingle ſhield, with the harp on the reverſe. There were likewiſe coined pieces of fine Gold, of the ſame form and inſcription as the Silver-money, XX. above the arms. The half of them have X. (*Fig.* 2.) The Six-pence 1651, is, ſtrictly ſpeaking, the firſt milled money, Queen *Elizabeth*'s being only marked on the flat edge. The Copper Farthing has the croſs under a garland, ENGLANDS FARTHING. Reverſe, a harp, FOR NECESSARY CHANGE. *Oliver Cromwell*'s Crown-piece is



inimitably performed, and preſerved as a choice medal in the cabinets of the curious, being the firſt milled money that has an inſcription upon the rim. It has his head laureat, OLIVAR. D. G. RP. ANG. SCO. HIB. &c. PRO. Reverſe, in a ſhield crowned with the Imperial Crown of *England*, *St. George*'s Croſs in the firſt and fourth quarters; *St. Andrew*'s for *Scotland* in the ſecond; and the Harp for *Ireland* in the third; and in a ſcutcheon of pretence his paternal coat, namely, a Lion Rampant, legend PAX QVÆRITVR BELLO. 1658. upon the rim, HAS. NISI. PERITVRVS. MIHI. ADIMAT. NEMO. The dye of

K. CHARLES II
P. Lely p.
G. Vertue Sculp.

of this piece having received a flaw or crack the firſt ſtroke, leaves a mark upon the money juſt below the neck; a ſure token to diſtinguiſh the true Crown-pieces from the counterfeit. The Half-Crown is equally beautiful, though not ſo rare. The Shilling is likewiſe a very fair piece, milled on the edge, and very rare. (*Fig* 1.)

BOOK XXIII.

26. CHARLES II.

Ann. C. Reg. 12.

CHARLES II. is proclaimed at *London*. *May* 8.
He comes to the *Hague*.
—— Gives audience to the Parliament's Deputies. 16.
—— Embarks at *Scheveling*. 23.
—— Lands at *Dover*. 25.
General *George Monk* is made Knight of the Garter. 27.
King *Charles* arrives at *Whitehall*. 29.
He forms his Council, conſiſting of 30 perſons.

The Parliament which met the 25th of *April*, is owned by the King only as a Convention.

His Majeſty, for removing and preventing all queſtions and diſputes, changes, by an act, the Convention into a Parliament; and gives his conſent to two other acts; the one for continuing the monthly tax of 70,000 *l.* for three months; and the other, for continuing all judicial proceedings. 31.

Both Houſes of Parliament accept of the pardon offered by the King in his declaration from *Breda*.

The King iſſues a proclamation, in which he declares, That ſuch of the late King's Judges, as did not ſurrender themſelves within 14 days, ſhould be excluded out of the act of indemnity. *June* 6.

Some of the chief Republicans demand of the King particular letters of pardon, which are granted them.

The chief officers of the Crown, appointed by King *Charles*, were as follows; *viz.* Sir *Edward Hyde*, Lord Chancellor; *Thomas Wriotheſley*, Earl of *Southampton*, Lord-Treaſurer; *John*, Lord *Roberts*, Privy-Seal; *Mountague Bertie*, Earl of *Lindſey*, High-Chamberlain of *England*; *James Butler*, Duke of *Ormond*, Steward of the Houſhold; *Edward Nicholas* and *William Morrice*, Eſqs; Secretaries of State.

The

Ann. C. *July* 5. The City of *London* gives a ſplendid entertainment to the King, the Princes his brothers, the great officers of the Crown, and both Houſes of Parliament.

27. The act of indemnity having been drawn by the Commons agreeably to the King's declaration from *Breda*, and the Lords being for having ſeveral exceptions made to it, the King earneſtly deſires the latter to make it conformable to his declaration from *Breda*, with ſome few alterations.

Aug. 17. The *Engliſh* Commiſſioners in *Scotland* are diſcharged from acting any longer, after the 22d of this month; and the Committee of Eſtates is aſſembled.

21. *William Cunningham*, Earl of *Glencairn*, is made High-Chancellor of that Kingdom; *John*, Earl of *Lindſey*, is reſtored to the office of Lord-Treaſurer; *John Kennedy*, Earl of *Caſſiles*, is conſtituted Juſtice-General; *John Maitland*, Earl of *Lauderdale*, Principal Secretary of State; General *Middleton*, his Majeſty's Commiſſioner, *&c.*

29. The King gives his aſſent to the act of indemnity.

To an act for confirming all judicial proceedings, from the 1ſt of *May*, 1642.

To an act for proviſion of monies to diſband and pay off the forces of this Kingdom, both by land and ſea.

To an act for fixing the intereſt of money at 6 *per cent.*

To an act for a perpetual anniverſary thankſgiving on the 29th of *May*.

To an act for continuing the exciſe.

And to an act for granting to his Majeſty a ſubſidy of tonnage and poundage, for the guarding and defending of the ſeas.

The King makes a ſpeech to the Parliament, in which he repreſents his wants to them.

The Parliament makes preſents to the King's brothers; to the Duke of *York* 10,000 *l.* and to Prince *Henry* 7000 *l.*

The Commons vote to ſettle on the King a yearly revenue of 1,200,000 *l.*

Sept. 13. The King adjourns the Parliament till the 6th of *November*, after having given his aſſent to the following acts:

To an act for raiſing 100,000 *l.* for a ſupply of the King's wants, by way of land-tax.

An act to impower and direct the Commiſſioners how to diſband the army, and pay off part of the fleet.

An act for continuing for two months longer the tax of 70,000 *l.* a month.

An act for regulating the bay trade in *Colcheſter*.

An act for encouraging and increaſing ſhipping and navigation. *Ann. C.*

An act for reſtoring ſome Miniſters to their livings and promotions, and confirming others in vacant benefices.

Henry of *Oatlands*, Duke of *Glouceſter*, dies of the ſmall-pox: The ſame day, Prince *de Ligny*, Ambaſſador from *Spain*, makes his entry into *London*. 13.

Dr. *William Juxon* is tranſlated from the See of *London* to the Archbiſhopric of *Canterbury*. And the reſt of the vacant Sees are filled up, in this and the following month. Nine of the old Biſhops were living. 20.

The Regicides are brought to their trial; but ten only of them are executed, viz. *Thomas Harriſon*, *John Carew*, *John Cook*, *Hugh Peters*, *Thomas Scot*, *Gregory Clement*, *Adrian Scrope*, *John Jones*, *Francis Hacker*, and *Daniel Axtel*. *Oct.* 10, 11, 12, 13, 14. 19.

Mary Princeſs Dowager of *Orange*, the King's ſiſter, arrives in *England*. 18.

The King publiſhes a declaration concerning eccleſiaſtical affairs, which was not favourable to the Preſbyterians. *Oct.* 25.

Biſhoprics and eccleſiaſtical benefices are offered to the moſt eminent Preſbyterian Miniſters, but they all refuſe them except Dr. *Edward Reynolds*, who accepts of the Biſhopric of *Norwich*.

The *States* of the *United Provinces* ſend an ambaſſy to the King, and a good number of excellent pictures.

Henrietta, Queen Dowager, the Princeſs *Henrietta* her daughter, and the Prince *Palatine Edward*, arrive in *London* from *France*; and, ſhortly after, the Princeſs *Henrietta* marries Philip Duke of *Orleans*. *Nov.* 2.

Sir *Maurice Euſtace* Chancellor of *Ireland*, *Roger Boyle* Earl of *Orrery*, and *Charles Coote* Earl of *Montrath*, are conſtituted Lords Juſtices of that Kingdom.

The Parliament meets again. 6.

They ſend a deputation to the Queen-Mother, to congratulate her on her arrival in *England*; and the Commons make a preſent of 10,000 *l.* to each of the young Princeſſes her daughters.

The Queen-Mother is highly diſpleaſed at the marriage of *James* Duke of *York* with *Anne*, Chancellor *Hyde*'s eldeſt daughter, which was privately ſolemnized the 3d of *September* this year.

The Parliament having granted ſeveral ſums for diſbanding the army, the King diſbands it all, except General *Monk*'s regiment.

He

Ann. He forms for his guard two regiments, one of horſe, and another of foot; which is very much diſliked.

21. *William Drake*, a Mercer in *London*, is impeached of High-treaſon by the Houſe of Commons, for publiſhing a book intitled, *The Long Parliament revived.*

The firſt meetings of the Royal Society were about this time.

Dec. 2. The King eſtabliſhes by his letters patents a Council for trade and commerce.

The Commons confirm the reſolution they had taken, of granting the King an annual revenue of 1,200000 *l.*

Alexander Popham undertakes to have a perpetual revenue of about two millions ſettled on the King; but the Lord-Chancellor *Hyde* honeſtly oppoſes that project.

8. The bodies of *Oliver Cromwell*, *Henry Ireton*, *John Bradſhaw*, and *Thomas Pride*, are ordered by the Parliament to be dug up out of their graves, drawn upon a hurdle to *Tyburn*, and hung there almoſt a whole day, and then buried under the gallows; which is accordingly done the 30th of *January* following.

An act of Attainder is paſſed againſt theſe deceaſed perſons, and againſt thoſe of the King's Judges who had fled.

A pretended plot is ſaid to be formed by ſeveral officers of the army.

Dec. 24. *Mary* Princeſs of *Orange* dies of the ſmall-pox, as was ſuppoſed.

The King gives his aſſent, to an act for laying certain impoſitions upon beer, ale, and other liquors, for the increaſe of his Majeſty's revenue during his life. And, to another act, for taking away the Court of Wards and Liveries, and Tenures *in capite* and by Knights ſervice, and purveyance, and for ſettling a revenue [*viz.* the exciſe] upon his Majeſty in lieu thereof.

Some *Scotch* Miniſters are impriſoned, for drawing up a remonſtrance concerning their grievances; and a proclamation is publiſhed by the Committee of Eſtates, forbidding all ſorts of unlawful aſſemblies, and ſeditious writings.

Archibald Campbel Marquiſs of *Argyle* having been arreſted in *London*, and committed to the *Tower*, *July* 7, laſt, is ſent to *Scotland*, *Dec.* 30, to be there tried on an impeachment of High-treaſon.

The King ſummons a Parliament in *Scotland*, to meet the 12th of *December*.

He publiſhes a proclamation, in which he declares, that he left it entirely to this Parliament to examine into the

conduct of his ſubjects of *Scotland*, and that he would grant them a pardon. *Ann. C.*

He comes to the Parliament, and gives his aſſent to an act for confirmation of marriages celebrated ſince the 1ſt of *May* 1642. *Dec.* 29.

To an act for erecting and eſtabliſhing a Poſt-Office.

An act for prohibiting the planting, ſetting, or ſowing of tobacco, in *England* and *Ireland*.

An act for prohibiting the exportation of wool, woolfells, fuller's earth, or any kind of ſcouring earth.

And two acts; for raiſing 70,000 *l.* for his Majeſty's further ſupply; and 70,000 *l.* a month, for ſix months, for diſbanding the remainder of the army, and paying off the navy.

Then King *Charles* makes a ſpeech to the Parliament, in which he returns thanks to both Houſes, expreſſes his affection towards them, and aſſures them that he will inviolably obſerve the act of Indemnity: The Lord-Chancellor *Hyde* makes after that a ſpeech to both Houſes.

The firſt Parliament of King *Charles* II. is diſſolved.

Some Anabaptiſts, headed by *Thomas Venner*, cauſe an inſurrection in *London*. 1660-61.

After a ſtout reſiſtance, and twenty killed on both ſides, the reſt are taken. *Jan.* 6.

They are arraigned and condemned, and executed two days after. 9. 17.

The King takes from thence occaſion to iſſue out a proclamation, forbidding all ſorts of Meetings and Conventicles, and ordering the oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy to be tendered to all ſuſpected perſons.

The name of Diſſenters, or Nonconformiſts, is applied to all the Sectaries in general.

The Parliament of *Scotland* abrogates the ſolemn League and Covenant; declares the power of the militia to be in the King alone; and declares the act of the 16th of *January* 1647, by which the late King was delivered into the hands of the *Engliſh*, infamous, diſloyal, and contrary to all laws divine and human. 14. 25.

Epiſcopacy is reſtored in *Scotland*, and the Parliament of that Kingdom reſtores the right of patronage, and makes ſeveral acts in favour of the King, and againſt the Preſbyterians. *Reg.* 13.

The vacant ſees in *Ireland* are filled.

General *Monk*'s regiment of foot, and life-guard of horſe, are paid off and diſbanded: but they are immediately *Feb.* 14.

Ann. C. ately taken into his Majeſty's ſervice, as an extraordinary guard to his royal perſon.

March 6. 1661. *Archibald Campbel* Marquiſs of *Argyle* is brought before the Parliament of *Scotland*.

25. A conference is held, at the *Savoy* between ſome Biſhops and Presbyterian Miniſters, in order to an examination of the differences between the two parties.

Apr. 20. The conference breaks off.

Sir *Edward Hyde* is created Earl of *Clarendon*.

23. King *Charles* II. is crowned.

May 8. The Second Parliament of King *Charles* II. meets; it is called the Penſionary Parliament, becauſe many of the Members received Penſions from the Court.

The King makes a ſpeech to the Parliament, in which, among other things, he acquaints them with his intended marriage with *Catharine* of *Portugal*.

Sir *Edward Turner* is choſen Speaker of the Houſe of Commons.

The Houſe of Commons orders all their Members to receive the Communion, according to the form preſcribed in the Liturgy.

11. The Marquiſs of *Montroſs's* quarters, having been taken down, are buried.

17. *Elizabeth* Queen of *Bohemia* arrives in *London*.

20. The Parliament cauſes the writing called the ſolemn League and Covenant, and ſeveral other acts againſt the late King, to be burnt.

28. *Archibald Campbel*, Marquiſs of *Argyle*, having been condemned for High-treaſon on the 24th, is beheaded at *Edinburgh*.

June 7. The bodies of Sir *Charles Lucas* and Sir *George Liſle* are honourably buried.

July 10. An act is paſſed for confirming the act of indemnity, and other acts.

And another act to impower the King to receive from his ſubjects a free and voluntary preſent for his preſent occaſions, provided aids of this nature be not drawn into example for the time to come.

Alſo three other acts: Againſt tumults and diſorders upon pretence of petitioning: ——— Declaring the ſole right of the militia to be in the King: ——— For repeal of the act for diſabling perſons in holy orders to exerciſe any temporal juriſdiction: ——— And for reſtoring the juriſdiction of Archbiſhops and Biſhops taken away, 17. *Car.* I. c. 11.

Another

Another act is passed for confiscating the estates of twenty-one Regicides deceased, and to punish three, who were spared as to life, *viz.* The Lord *Monson*, Sir *Henry Mildmay*, and *Robert Wallop*. *Ann. C.*

They are ordered to be drawn, on the 30th of *January* following, upon sledges, with ropes about their necks, to *Tyburn*, and committed to perpetual imprisonment.

The King gives his assent to nine acts, and among the rest, to an act for the safety and preservation of his person and government, and to another, for bringing the Bishops again into the House of Peers. 30.

The Parliament is adjourned to the 20th of *November*.

The Convocation of the Clergy meets, and grants a benevolence to the King.

The Cavaliers, or Royalists, complain highly of the King's ingratitude.

Rumours are spread of plots and conspiracies carrying on against the King, in order, as some suppose, to render the Presbyterians odious.

Edward Montague Earl of *Sandwich*, returns to *Lisbon*, from his expedition against *Algiers*, without having done any thing.

James Duke of *Ormond* is made Lord-Lieutenant of *Ireland*. *Nov.* 4. 20.

The Parliament meets again.

The King makes a speech to both Houses, wherein he desires the Commons to settle his revenue, and provide for the expences of the navy.

The Court begins to persecute the Presbyterians.

The Parliament desires the King to order by proclamation all officers and disbanded soldiers to depart 20 miles from *London*.

The Commons grant the King 1,260,000 *l.* for his present occasions.

A bill for the execution of 19 Regicides, who had voluntarily surrendered themselves, is dropped.

Edward Hyde Earl of *Clarendon*, and Lord-Chancellor, affirms, at a conference between the two Houses, that there was a real conspiracy; and names several persons engaged therein. Major *Wildman*, and others, are for it committed to the *Tower*.

The King gives his assent to the act which granted him 1,260,000 *l.* and to an act for regulating Corporations. In this latter, there was an oath, declaring, That it is not *Dec.* 20.

Ann. C. lawful, upon any pretence whatſoever, to take arms againſt the King, *&c.*

1661-2. The Parliament is adjourned to the 10th of *January*.

Jan. 10. The Parliament meets again.

The Lord Chancellor *Hyde* makes a report to the Houſe of Lords of the conſpiracy.

Reg. 14. *Elizabeth*, Queen of *Bohemia*, dies, and was interred in

Feb. 13. *Weſtminſter-Abbey*.

Mar. 1. The King makes a ſpeech to the Commons, in which he expreſſes great zeal for the Church.

1662.

Apr. 16. *Miles Corbet*, *John Okey*, and *John Barkſtead*, three of the Regicides, having been brought to *England* from *Holland*, are condemned and executed the 19th.

May. The King gives his aſſent to ſeveral acts, *viz.*

To an act for preventing miſchiefs and dangers, that may ariſe by Quakers, and others, refuſing to take lawful oaths.

To the act of Uniformity.

To an act for better regulating the forces in the ſeveral Counties of this Kingdom.

To an act for laying a perpetual and annual tax of 2 *s.* on every chimney-hearth.

To an act for the relief of poor and maimed officers and ſoldiers, who had ſerved his Majeſty and his Father.

And to an act for preventing abuſes in printing ſeditious and treaſonable books; and for regulating printing, and printing-preſſes.

The Parliament is prorogued to the 18th of *February*.

14. Queen *Catharine* arrives at *Portſmouth*.

21. Her marriage with the King is ſolemnized, according to ſome, by *Gilbert Sheldon*, Biſhop of *London*, and according to others, by a Catholic Prieſt.

June 6. Sir *Henry Vane*, and Lieutenant-General *J. Lambert*, are tried and condemned: *Lambert* is reprieved, and impriſoned in *Guernſey*;

But Sir *Henry* is beheaded.

14. *Henrietta* the Queen-mother comes to *England*.

July 28. King *Charles* enters into negotiations with Count *d'Eſtrades*, for the ſale of *Dunkirk*; at length the King

From *July* to *October*. ſells *Dunkirk* to *Lewis* XIV. for 5,000000 of livres.

Edward Hyde, Earl of *Clarendon*, had a great hand in that buſineſs.

Several pamphlets are publiſhed upon that occaſion.

About this time the Royal Society is founded by King *Charles*'s letters patents.

Above 2000 Preſbyterian Miniſters chuſe to quit their pre-

preferments, rather than comply with the Uniformity-act. *Ann. C.*

The Corporation-act is put in execution with rigour.

The walls of *Glouceſter*, *Coventry*, *Northampton*, *Leiceſter*, and *Taunton*, are razed to the ground, becauſe thoſe places had diſtinguiſhed themſelves for the Parliament, during the war.

Vice-Admiral, Sir *John Lawſon*, forces the *Algerines* to make peace with *England*. *Oct.* 5.

A conſpiracy, contrived by ſome Fifth-monarchy-men, is diſcovered: Six of the Conſpirators are arraigned, but four only are executed. *Decemb.*

The King declares *Tangier* a free port, and inveſts it with great privileges: It was part of his Queen's portion.

He puts out a declaration, in which he diſpenſed with the Preſbyterians, as to their obſervance of ſome articles in the Act of Uniformity. 1662-3. *January.*

The Lord-Chancellor *Hyde*'s credit begins to decline.

Sir *Henry Bennet*, afterwards Earl of *Arlington*, is made Secretary of State, in the room of Sir *Edward Nicholas*, whom the King had obliged to reſign in *October* laſt. *Reg.* 15.

The Parliament meets again. *Feb.* 18.

The King makes a ſpeech to both Houſes, in order to recommend his declaration about the Act of Uniformity, and in behalf of the Catholics.

But the Houſe of Commons is alarmed, and preſents an addreſs to the King againſt that declaration; to which his Majeſty returns an anſwer. 27. *Mar.* 16.

Both Houſes petition him to order all Jeſuits and *Romiſh* Prieſts to depart the Kingdom: The King promiſes to do as they deſired; and accordingly publiſhes a proclamation againſt them, but it is not duly obſerved. 1663. *Apr.* 1. 9.

The Commons grant the King four entire ſubſidies.

The Convocation of the Clergy does the ſame.

Theſe were the laſt ſubſidies granted by the Clergy.

George Digby, Earl of *Briſtol*, brings an impeachment of High-treaſon againſt *Edward Hyde*, Earl of *Clarendon*; which is unanimouſly rejected by the Houſe of Lords. *July* 10.

William Juxon, Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, dies, and is ſucceeded by *Gilbert Sheldon*, Biſhop of *London*. *June* 4.

The Parliament ſettles the revenues of the Poſt Office, and of the Wine-Licenſes, upon *James*, Duke of *York*.

The following acts were now made: — For the puniſhment of unlawful cutting, or ſtealing wood, or under-

Ann. C. woods: —— For regulating Select Veſtries. —— For draining the great Level of the Fens, called *Bedford Level.*

July 27. The King prorogues the Parliament to the 16th of *March.*

Auguſt. The King and Queen make a progreſs into the Weſt.

Septemb. A plot, contrived by the Republicans and Independents,

October. is diſcovered; twenty-one are convicted, and executed.

Novemb. The Parliament meets again.

Reg. 16. The act for triennial Parliaments is repealed at the

1663-4. King's requeſt; and it is enacted, That the ſitting and

Mar. 16. holding of Parliaments ſhall not be intermitted or diſcon-

April 5. tinued above three years.

21. The Parliament votes, that the injuries and inſults of the *Dutch* were the greateſt obſtructions to the trade of *Eng-*

27. *land*; and agree upon an addreſs to be preſented to the King.

28. The King returns to this addreſs an anſwer conformable to the Parliament's deſires.

He had already taken the reſolution of going to war with the *Dutch*, and the Parliament's complaints ſerved only as a pretence for it.

1664. An act to prevent and ſuppreſs ſeditious Conventicles,

May 17. is paſſed.

The Parliament is prorogued.

The King demands of the *Dutch* reparation of the injuries done by them to the *Engliſh*; whereupon the *States* ſend Monſieur *Van Goch* Ambaſſador to *England*, to offer ſatisfaction.

June 11. The City of *London* lends the King 100,000 *l.* for fitting out the fleet.

Novemb. *James* Duke of *York* falls upon the *Dutch Bourdeaux* fleet, and takes 130 ſail of them, laden with wine and brandy, before the war was declared.

The *States* accept of the mediation of *Lewis* XIV, King of *France*, but King *Charles* rejects it, and endeavours in vain to bring the Crowns of *France* and *Spain* to a war with the *Dutch*.

Nov. 24. The Parliament meets again.

The King makes a ſpeech to them, in which he demands a ſupply of money.

25. The Parliament ſends Deputies to return thanks to the City of *London* for their loan to the King.

The Commons vote the King a ſupply of 2,477,500 *l.* for the war.

Both Houſes adjourn themſelves to the 12th of *January.*

During this Seſſion, the Clergy parted with the right of taxing

taxing themſelves in Convocation; and have ever ſince been taxed in common with the reſt of the people. In conſideration whereof, they are admitted to vote at the elections of Parliament-men. *Ann. C.*

The King publiſhes a declaration for making repriſals upon all ſhips belonging to the *Dutch*. *Dec.* 21.

The Engliſh take a great many *Dutch* veſſels. 1664-5.

Admiral *de Ruyter* retakes from the *Engliſh* moſt of the forts that had been taken from the *Dutch* at *Guinea* and *Cape Verd*, by Sir *Robert Holmes*, and ſeizes ſeveral *Engliſh* ſhips.

The Parliament meets again, and the Commons proceed immediately to the money-bill. *Jan.* 12.

His Majeſty gives the royal aſſent thereto. *Reg.* 17.

War is formally declared againſt the *States-General*. *Feb.* 15.

The King prorogues the Parliament, after having given his aſſent to a bill for returning able and ſufficient Jurors.—To a bill for draining the fen called Deeping-fen, and other fens, *&c.* 25. *Mar.* 2.

James, Duke of *York*, repairs to the fleet which he was to command, conſiſting of 107 men of war, and 14 fire-ſhips. 23.

King *Charles* endeavours to gain *Lewis* XIV. to his ſide; on the other hand, the *Dutch* preſs him to declare againſt *England*.

Lewis XIV. ſends the Duke *de Verneuil* Ambaſſador to *Charles* II, to try to procure a peace between *England* and *Holland*. 1665. *April.*

James, Duke of *York*, puts to ſea with the *Engliſh* fleet, and ſails towards the coaſts of *Holland*. 21.

He takes ſeveral *Dutch* ſhips, and then returns to *England*; but the *Dutch* take the *Engliſh Hamburgh* fleet.

The plague begins to rage in *London*. *May.*

The *Dutch* fit out a fleet of 121 men of war, beſides fire-ſhips, under the command of *Obdam di Waſſenaer*.

He is beaten by the *Engliſh* fleet, his ſhip is blown up; and about 18 more are burnt and ſunk: But the Duke of *York* doth not purſue the *Dutch* fleet ſo briskly as he might have done. *June* 3.

The King appoints a Day of Thankſgiving for this victory, and orders medals to be ſtruck in honour of the Duke of *York*.

Henrietta the Queen-Mother returns into *France*. 29.

It not being thought proper to venture the Duke of *York*

Ann. C. in another engagement, the command of the *Engliſh* fleet is given to *Edward Montague*, Earl of *Sandwich*.

Michael de Ruyter is made Lieutenant-Admiral-General of *Holland*.

Aug. 3. The *Dutch Smyrna* fleet and ſeveral of their *Eaſt-India*
22. ſhips retire to *Berghen* in *Norway*; the Kings of *Denmark* and *England* attempt to ſeize thoſe ſhips; but miſs their aim.

The command of the fleet is taken from *Edward Montague* Earl of *Sandwich*, and he is ſent Ambaſſador to *Spain*.

Septemb. Mr. *de Ruyter* convoys the *Dutch* ſhips from *Berghen*; but his fleet is diſperſed by a ſtorm, and many of his ſhips are taken by the *Engliſh*.

The plague commits terrible ravages in *London*; ſo that in leſs than a year there died of it in that City 68,596 perſons.

Bernard Van Galen, Biſhop of *Munſter*, declares war a-
October. gainſt the *Dutch*: He becomes maſter of ſeveral ſmall places, and attempts to ſurprize *Groningen*, but is forced to relinquiſh his projects, and to think of a peace.

9. The Parliament meets at *Oxford*, on account of the plague.

The Commons grant the King 1,250,000 *l.* for the war; and make a preſent of 120,000 *l.* to the Duke of *York*.

31. The five mile act, for reſtraining Nonconformiſt Teachers from inhabiting in Corporations, is paſſed.

An act is alſo made for uniting Churches in Cities and Towns corporate.

The Parliament is prorogued to the 20th of *February* 1665-6.

Dec. 24. A very ſevere Proclamation is iſſued out in *Scotland* againſt Nonconformiſt Miniſters, ordering them to remove twenty miles out of the pariſhes where they had been incumbents.

The Parliament of *Ireland* grants the King eight entire Subſidies of the Temporality of that Kingdom.

1665-6. *Lewis* XIV, King of *France*, declares war againſt *Eng-*
Reg. 18. *land*, at the inſtance of the *States-General*.

Jan. 19. Queen *Catharine* miſcarries.

Feb. 10. King *Charles* II, declares war againſt *France*.

1666. *Frederic* III, King of *Denmark*, joins with the *States*.

April 18. *Bernard Van Galen*, Biſhop of *Munſter*, is forced to make
20. a peace with them.

The King of *France* is very ſlow in ſuccouring the *States*.

John

John Rathbone, and ſome disbanded Officers, are tried for a conſpiracy againſt the Government, and executed. *Ann. C.* 26.

The command of the *Engliſh* fleet is given to Prince *Rupert*, and *George Monk*, Duke of *Albemarle*; they put to ſea. *May* 23.

King *Charles* orders Prince *Rupert* to go, with part of the fleet, in queſt of the Duke *de Beaufort*, and to fight the *French* fleet.

The Duke of *Albemarle* comes to an engagement with Admiral *de Ruyter*: The fight laſts four days, and the *Engliſh* are worſted, loſing twenty-three ſhips, *&c.* The third day Sir *George Ayſcough* is taken priſoner, and carried to *Holland*. *June* 1, *&c.*

The two fleets fight another battle, in which the *Dutch*, through the ill management of *Cornelius Van Trump*, are defeated, and loſt about twenty ſhips. But Admiral *de Ruyter* makes a brave retreat. *July* 24.

Cornelius Van Trump is turned out of his Poſt for his ill conduct.

The Duke *de Beaufort* arrives at *Rochelle* with the *French* fleet.

The *Engliſh*, improving their advantage in the laſt fight, burn ſeveral *Dutch* ſhips, near the Iſle of *Vly*, and, making a deſcent in the Iſle of *Schelling*, commit there great ravages. *Auguſt*.

After this exploit, the *Engliſh* fleet comes and anchors at St. *Hellens* near the Iſle of *Wight*: And the *Dutch* fleet anchors in St. *John*'s Bay near *Boulogne*, but is recalled from thence, on account of Admiral *de Ruyter*'s illneſs.

A moſt dreadful fire breaks out in *London*, which conſumes 13,200 dwelling-houſes; and was ſuppoſed to have been cauſed by the Papiſts. *Sept.* 2.

The *French* fleet paſſes and repaſſes before the Iſle of *Wight*, without being attacked by the *Engliſh*, and at length retires into the Ports of *Bretagne*.

The Parliament meets again. 21.

The Commons grant the King a ſupply of 1,800,000 *l.*

The Parliament preſents an addreſs to the King againſt the Papiſts; whereupon, a proclamation is iſſued out for baniſhing the Prieſts and Jeſuits out of the Kingdom. *Nov.* 10.

An inſurrection breaks out in *Scotland*, but the rioters are diſperſed. 15.

The King preſſes the Commons to diſpatch the money-bill. *Dec.* 15.

Complaints are brought before the Houſe of Commons againſt *John*, Lord Viſcount *Mordaunt*, Governor of *Wind-*

Ann. C. for Caſtle; but they do not proceed upon them on account of the Parliament's adjournment.

1666-7. The Parliament meets again.

Jan. 2. The *States* of the *United-Provinces* ſend a letter to King
13. *Charles*, in which they offer to ſend Plenipotentiaries to *London*, to negotiate a peace, if their allies, the Kings of *France* and *Denmark*, would agree to it.

The Commons accuſe the Lord Viſcount *Mordaunt*, at the bar of the Lords Houſe.

18. The Poll-bill, or Capitation-act is paſſed.

20. King *Charles* returns an anſwer to the letter from the *Reg.* 19. *States*, and names the *Hague* for the place of Conference, but neither the *French* nor *Dutch* approve of it.

Feb. 8. The Parliament is prorogued to the 10th of *October*, after having paſſed an act for continuing for eleven months the monthly tax of 70,000 *l.* two acts about rebuilding the City of *London*. ——One for burying in woollen only; and ſeveral others.

Mar. 18. King *Charles* pitches upon *Breda* for the place of conference.

1667. *Thomas Wriothesley*, Earl of *Southampton*, and Lord-Trea-
May 16. ſurer, dies.

The Plenipotentiaries of *England* arrive at *Breda*.

20. The conferences there are prolonged by a miſunderſtanding.

King *Charles* demands, that the *Dutch* ſhould reſtore the Iſland of *Poleron* in the *Eaſt-Indies*, and make reparation for two ſhips taken before the treaty in 1662.

He recedes at length from his demand of *Poleron*, and inſiſts only upon the two ſhips.

June 8. Admiral *de Ruyter* comes to the mouth of the *Thames* with fifty ſhips.

10. He detaches Vice-Admiral *Van Ghent* with ſeventeen
11. ſhips, who, ſailing up the *Thames*, becomes maſter of *Sheerneſs* fort, and, advancing towards *Chatham*, burns ſeveral ſhips.

This cauſes a great conſternation in *London*, and throws the King into great perplexity.

Lewis XIV, King of *France*, invades the *Netherlands*.

July. Admiral *de Ruyter*, putting to ſea again, ſails to *Portſmouth*, takes ſome ſhips in *Torbay*, beats the *Engliſh* before *Harwich*, and gives chace to a ſquadron commanded by Sir *Edward Spragg*.

The *Engliſh* Plenipotentiaries at *Breda* drop their demands of reparation for the two ſhips.

The peace between *England*, *France*, and *Holland* is signed. *Ann. C.* 21.

Abraham Cowley, an excellent poet, dies. 28.

The peace is proclaimed at *London*, and at the *Hague*. *Aug.* 24.

The people complains, and murmurs againſt the Court, which was full of vice and debauchery.

The Lord-Chancellor *Hyde* is diſgraced, and Sir *Orlando Bridgman* made Lord-Keeper of the Great Seal. 31.

The King forbids, by proclamation, all his ſubjects, except thoſe of the Queen's or Queen-Mother's Family, and of foreign Ambaſſadors, to repair to any Chapels, to hear Maſs. *Sept.* 11.

The Parliament meets again, when both Houſes preſent an addreſs of thanks to the King. *Oct.* 10. 15.

King *Charles* lays the firſt ſtone of the foundation of the *Royal Exchange*. 23.

The Commons impeach *Edward Hyde*, Earl of *Clarendon*, of High-treaſon; but he withdraws into *France*. *Nov.* 12.

He leaves an apology, or humble petition and addreſs, behind him, addreſſed to the Lords, which they communicate to the Commons. *Dec.* 2.

But it is burnt by the common hangman. 12.

The Lords ſend to the Commons a bill for the baniſhment of the Earl of *Clarendon*. 13.

The bill, having paſſed both Houſes, obtains the Royal aſſent. 18.

The Parliament is prorogued.

Matthew Wren, Biſhop of *Ely*, died in the courſe of this year.

King *Charles* takes a reſolution to enter into a ſtrict union with the *States* of the *United Provinces*, in order to prevent the King of *France*'s becoming maſter of the *Low-Countries*. 1667-8. *Jan.* 1.

The triple alliance between *England*, *Holland*, and *Sweden*, is concluded. *Jan.* 23. *Reg.* 20.

The Parliament meets again; and the King makes a ſpeech to them, in which he demands money. *Feb.* 10.

But, before the Commons take the King's ſpeech into conſideration, they inquire into the miſmanagements during the late war.

Lewis XIV. makes himſelf maſter of *Franche-Compté*, in leſs than a fortnight.

King *Charles* preſſes the Commons to go upon the money-bill. 1668. *April* 24.

They deſire him, in an addreſs, to put the laws in execution againſt Conventicles, and all unlawful aſſemblies of Papiſts and Nonconformiſts. Where-

Ann. Q. Whereupon, his Majeſty iſſues out a proclamation upon that ſubject.

A diſpute ariſes between the two Houſes of Parliament, about the affair of *Thomas Skinner*, who had appealed originally to the Houſe of Lords.

May 2. A peace is concluded at *Aix la Chapelle* between *France* and *Spain*.

5. The King paſſes an act for raiſing 310,000 *l.* by an impoſition on wines and other liquors; and other acts; and then he adjourns the Parliament to the 11th of *Auguſt*: He adjourns it a ſecond time, and at laſt prorogues it till the 19th of *October*, 1669.

The Papiſts have great intereſt at Court; and a project is formed to render the King abſolute.

July, &c. This ſummer the King makes ſeveral progreſſes into the Kingdom, to view the Ports and Navy.

Aug. 8. Monſieur *Colbert* comes to reſide at the Court of *England*, as Ambaſſador from *France*.

Sir *William Godolphin* is ſent Ambaſſador to *Spain*.

Ralph Montague, Eſq; is firſt Envoy, and then Ambaſſador to *France*.

Charles Howard, Earl of *Carliſle*, goes Ambaſſador to *Stockholm*.

Sir *William Temple* is ſent Ambaſſador extraordinary to the *States-General*.

October. Sir *Thomas Allen*, coming with an *Engliſh* ſquadron before *Algiers*, obliges the *Algerines* to renew the peace with *England*.

In the courſe of this year, died *Algernoon Percy*, Earl of *Northumberland*, Sir *William Davenant* and Sir *John Denham*, two eminent Poets, and Sir *William Waller*.

1668-9. *January.* King *Charles* is bribed by the Court of *France*, and comes into all her wicked meaſures.

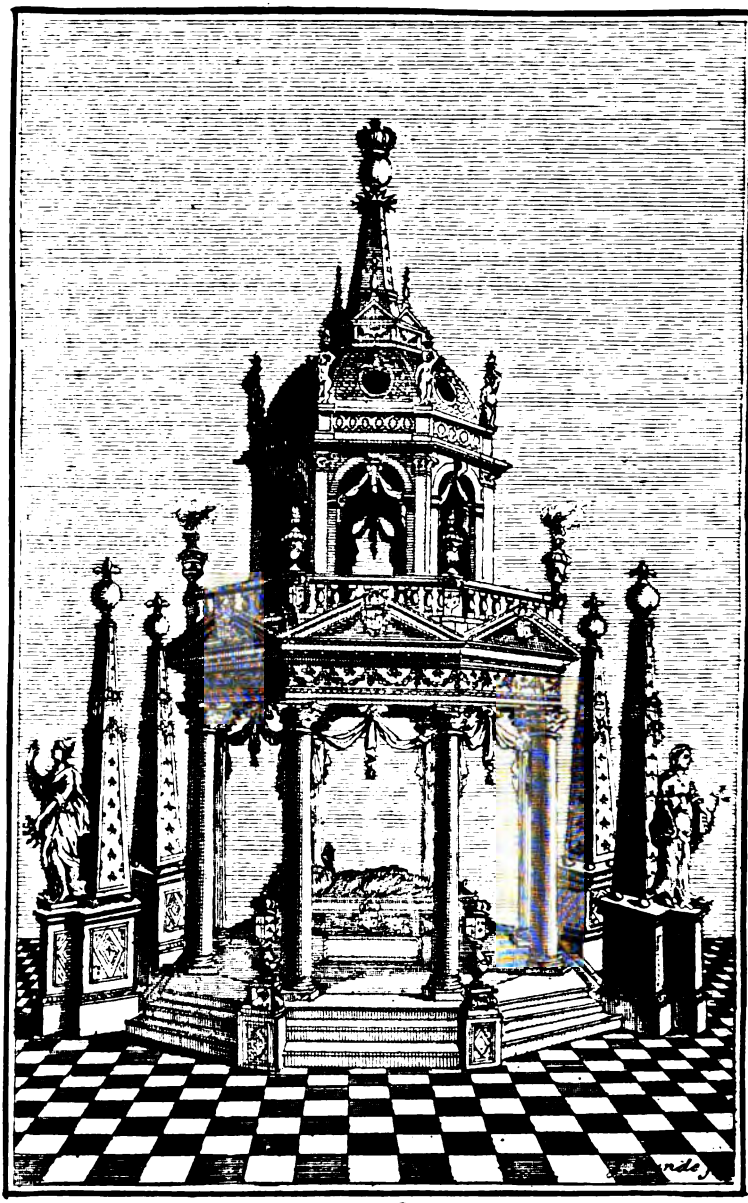
Reg. 21. *Coſmo di Medicis*, Prince of *Tuſcany*, arrives in *England*.

Mar. 22. Prince *George* of *Denmark* comes to *England* to viſit King *Charles*.

1669. The *Sheldonian* Theatre at *Oxford* is opened.

July 9. The King forms the project of a Comprehenſion, or to incorporate the Preſbyterians with the Church of *England*, and to procure a toleration for all the other Nonconformiſts.

Conferences are held upon this point at the Lord-Keeper *Bridgeman*'s, between two Epiſcopal Divines (Dr. *Wilkins* and Dr. *Burton*) and two Preſbyterian Miniſters (Dr. *Manton* and *Richard Baxter*:) The two former made large conceſſions:



The Mausoleum of MARY *Wife of K.* CHARLES I *made by Order of* Lewis XIV *in the Abbey of S^t. Denis in France.*

conceſſions: And the Lord Chief-Juſtice *Hale* undertakes to draw up a bill againſt the enſuing Parliament; but the Parliament was averſe to all condeſcenſion. *Ann. &c.*

Gilbert Sheldon, Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, oppoſes alſo this project of a Comprehenſion.

The Nonconformiſts preſent a petition to the King, which is favourably received.

Henrietta Maria, the Queen-Mother, dies in *France*, in the 60th year of her age. *Aug.* 10.

Her body was expoſed on a bed of State that day, at her houſe at *Columbe*, four leagues from *Paris*, and the next embalmed; and afterwards conveyed to the Monaſtery of *Chaliot*. The *French* King, *Lewis* XIV, her nephew, erected a ſumptuous Mauſoleum, in memory of her, in the Abbey-Church of *St. Dennis*. (The figure whereof is here repreſented.)

John Maitland, Earl of *Lauderdale*, is appointed his Majeſty's High-Commiſſioner to the Parliament of *Scotland*. *Sept.* 26.

The Parliament meets again: The King demands of them money for the diſcharge of his debts; and propoſes the union of the two Kingdoms of *England* and *Scotland*. *Oct.* 19.

The Commons examine the public accounts, and expel out of their Houſe Sir *George Carteret*, for keeping the books, in a confuſed and diſorderly manner.

The Parliament of *Scotland* meets. 19.

The Houſe of Commons in *England* appoints a Committee to inquire into the behaviour of the Nonconformiſts.

They grant the King a ſupply of 400,000*l.*

The Parliament of *Scotland* raiſes the King's Supremacy higher than it had ever been carried before, by an act aſſerting his Majeſty's Supremacy over all perſons, and in all cauſes eccleſiaſtical. *Nov.* 16.

They approve, by another act, the raiſing of the Militia.

The differences between the two Houſes of Parliament in *England*, about the buſineſs of *Skinner*, being renewed, the King prorogues the Parliament to the 14th of *February*, 1670. *Dec.* 11.

William Prynne, Eſq; dies in this year.

George Monk, Duke of *Albemarle*, dies, and is ſucceeded in dignity and eſtate by his ſon *Chriſtopher*. 1669-70. *Jan.* 3.

The Parliament meeting again, the King makes a ſpeech to them, in which he demands a ſupply of money.

The Commons vote him a ſupply of about 1,700,000*l.* *Reg.* 22.

They jointly preſent an addreſs to him againſt Nonconformiſts and Papiſts, *Feb.* 14. *Mar.* 11.

The

Ann. C. 1670. *April* 12. The King gives his aſſent to ſeveral acts, namely, To one to prevent and ſuppreſs ſeditious Conventicles: To an act for granting to his Majeſty an impoſition upon all wines and vinegar imported between *June* 24, 1670, and *June* 24, 1678, which impoſition yielded 560,000 *l.* To an act for advancing the ſale of fee-farm, and other rents. To an additional act for rebuilding the City of *London*, uniting of of pariſhes, and rebuilding the cathedral and parochial Churches within the ſaid City, *&c.* Then his Majeſty adjourns the Parliament to the 24th of *October*.

King *Charles* forms the deſign of rendering himſelf abſolute; and for that purpoſe, eſtabliſhes a Secret Council, which is nick-named the Cabal.

This Council reſolves upon a war with *Holland*, that they might have a pretence for keeping on foot both land and ſea forces.

Moreover, for his better ſupport, King *Charles* makes a ſecret alliance with *France*.

Lewis XIV. comes to *Dunkirk*.

May 16. *Henrietta*, Ducheſs of *Orleans*, comes to *England* under pretence of viſiting the King, her brother; but her real buſineſs was, To perſuade King *Charles* to make a private alliance with *France*; in conſideration whereof *Lewis* XIV. would inſure him an abſolute authority over his Parliament, and help him to reſtore the Catholic Religion in his three Kingdoms.

June 2. She returns to *France*, and dies ſuddenly the 19th of the ſame month, not without ſuſpicion of poiſon.

Septemb. The Marſhal *de Crequi* invades *Lorrain*, and becomes maſter of it: King *Charles* refuſes to intercede with *Lewis* XIV. for the reſtoration of that Duchy, though he was greatly obliged to the Duke of *Lorrain*.

Oct. 24. The Parliament meets again; and the Commons vote the King a large ſubſidy.

Sir *William Temple* is recalled from his ambaſſy to *Holland*.

30. *William* III, Prince of *Orange*, comes to pay a viſit to the King, his uncle.

The Parliament is adjourned.

Henry Jenkins dies in this year, 1670, aged 169 years.

1670-1. The Parliament meets again.

January. The King ſends a meſſage to both Houſes to haſten the *Reg.* 23. money-bills.

Feb. 14. *William*, Prince of *Orange*, embarks again for *Holland*.

15. Both Houſes preſent an addreſs to the King againſt Popery, and the growth of it.

Charles

Charles, Lord *Lucas*, makes a ſpeech againſt the money-bills; which ſpeech is ordered to be burnt by the common hangman. *Ann. C.*

The King gives his aſſent to the money-bills; being 1. One for granting a ſubſidy to his Majeſty; [much the ſame as the preſent land-tax bills:] 2. Another, for an additional exciſe upon beer, ale, and other liquors. 3. Another, for reveſting the power of granting wine-licenſes in his Majeſty. 4. And a fourth, for laying impoſitions on proceedings at law.—— An act is alſo now paſſed againſt malicious maiming and wounding, called *Coventry*'s act. *Mar.* 6.

A difference happens between the two Houſes, on occaſion of the Lords making alterations in a money-bill.

Anne Hyde, Ducheſs of *York*, eldeſt daughter of *Edward*, Earl of *Clarendon*, and mother to *Mary* and *Anne*, afterwards Queens of *England*, dies. 1671. *Mar.* 31.

His Majeſty gives the Royal aſſent to ſeveral bills, and then prorogues the Parliament to *April* 16, 1672, and afterwards by ſeveral prorogations to the 4th of *February*, 1672-3. *April* 22.

James, Duke of *York*, makes a formal abjuration of the Proteſtant Religion.

King *Charles* forms the deſign of divorcing his Queen *Catharine* of *Portugal*.

Edward, Earl of *Mancheſter*, Lord Chamberlain, dies. *May* 5.

Thomas Blood, and four other ruffians, ſteal the Crown, Orb, and Scepter, out of the *Tower*; but, inſtead of being puniſhed, *Blood*, in particular, is pardoned, and loaded with favours by the King. 9.

Charles XI, King of *Sweden*, the Elector of *Saxony*, and *Chriſtopher Monk*, Duke of *Albemarle*, are inſtalled Knights of the Garter. *May* 28.

One of the King's yachts fires at the *Dutch* fleet, under pretence of making them ſtrike the flag, but, in reality, to have ſome colour, if they returned the fire, for his deſigned rupture with *Holland*.

King *Charles* receives 700,000 *l.* from the King of *France*.

Thomas, Lord *Fairfax*, the late General, died in this year 1671.

France, *England*, the Elector of *Cologne*, and the Biſhop of *Munſter*, form a league againſt *Holland*. 1671-2.

Though King *Charles* had received 2,500,000 *l.* from his

Ann. C. his Parliament, yet, through his expenſive vices, and extravagance, he is ſtill in want of money.

Jan. 2. But Sir *Thomas Clifford* ſuggeſts to him a way to ſupply his wants, namely, by ſhutting up the *Exchequer*; for which advice *Clifford* is rewarded with the office of Lord-Treaſurer.

15. Dr. *John Coſin*, Biſhop of *Durham*, dies.

Reg. 24. *William* III. Prince of *Orange*, is made Captain-General,

Feb. 24. and Admiral, by the *States* of the *United Provinces*.

Mar. 13. King *Charles* orders the *Dutch Smyrna* fleet to be intercepted in their return home, before any declaration of war; but only about five of them are taken.

He ſends out a ſquadron to meet four *Dutch Eaſt-India* ſhips, which are taken; and cauſes all the *Dutch* ſhips in his ports to be ſeized.

The *States* ſeize likewiſe all the *Engliſh* ſhips in their harbours, but releaſe them ſoon after.

King *Charles* alſo releaſes ſome of the *Dutch* ſhips he had ordered to be ſeized.

15. He publiſhes a declaration for Liberty of Conſcience, for which he is thanked by the chief of the Preſbyterians.

17. *England* declares war againſt the *United Provinces*.

1672. As doth alſo *Lewis* XIV,

28. And the Biſhop of *Munſter*.

April. The Elector of *Cologne* joins likewiſe with *France*.

May, &c. *Lewis* XIV. takes the field: He makes himſelf maſter of ſeveral places upon the *Rhine*, ſwims that river, takes all *Guelderland*, and the towns upon the *Iſſel*, and alſo *Utrecht*.

10. The King ſuſpends by his own authority the execution of two acts of Parliament, about navigation and trade.

At the ſame time, the Biſhop of *Munſter* ravages the Province of *Over-iſſel*, and falls upon *Frieſland* and *Groninghen*.

28. An engagement happens near *Southwold-bay*, or *Solebay*, in *Suffolk*, between Admiral *de Ruyter* and the confederate fleets of *England* and *France*; in which three *Engliſh* ſhips were burnt, three ſunk, and one taken. *Edward Montague*, Earl of *Sandwich*, with ſeven Captains, and ſeveral perſons of quality, periſhed. The loſs of men was nearly equal on both ſides.

Holland is in a moſt deplorable condition.

June 22. *George Villiers*, Duke of *Buckingham*, and *Henry Bennet*, Earl of *Arlington*, are ſent Ambaſſadors extraordinary, and Plenipotentiaries to *Holland*: But their demands for a peace are rejected by the *States*.

Henry Coventry, Esq; is sworn principal Secretary of State, in the room of Sir *John Trevor*, who died *May* 28. *Ann. C.*

William III, Prince of *Orange*, is made *Stadtholder*. *July* 3.

The two brothers *de Wits*, *Cornelius* and *John*, are torn to pieces by the mob. *Aug.* 10.

Lewis XIV. tries in vain to gain the Prince of *Orange* to his side, by offering him the Sovereignty of *Holland*.

That King marches his army into *Flanders*, leaving the Duke of *Luxemburgh* at *Utrecht*, and comes himself to *Paris*. *August.*

Sir *Orlando Bridgeman* resigns the Great Seal, which is given, on the 17th, to *Anthony-Ashley Cooper*, Earl of *Shaftesbury*, one of the cabal. *Novemb.* 9.

The Parliament is prorogued.

The King declares in Council that he would raise more forces. *Dec.* 4.

He orders that the *Exchequer* should continue shut till *May* 1, 1673. 22.

The Parliament meets again. 1672-3.

Sir *Job Charleton* is chosen Speaker of the House of Commons, in the room of Sir *Edward Turner*, made Chief Baron of the *Exchequer*. *Reg.* 25. *Feb.* 4.

The King makes a speech to the Parliament; which is followed by another remarkable one of the Lord-Chancellor *Shaftesbury*'s.

The House of Commons complains of writs issued out by the Lord-Chancellor, for electing of new Members in the room of such as were dead or removed; and all the Members elected by virtue of those writs are expelled the House.

The Commons prepare a bill in favour of the Presbyterians, but it is rendered abortive by the prorogation of the Parliament. *Feb.* 5.

The Country-party prevails in the Parliament above the Court-party.

The Commons vote the King 1,238,750 *l.*

They present to him two addresses against the Declaration for Liberty of Conscience; his Majesty returns an evasive answer. 19.

Sir *Job Charlton* being taken ill, *Edward Seymour*, Esq; is chosen Speaker in his room. 26.

Both Houses present an address to the King against the Papists; and his Majesty having thereupon issued out a proclamation against them, which was not very satisfactory; *March.*

the

Ann. C. the Commons enter upon new meaſures to get the declaration for Liberty of Conſcience revoked.

The King is in great perplexity; and his Council is divided about the courſe he ſhould take in the preſent emer-
8. gency: At length his Majeſty recalls his declaration, and ſo ſatisfies the Commons, who return him thanks for it.

But the cabal is very much diſpleaſed with the King for ſo doing.

9. *Anthony Aſhley Cooper*, Earl of *Shaftesbury*, quits the King's party, and embraces that of the people.

The Teſt-Act is brought into the Houſe of Commons; and a bill to prevent intermarriages between Proteſtants and Papiſts, in order to hinder the Duke of *York* from marrying a Popiſh Princeſs.

The Commons preſent two addreſſes to the King concerning grievances, one relating to *England*, the other to *Ireland*; which his Majeſty promiſes to redreſs.

1673. He paſſes the money-bill; and an act for preventing dan-
Mar. 29. gers which may happen from Popiſh Recuſants, otherwiſe called the Teſt-Act;——An act for a general pardon;—— An act to enable the County *Palatine* of *Durham* to ſend Knights and Burgeſſes to ſerve in Parliament, *&c.*

The Parliament is adjourned to the 20th of *October*.

After the paſſing of the Teſt-Act, *James* Duke of *York*, *Thomas* Lord *Clifford*, and the greateſt part of the Catholic Officers reſign their places; and the Lord *Clifford* dies ſoon after.

Prince *Rupert* is appointed Commander of the *Engliſh* fleet, in the Duke of *York*'s room.

May 2. Admiral *de Ruyter* attempts to ſink ſome ſhips in the *Thames* mouth, to ſtop the navigation in that river.

15. The *Engliſh* and *French* fleets join one another.

28. Three battles are fought between the *Dutch*, and *Eng-*
June 4. *liſh* and *French* fleets, with no conſiderable advantage on
Aug. 11. either ſide; in the laſt, Sir *Edward Spragg* was drowned.

Lewis XIV. takes *Maeſtricht*.

Sir *Lionel Jenkins*, and Sir *Joſeph Williamſon* are ſent as his Majeſty's Ambaſſadors extraordinary at *Cologne*, and arrive thither, *June* 14.

A Congreſs is held at *Cologne* for a peace, but comes to nothing.

19. Sir *Thomas Osborne* is made High-Treaſurer, in the Lord *Clifford*'s room.

Septemb. *William* III, Prince of *Orange*, takes *Naerden*, and after-
October. wards *Bonne*, which obliges the King of *France* to abandon all

all his conquests in the *United Provinces*, except *Maestricht* and *Grave*. *Ann. Co.*

A marriage is negotiated between *James* Duke of *York* and *Maria d'Este* Princess of *Modena*.

The Parliament meeting again, the Commons present an address to the King against the Duke of *York's* marriage, but his Majesty prorogues the Parliament. 20.

The Parliament meets again; and the Commons adjourn themselves to the 30th. 27.

They order a bill to be brought in for a General Test between Protestants and Papists. 30.

The King takes the Great Seal from *Anthony Ashley Cooper* Earl of *Shaftesbury*; and gives it to Sir *Heneage Finch* his Attorney-General, whom he constitutes Lord Keeper. *Nov.* 9.

The Commons come to a resolution to grant no more aid or supply of money to the King, before the act for raising 1,238,750 *l.* be expired, or the Kingdom secured from Popery. 31.

They present to him an address for a general fast:

And a second address against the Duke of *York's* marriage. *Nov.* 1.

They vote, That the standing army is a grievance and a burden to the Nation. 4.

They vote also, in a tumultuous manner, 1. That King *Charles's* alliance with *France*, 2. his evil Counsellors, and 3. *John Maitland*, Duke of *Lauderdale*, were all grievances.

The King prorogues the Parliament to the 7th day of *January*, 1674.

A proclamation is issued out for the rigorous execution of the laws against the Papists. 14.

James, Duke of *York*, is married, at *Dover*, and consummates his marriage with *Maria d'Este*. 21.

The Parliament meets again. 1673-4.

They form the design of restoring the Government to its natural state. *Jan.* 7.

For that purpose, the House of Lords presents an address to the King, praying him to order all Papists to remove out of *London* and *Westminster*, during the session of the Parliament.

A proclamation is issued out accordingly. 14.

Both Houses join in an address to the King for a general fast. 15.

The Commons vote, That they would in the first place proceed to have their grievances redressed, the Protestant Religion, their Liberties and Properties effectually secured,

Ann. C. Popery ſuppreſſed, and all Perſons and Counſellors, popiſhly affected, removed from the King's Perſon.

They addreſs the King, That the Militia of *London* and *Middleſex* might be ready at an hour's warning, and that of all the other Counties of *England* at a day's warning.

The King returns a general anſwer to their addreſs.

Then proceeding againſt the three remaining Members of the Cabal, they vote, firſt, That his Majeſty ſhould be addreſſed to remove *John Maitland*, Duke of *Lauderdale*, from his employments, and from his preſence and Councils, for ever.

Jan. 13. Next, they examine *George Villiers*, Duke of *Buckingham*, and paſs the ſame vote againſt him as againſt the Duke of *Lauderdale*.

In the third place, they impeach *Henry Bennet*, Earl of *Arlington*.

Then they prepare a bill for a general teſt.

The *States* make propoſals to King *Charles* for a ſeparate peace; and grant full powers to the Marquiſs *del Freſne*, the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador at *London*, to conclude a peace in their name.

24. The King conſults the Parliament, upon this occaſion,
Reg. 26. who adviſe him to make peace.

The Commons continue to examine the grievances, and reſolve to addreſs the King to diſband all forces raiſed ſince the year 1663.

Feb. 9. The treaty of peace between *England* and *Holland* is ſigned.

11. The King acquaints the Parliament with the concluſion of the peace, and deſires a ſupply of money.

The Commons go on, notwithſtanding, examining the grievances, and bring in a bill concerning the writs of *Habeas Corpus*.

24. The Parliament is prorogued till *October* 10.

28. The peace between *England* and *Holland* is proclaimed.

King *Charles* offers his mediation to *France*, and the *United Provinces*, which accept of it, and prevail upon their allies to do the ſame.

But he was not like to be an impartial Mediator, conſidering that he received from *France* an annual penſion of 100,000 *l.* ſterling.

1674. The Papiſts importune King *Charles* to diſſolve the Parliament; but he refuſes to do it.

May 18. Three Ambaſſadors extraordinary from the *States* of

Holland make their entry into *London*, and, the next day, *Ann. C.*
have an audience of the King.

A proclamation is iſſued out, for baniſhing *Romiſh* Prieſts *June* 10.
and Jeſuits.

Henry Bennet, Earl of *Arlington*, is made Lord-Cham- *Sept.* 11.
berlain, and Sir *Joſeph Williamſon*, Secretary of State. 16.

George Villiers, Duke of *Buckingham*, loſes all his credit.

The celebrated Poet, *John Milton*, dies in the courſe of this year.

As doth alſo *Edward Hyde*, Earl of *Clarendon*, at *Roan*: *Dec.* 7.

The King of *France*, and the other contending Powers, 1674-5.
agree to treat of a peace at *Nimeguen*; and, on the 12th of *January.*
March following, King *Charles* appoints *John*, Lord *Berke-* *Reg.* 27.
ley, of *Stratton*, Sir *William Temple*, and Sir *Lionel Jenkins*, to be his Ambaſſadors at that treaty.

Henry Bennet, Earl of *Arlington*, finding himſelf decline in the King's favour, doth, in order to ingratiate himſelf again, take a journey to the *Hague*, to try to engage *William* III, Prince of *Orange*, into the meaſures of the Court of *England*; but, not ſucceeding, he loſes all his credit.

The Parliament meets again.

The Commons prepare a bill againſt Popiſh Prieſts. 1675.

They preſent an addreſs to the King, deſiring him to re- *April* 13.
move *John Maitland*, Duke of *Lauderdale*, from his perſon *May* 6.
and councils; but his Majeſty refuſeth.

Next, they examine the whole conduct of *Thomas Osborne*, Viſcount *Latimer*, and Lord-Treaſurer.

Moreover, they pray the King, in an addreſs, to recall his forces out of *France*, and prevent his ſubjects from engaging in that ſervice for the future: He rejects the firſt part of the petition, and grants the latter.

The Houſe of Lords being afraid that the Commons were going too far, and intended to alter the Government, bring in a bill, intitled, An act to prevent the dangers which may ariſe from perſons diſaffected to the Government; which occaſions long debates in the Upper Houſe: But the bill paſſes at laſt.

The Prince of *Newburg* comes to *England*. *May.*

The Commons deſign to grant 300,000*l.* ſterling, for building of ſhips; and to apply the tax of tonnage and poundage to the maintenance of the navy.

A quarrel happens between the two Houſes, occaſioned 16.
by Dr. *Shirley*'s appealing to the Houſe of Lords againſt Sir *John Pagg*, a Member of the Houſe of Commons.

Ann. C. The King prorogues the Parliament to the 13th of *Octo-*
June 9. *ber.*

The Dutchess of *Mazarine* withdraws into *England*, and hath 4000 *l.* a year allowed her by King *Charles*.

July 27. The Marshal *de Turenne* is killed by a cannon-ball.

Aug. 4. *Treves* is retaken by the Allies.

Oct. 13. The Parliament meets again, and the King makes a speech to them, in which he demands money.

The Commons resume the consideration of the bills left unfinished the last session:

They examine the public accounts, and vote to grant the King 300,000 *l.* for building 20 ships of war; and to appropriate tonnage and poundage to the maintenance of the navy.

The Commons order a bill to be prepared about the commerce between *England* and *France*.

They come to a resolution of obliging all their Members to take an oath, that they had not received any thing from the Court since the 1st of *January*, 1672.

Complaints are laid before the House concerning the attempt of Father *St. Germain* upon Mr. *de Luzancy*, a *French* Priest, who had abjured Popery; and a proclamation is issued out against *St. Germain*.

George Villiers, Duke of *Buckingham*, brings in a bill into the House of Lords for the ease [or toleration] of Protestant Dissenters.

But, the quarrel between the two Houses about *Shirley* and *Fagg* being revived, the King prorogues the Parlia-
Nov. 22. ment to the 15th of *February*, 1677.

Dec. 19. *Heneage*, Lord *Finch*, having been hitherto only Lord-Keeper, is now made Lord High-Chancellor.

John Lightfoot, D. D. *Thomas Willis*, M. D. and *Bulstrode Whitlock*, Esq; die in this year.

Dec. 29. King *Charles*, being reflected upon for his affection to
1675-6. Popery and to *France*, publishes a proclamation for sup-
Jan. 7. pressing coffee-houses; and another against libels.

Reg. 28. *Lewis* XIV. King of *France*, takes *Condé* and *Bouchain*.
1676. He returns to *Paris*, leaving his army under the com-
May. mand of *Frederic* Count *de Schomberg*.

June. *William* III, Prince of *Orange*, lays siege to *Maestricht*.

July. *Frederic* Count *de Schomberg* takes *Aire*; and marches to the relief of *Maestricht*, of which he obliges the Prince of *Orange* to raise the siege.

King *Charles* endeavours to prevail upon the *States* of *Holland* to make a separate peace with *France*, without taking

taking notice of their Allies; but the Prince of *Orange* oppoſes that project. *Ann.* C.

The *French* Privateers ſeize abundance of *Engliſh* ſhips, which renders the people of *England* very eager for a war with *France*.

King *Charles* forbids by a proclamation his ſubjects to hear maſs in the Queen's Chapel, or in the houſes of Ambaſſadors.

This year died *George Digby*, Earl of *Briſtol*; and the excellent Sir *Matthew Hale*, Chief Juſtice of the *King's-Bench*.

The Parliament meets again. 1676-7.

George Villiers, Duke of *Buckingham*, undertakes to prove, that the Parliament was diſſolved by the laſt prorogation for 15 months. *Reg.* 29. *Feb.* 15.

He is ſeconded by *James Cecil*, Earl of *Saliſbury*, *Anthony Aſhley Cooper*, Earl of *Shaftesbury*, and *Philip* Lord *Wharton*.

They are all four ſent to the *Tower*, where the Earl of *Shaftesbury* remains priſoner above a year.

The Commons vote the King 584,978 *l.* 2 *s.* 2 *d.* ½ for building 30 ſhips of war; and continue for three years the additional exciſe upon beer.

Lewis XIV. takes *Valenciennes* and *Cambray*. *Mar.* 17.

The Commons preſent an addreſs to the King againſt *France*; to which he returns a general anſwer. 1677.

They preſent to him a ſecond addreſs upon the ſame ſubject, intreating him to ſtop the progreſs of the *French* arms in the *Spaniſh Netherlands*. 30.

The King gives an anſwer, in which he demands money, to enable him to make ſuitable preparations. *April* 9.

William III. Prince of *Orange*, is defeated by the Duke of *Orleans* at *Monteaſſel*. 11.

The Commons inform the King in a third addreſs, that they intended to grant him 200,000 *l.* but he asks 600,000 *l.*

He paſſes ſeveral acts; namely, one for taking away the writ *de Hæretico comburendo*. —— Another, for erecting a judicature to determine differences touching houſes burnt and demoliſhed by the late dreadful fire in *Southwark*. —— An act for the better obſervation of the Lord's-day, *&c.* 16.

The Parliament is adjourned to the 21ſt of *May*.

The Citadels of *Cambray*, and St. *Omer*, ſurrender by capitulation. 20.

Though King *Charles* had no deſign to make war againſt

Ann. C. *France*, he makes uſe of that pretence, to get money from the Parliament.

May 21. The Parliament meeting again, the King haſtens the money-bill.

The Commons diſtruſt the King, and the King pretends to fear, that the Commons would engage him in a war with *France*, and then leave him to extricate himſelf as well as he could.

He makes to them an obſcure ſpeech, which occaſions warm debates in the Houſe of Commons.

May 26. The Commons preſent an addreſs to the King, in which they earneſtly deſire him to make a league offenſive and defenſive with the *Dutch*; and to go to war with *France*.

28. His Majeſty ſends for the Commons to *Whitehall*, and after having ſharply reproved them for invading his prerogative, orders them to adjourn themſelves to the 16th of *July*.

He endeavours to bring the Prince of *Orange* and the *States*, to make a ſeparate peace with *France*.

Sir *William Temple* having refuſed that Commiſſion, *Laurence Hyde*, Eſq; is ſent to the *Hague*, to try to prevail upon the Prince of *Orange* to comply with thoſe terms.

Oct. 9. *William* III, Prince of *Orange*, comes to *England* to demand in marriage the Princeſs *Mary*, eldeſt daughter to the Duke of *York*.

The King was for agreeing with the Prince of *Orange* upon the terms of a general peace, before the concluſion of the marriage; but the Prince abſolutely refuſed to do ſo. King *Charles* yields at laſt, and the marriage is concluded.

19. The City of *London* invites the Court to an entertainment upon account of this marriage.

Nov. 4. The marriage is conſummated.

9. *Gilbert Sheldon*, Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, dies, and is ſucceeded by *William Sancroft*.

King *Charles* and the Prince of *Orange* agree upon a plan for a general peace, which is communicated to the King of *France*, but it is not followed.

21. The Prince and Princeſs of *Orange* embark for *Holland*.

Dec. 3. The adjournment of the Parliament is prolonged to the 4th of *April*.

King *Charles* ſuffers himſelf to be corrupted by *France*; forſakes the plan he had agreed on for a peace; and enters into ſecret negotiations with *France*.

1677-8. The Parliament is aſſembled the 15th of *January*, and
Jan. 15. adjourned to the 28th of the ſame month.

King

King *Charles* concludes a defenſive league with *Holland*. *Ann. C.*
The Parliament meets again. 16.
The King makes a ſpeech to the Parliament, in which 28.
he inſinuates, that his being engaged in a war with *France* was a conſequence of the league with *Holland*; and demands money for carrying it on.
The Commons preſent an addreſs to him, in which they *Reg.* 30.
give him to underſtand, that they would ſee him actually 31.
engaged in a war with *France*, before they granted him any ſupplies; but the King returns an evaſive anſwer. *Feb.* 4.
The Commons vote that the King's treaty with *Holland* was not purſuant to their deſires ſignified to his Majeſty.
They reſolve to grant him a ſupply, but with ſtrict limitations.
Anthony-Aſhley Cooper, Earl of *Shafteſbury*, is releaſed out of the *Tower*.
Lewis XIV. takes *Ghent* and *Ipres*. *March.*
The Commons prepare a bill for raiſing money by way of poll-tax, and otherwiſe; to enable his Majeſty to enter into an actual war againſt the *French* King, and for prohibiting *French* commodities.
They pray the King in an addreſs to declare war againſt 14.
France: But, before an anſwer was given, the King gives 20.
his aſſent to the poll-bill, and adjourns the Parliament to the 11th of *April*.
He raiſed 30,000 men, who were compleated in ſix weeks.
The Parliament meets, and is adjourned to the 19th. 1678.
The Parliament meets again. *April* 11.
The King acquaints both Houſes that the *Dutch* were 19.
thinking to make a ſeparate peace, and deſires their advice upon that affair.
The Commons adviſe him to act vigorouſly againſt *France*; and vote that the league concluded with *Holland* was not conſiſtent with the good and ſafety of the Kingdom.
The King is diſpleaſed with that vote: However, the *May.*
Commons, not diſcouraged thereby, complain of the King's anſwers to their late addreſſes, and deſire him to remove thoſe Counſellors that adviſed him to give thoſe anſwers, particularly the Duke of *Lauderdale*.
The King returns them an angry anſwer, and prorogues the Parliament to the 23d of *May*.
The *States-General* ſend Mr. *Van Lewen* to King *Charles*,

Ann. C. to let him know, that unleſs he would declare war againſt *France*, they were diſpoſed to a peace.

King *Charles* reſolves to take the money offered to him by *France*, for his conſent to a ſeparate peace with *Holland*.

A treaty is negotiated at *London* between him and *Lewis* XIV; but *Lewis* inſiſting, He ſhould never keep above 8000 men, ſtanding troops, in his three Kingdoms, *Charles* is thereby put into a great rage, as he could not expect of becoming abſolute maſter in his Dominions, with ſo ſmall a force.

May 23. The Parliament meets again; and the King makes a ſpeech to them, about the army, and a ſupply of money.

27. The Commons offer to maintain the army, if the King would go to war with *France*; but, if otherwiſe, that they would provide for the ſpeedy diſbanding of the army.

June 2. They vote 200,000 *l.* for the diſbanding of it, by the

4. end of the month; but the King was againſt the diſbanding of it, till the peace was concluded.

The Commons extend the time of doing it, as to the forces in *Flanders*, to the 27th day of *July*.

15. They vote, that after the 18th of *June*, no motions ſhould be made for any new ſupplies of money, till after the next receſs.

18. The King acquaints both Houſes with the peace between *France*, *Spain*, and *Holland*, being almoſt concluded: And demands, at the ſame time, money for protecting *Flanders* againſt *France*; and a new fund of 300,000 *l. per ann.*

30. A difficulty is ſtarted, relating to the evacuation of the towns of *Ghent*, *Aeth*, *Charleroy*, *Oudenard*, *Courtray*, and *Limburg*, by the *French*; which retards the ſigning of the peace at *Nimeguen*.

July 15. The Royal aſſent is given to the following acts: 1.—For granting a ſupply to his Majeſty of 619,388 *l.* 11 *s.* and 9 *d.* for diſbanding the army, and other uſes.—2. For granting an additional duty upon wines, for three years.—3. For repealing an act made in the 18th of his Majeſty's Reign, and making a new act for burying in woollen, *&c.*

The Parliament is prorogued to the 1ſt of *Auguſt*.

26. King *Charles* concludes a league with the *States* for obliging the *French* to ſurrender the ſix towns abovementioned; but he ſoon repents of it, and breaks the meaſures of the *States*.

Mons is blocked up by the Duke of *Luxemburgh*.

Aug. 11. The peace is ſigned at *Nimeguen*.

Dr.

Dr. *Ezerel Tonge* makes the first discovery to the King of *Anno*
the Popish-plot. 12.

The battle of *St. Denis* is fought, and the Duke of *Luxemburgh* forced by the Prince of *Orange* to quit the siege of *Mons*. 14.

King *Charles* will not suffer honest *William* [alias *John Groves*] and *Thomas Pickering*, to be apprehended, nor the conspiracy to be spoken of.

Bedingfield receives some letters relating to the plot, which he carries to the Duke of *York*, who causes those letters to be examined by the Council, and so the affair is made public.

Titus Oates appears as a witness in the conspiracy, and *Sept. 6.*
gives a narrative of it; but the Council pays no regard to his discovery.

Whereupon, *Tonge* and *Oates* take measures to bring the affair before the Parliament; for that purpose, they apply to Sir *Edmondbury Godfrey*, a Justice of Peace; and *Oates* swears before him to the truth of his narrative.

Thomas Osborne, Earl of *Danby*, and Lord-Treasurer, 27.
communicates the plot to the Council, which resolves to examine that business to the bottom.

Dr. *Ezerel Tonge*, *Titus Oates*, and *Christopher Kirkby*, 28.
are accordingly examined by the Council, and the two first have lodgings assigned them in *Whitehall*, with a guard, and a weekly salary.

Several Jesuits, and others, of the Conspirators, are ap- 30.
prehended.

Sir *Edmondbury Godfrey* is found murdered; and the *Oct.* 17.
Papists are accused of having done it. 20, 24.

Two proclamations are issued out for discovering the authors of it.

The King endeavours to keep the plot concealed from the Parliament.

The Parliament meeting again, the King makes a speech 21.
to both Houses, wherein he demands money.

The Lord-Treasurer, *Danby*, communicates *Oates*'s narrative to the Commons, contrary to the King's order; and the Commons communicate it to the House of Lords.

Both Houses present three addresses to the King; the 22.
first, To desire him to appoint a fast; the second, To re- 23.
quire the removal of all Popish Recusants out of *London*; 24.
the third, To pray the King's order to the Lord-Chamberlain, that no unknown person might have access to his Majesty.

Titus

Ann. C.
3. The King iſſues out ſeveral proclamations againſt the Papiſts, and one, for recalling all his ſubjects from the foreign ſeminaries.

14. *William Ireland*, and *John Grove*, are executed, proteſting their innocence to the laſt.

A College of Jeſuits is diſcovered at *Leuar-Coma*, in *Herefordſhire*.

Stephen Dugdale accuſes five Jeſuits and one Prieſt, of being concerned in the plot.

24. The King diſſolves his ſecond Parliament, after it had continued almoſt 18 years, and calls a new one, to meet the 6th of *March*.

Jan. 25. Writs are iſſued out for the elections for a new Parlia-
Feb. 31. ment.

Feb. 10. *Robert Green*, *Henry Berry*, and *Laurence Hill* are brought to their trials for being concerned in the murder of Sir *Edmondbury Godfrey*, and condemned.

15. *Robert* Earl of *Sunderland* is made principal Secretary of State in the room of Sir *Joſeph Williamſon*.

21. *Robert Green* and *Laurence Hill* are executed, without confeſſing any thing; *Berry* is reprieved till *May* 28.

28. The King writes to the Duke of *York*, to deſire him to leave the Kingdom; whereupon, the Duke embarks for

Mar. 3. *Holland*, and thence withdraws to *Bruſſels*.

6. The new Parliament meets; it being the 3d of King *Charles* II.

His Majeſty makes a ſpeech to both Houſes, in which he aſſures them of his affection to the laws of the land, and the Proteſtant Religion, and demands money.

6—13. A diſpute happens between the King and the Commons, about chuſing *Edward Seymour*, Eſq; for their Speaker.

13. The King prorogues the Parliament from the 13th to the 15th.

Thomas Earl of *Danby* is diſmiſſed from his office of Lord-Treaſurer; and rewarded with a penſion of 5000 *l. per ann.* and, on the 26th, the Treaſury is put in commiſſion.

15. The Parliament meets again.

William Gregory, Eſq; is choſen Speaker of the Houſe of Commons, and approved by the King.

20. A Committee of Secrecy is appointed.

The Commons reſume the impeachment of *Thomas* Earl of *Danby*, and deſire the Lords that he may be committed to cuſtody. He reſolves to adhere to the benefit of a pardon granted him by the King.

They

They examine Dr. *Tonge*, *Titus Oates*, *William Bedloe*, and *Edmund Everard*, a new diſcoverer. Ann. C. 21.

The Commons preſent addreſſes to the King, in behalf of *Bedloe*.

They paſs ſome votes relating to the conſpiracy, which the Lords concur with.

Both Houſes petition for a faſt-day on the 11th of *April*, which is granted.

The Commons order a bill to be brought in for ſecuring the King and Kingdom againſt the danger and growth of Popery. 22.

The King makes a ſpeech to the Parliament in favour of the Earl of *Danby*: But the Commons deſire the Lords, that he might be committed, and examine the Chancellor about his pardon.

Anthony-Aſhley Cooper, Earl of *Shaftesbury* makes a remarkable ſpeech againſt Popery. 1678. 25.

Thomas Osborne, Earl of *Danby*, withdrawn; whereupon the Commons bring in a bill, to ſummon him to render himſelf by a day, or elſe to be attainted. After ſeveral conferences, this bill is paſſed by the Lords.

Articles of impeachment againſt the five Lords in the *Tower*, are carried up to the Houſe of Lords by the Commons. *April* 3.

The Earl of *Danby* renders himſelf, and is ſent to the *Tower*. 16.

The King forms a new Privy-Council, into which *Arthur Capel* Earl of *Eſſex*, Sir *William Temple*, and *Anthony-Aſhley Cooper*, Earl of *Shaftesbury*, are admitted; the latter being made Preſident of the ſame. 20.

The King acquaints the Parliament with it, and great rejoicings are every where on that occaſion; but the Houſe of Commons receives the news of it with great coldneſs.

A deſign formed by the Papiſts to burn *London* is diſcovered.

The Commons paſs a vote againſt *James* Duke of *York* concerning his Religion; and bring in a bill for baniſhing all Papiſts, &c. twenty miles from *London* and *Weſtminſter*.

Thomas Osborne, Earl of *Danby*, being brought to the bar of the Houſe of Lords, produces the King's pardon, and is remanded to the *Tower*. 26.

The King juſtifies his granting that pardon, and recommends to the Parliament the proſecution of the plot; the diſbanding of the army; and the providing a fleet. 30.

He cauſes the Lord-Chancellor *Finch* to make ſome very important

Ann. C. important offers, about the ſucceſſion of *James* Duke of *York*; but the Commons are not ſatisfied with them.

May 2. *John Sharp*, Archbiſhop of St. *Andrews* in *Scotland* is aſſaſſinated.

5. The Commons go up to the bar of the Houſe of Lords, and demand judgment againſt *Thomas Osborne*, Earl of *Danby*; having voted his pardon illegal and void.

They alſo preſent an addreſs to the King againſt *John Maitland* Duke of *Lauderdale*.

9. *Thomas Pickering* is executed.

The Commons grant the King 206,462 *l.* 17 *s.* and 3 *d.* for paying off, and diſbanding the army.

A difference ariſes between the two Houſes, about the Earl of *Danby*'s affair.

10, 11. The Commons petition the King to cauſe the militia of *London*, *Weſtminſter*, *Southwark*, *Middleſex*, and *Surrey*, to be immediately raiſed, and put in a poſture of defence.

A bill is brought into the Houſe, to diſable the Duke of *York* from inheriting the Imperial Crown of *England*.

Diſputes ariſe between the two Houſes, about the Biſhops voting in caſes of blood, and at the trial of the five impeached Lords.

15. The excluſion-bill is read, for the firſt time, in the Houſe of Commons.

21. It is read a ſecond time, and committed.

The Commons examine what Members of the laſt Parliament received penſions from the Court.

27. The King paſſes the *Habeas Corpus* act, for better ſecuring the liberty of the ſubject; and then prorogues the Parliament to the 14th of *Auguſt*.

28. *Henry Berry* is executed.

June 1. About 1500 Preſbyterians riſe up in arms in *Scotland*, and ſeize *Glaſgow*, and ſome other towns.

13. *Thomas Whitebread*, *William Harcourt*, *John Fenwick*, *John Gawen*, and *Anthony Turner*, Jeſuits, are brought to their trials, and found guilty of High-treaſon.

14. *Richard Langhorn*, a Counſellor at law, of the *Temple*, and a Papiſt, is brought to his trial, and alſo found guilty.

20. The five Jeſuits are executed, proteſting, to the laſt, their innocence.

22. *James Scot*, Duke of *Monmouth*, defeats the Rebels at *Bothwell-Bridge*, in *Scotland*.

July 10. The King diſſolves his third Parliament, and calls a new one, to meet the 17th of *October*.

Richard

Richard Langhorn is executed. *Ann. C.*

Sir *George Wakeman*, *William Marſhall*, *James Corker*, and *William Rumley*, are brought to their trials, and acquitted. 14. 18.

The King falls ill of an intermitting fever; whereupon, *James*, Duke of *York*, being ſent for, by advice of the Earls of *Eſſex* and *Halifax*, returns to Court. *Auguſt.* *Sept.* 2. 29.

The Duke of *Monmouth* is diſgraced, and ſent away to *Holland*; and *Anthony-Aſhley Cooper*, Earl of *Shaftesbury*, turned out from being Preſident of the Council.

The King, contrary to the advice of his Council, prorogues the Parliament; whereupon, many of the Privy-Counſellors ſurrender their commiſſions, particularly *Arthur Capel*, Earl of *Eſſex*, and others retire into the country. *Oct.* 15. 27.

James, Duke of *York*, goes and reſides in *Scotland*, where he governs in an arbitrary manner.

The meal-tub plot, contrived by the Papiſts, and managed by *Thomas Dangerfield*, is diſcovered: He is examined before the King and Council, and being committed to *Newgate*, diſcovers the whole fraud, and has his pardon, *Nov.* 2.

November 9.

The Counteſs of *Powis*, one of the chief contrivers of this pretended plot, and accuſed of conſpiring to kill the King, is ſent to the *Tower*. 4.

Thomas Hobbes dies in this year, 1679, 91 years old.

Petitions are preſented to the King from moſt parts in the Kingdom, deſiring, that the Parliament might ſit the 26th of *January*. 1679-80. *January*.

The fourth Parliament of King *Charles* II. meets, and is prorogued to the 15th of *April*. 26. *Reg.* 32.

Sir *Lionel Jenkins* is made Secretary of State, in the room of *Henry Coventry*, Eſq; *Feb.* 15.

James, Duke of *York*, returns to Court. 24.

On occaſion of the petitions above-mentioned, two parties are formed in the Kingdom, called, the Abhorrers, and Addreſſers, or Tories and Whigs:

And ſeveral libels are publiſhed againſt the Court.

Anthony-Aſhley Cooper, Earl of *Shaftesbury*, ſpreads a report of the Duke of *Monmouth*'s legitimacy; But the King, calling an extraordinary Council, ſolemnly declares, that report to be falſe; and afterwards has a memorandum entered in the Council-books, That he never was married to Mrs. *Barlow*, alias *Walters*, the Duke of *Monmouth*'s mother. 1680. *April.* 26.

Elizabeth

Ann. C. *Elizabeth Cellier*, the chief contriver of the meal-tub
June 11. plot, is tried, and acquitted.

23. A defenſive alliance is concluded between *England* and *Spain*.

Roger Palmer, Earl of *Caſtlemain*, is tried, and acquitted.

Slingsby Bethel, and *Henry Cornish*, both Diſſenters, are choſen Sheriffs of *London*.

Aug. 20. *William Bedloe* dies, having, upon his death-bed, charged *James*, Duke of *York*, with being concerned in the Popiſh conſpiracy; but he clears him, and the Queen, of having had any deſign of attempting upon the King's life.

James Scot, Duke of *Monmouth*, returns to *England*, without leave, and endeavours to gain a party in the Kingdom; for which end, he takes progreſſes in ſeveral parts.

October. *James*, Duke of *York*, is preſented in *Weſtminſter-Hall* as a Popiſh Recuſant, by the Earl of *Shaftesbury*, attended by 12 Lords, and Gentlemen of note.

20. The King ſends him back into *Scotland*.

21. The Parliament meets.

The Commons chuſe *William Williams*, Eſq; for their Speaker, and expel ſome of their Members that had been among the Abhorrers.

26. They preſent an addreſs to the King againſt Sir *George Jefferies*, Recorder of *London*, and one of the Abhorrers, and reſume the buſineſs of the Popiſh plot.

William, Lord *Ruſſel*, opens the debates in the Houſe of Commons, about the excluſion of the Duke of *York*.

Dr. *Ezrel Tonge* dies.

Nov. 2. The Commons vote, That the Duke of *York*'s being a Papiſt, and the hopes of his coming ſuch to the Crown, hath given the greateſt incouragement to the preſent conſpiracies; and reſolve to ſtand by his Majeſty with their lives and fortunes.

4. The excluſion-bill is read the firſt time.

6. It is read a ſecond time.

10, 17. The King ſends two meſſages to the Commons, to interrupt their debates about the excluſion.

They preſent addreſſes to his Majeſty, in anſwer to his two meſſages.

The excluſion-bill paſſes the Houſe of Commons.

13. The Commons preſent an addreſs, or kind of remonſtrance, to the King, in which they ſet forth the danger the Kingdom was in, on account of Popery.

The bill of exclusion is sent up to the House of Lords, who throw it out. *Ann.* 15.

William Howard Viscount *Stafford*, is brought to his trial and condemned. *Nov.* 30,

The King makes a speech to the Parliament, relating to his Alliances with *Spain* and *Holland*, and concerning *England*, his affection for the Protestant Religion, and the Right of Succession. *Dec.* 15.

The Commons enter into some resolves against Popery and arbitrary Power, and among the rest, to bring in bills ——To banish all the considerable Papists out of the Kingdom. —— For the more effectual securing the meetings and sittings of frequent Parliaments. —— That the Judges may hold their places and salaries *quamdiu se bene gesserint*. —— And to make illegal exaction of money upon the people to be High-treason.

They also agree to come into an association.

They present an address to the King, in answer to his speech of *December* 15. 20.

The Papists endeavour to sow dissensions amongst the Protestants.

But the House of Commons takes care to screen the Presbyterians; accordingly, a bill passes both Houses for uniting his Majesty's Protestant subjects; but when it should have been offered to the King for the Royal assent, it was unaccountably lost. 21.

William Howard, Lord Viscount *Stafford* is beheaded, without making any confession. 29.

The Commons vote, that no Member of their House should accept of any office or place of profit, nor any promise of any such place from the Crown without leave of the House.

The King returns an answer to the address of the Commons. 1680-1. *Jan.* 4.

The Lords vote, that there is, and for divers years past has been, a horrid plot contrived and carried on by the Papists in *Ireland*, for massacring the *English*, and subverting the Protestant Religion: Which vote is approved by the Commons, and they add, that the plot was countenanced by the Duke of *York*'s being a Papist. 6.

Upon receiving the King's answer to their address, they resolve, that the King's person and Protestant Religion cannot be secured any way, without the exclusion-bill: and that, until they had that bill, they could give no money

Ann. C. without endangering the King's perſon and Proteſtant Religion.

They petition his Majeſty to remove from his Perſon and Council, *George Savil* Earl of *Halliſax*, *Laurence Hyde* Eſq; *Henry Somerſet* Earl of *Worceſter*, *Henry Hyde* Earl of *Clarendon*, and *Lewis Duras* Earl of *Feverſham*.

The Commons vote, that whoſoever ſhould lend any money by way of advance upon the branches of the King's revenue, ſhould be reſponſible for the ſame in Parliament.

The King is preſſed in vain to forſake the Duke of of *York*.

10. The Commons paſs ſome votes againſt the prorogation of the Parliament, and in favour of the Proteſtant Diſſenters.

An additional act is paſſed for burying in woollen.

18. The Parliament is prorogued, the ſame day.

Reg. 30. And diſſolved.

The King ſummons another to meet at *Oxford* the 21ſt of *March*.

In the mean time, he puts *Robert Spencer* Earl of *Sunderland* out of his office of Secretary of State, which he gives to *Edward* Earl of *Conway*. He alſo makes alterations among the Judges: And diſmiſſes the Earls of *Eſſex*, *Salisbury*, and *Sunderland*, and Sir *William Temple*, from his Privy-Council.

The City of *London* chuſes their old Repreſentatives, and moſt of the Boroughs in the Kingdom do the ſame.

Arthur Capel Earl of *Eſſex*, attended by fifteen other Lords, preſents a petition to the King, to deſire him to let the Parliament ſit at *Weſtminſter*, but the King returns no anſwer.

Edward Fitz-Harris perſuades *Edmund Everard* to write a Libel againſt the King, for which *Fitz-Harris* is ſent to *Newgate*; but the King removes him from thence to the *Tower*.

Mar. 14. King *Charles* repairs to *Oxford* ſeven or eight days before the meeting of the Parliament.

21. The 5th Parliament of King *Charles* II. meets at *Oxford*. His Majeſty makes a ſpeech at the opening of it, wherein he recommends ſome expedient, inſtead of the excluſion.

24. The Commons come to a reſolution of printing their votes, which did not uſe to be made public before, and to bring in a bill for excluding *James* Duke of *York*.

They examine the affair of *Fitz-Harris*, and impeach him of High-treaſon.

1681. The

The expedients, propoſed inſtead of the bill of excluſion, *Ann. C.* are taken into conſideration by the Houſe of Commons. 26.
But they reject them, and order the excluſion-bill to be brought in.

A difference ariſes between the two Houſes about the Lord's throwing out the impeachment of *Fitz-Harris*.

The bill of excluſion is read in the Houſe of Commons.

The King diſſolves his fifth Parliament, and governs thenceforth in an abſolute and arbitrary manner.

He publiſhes a declaration containing his reaſons for diſſolving the two laſt Parliaments, and orders it to be read in Churches. Addreſſes are preſented to him upon that occaſion.

Charles Lenox Duke of *Richmond*, is made Knight of the *April* 7. Garter.

Edward Fitz-Harris, and *Oliver Plunket*, titular Arch- *June*. biſhop of *Dublin*, are tried and condemned for High-treaſon; and executed the 1ſt of *July*.

Anthony-Aſhley Cooper, Earl of *Shaftesbury* is committed *July* 2. to the *Tower*, as are alſo *John Rouſe*, *Bryan Haynes*, —— *White*, and *Stephen Colledge* the Proteſtant Joiner.

Stephen Colledge is indicted of High-treaſon, but the Jury throw out the bill with an *Ignoramus*; for which *John Wilmore* the fore-man, is committed to the *Tower*.

Colledge's ruin being determined, he is removed to *Ox-* *Aug.* 17. *ford*, and there tried and brought in guilty of High-treaſon.

He is executed. 31.

Titus Oates is turned out of *Whitehall*.

James Duke of *York*, the King's High Commiſſioner, convenes a Parliament in *Scotland*.

In this Parliament ſeveral acts are paſſed in favour of the King, and Royalty, and a new oath or teſt is impoſed.

Archibald Campbel Earl of *Argyle*, refuſing to take it, is impriſoned and condemned to die; but he makes his eſcape into *Holland*.

Sir *John Moor*, one of the Court-Party, is choſen Lord- *Sept.* 29. Mayor of *London*, but *Thomas Pilkington*, and *Samuel Shute*, both Whigs, are elected Sheriffs.

Anthony-Aſhley Cooper Earl of *Shaftesbury* is tried for an *Nov.* 24. aſſociation found among his papers, and acquitted by the Grand-Jury; upon which occaſion, bonfires and other rejoicings are made in *London*.

The Diſſenters are proſecuted. 1681-2.

The doctrine of paſſive obedience is preached up every *Reg.* 34. where.

Ann. C. An Ambaſſador from the King of *Fez* and *Morocco* makes
Jan. 5. his entrance into *London*.

12. *Thomas Thynne*, Eſq; is aſſaſſinated in *Pall-Mall* by Count *Coningſmark*, and other ruffians.

Eight Ambaſſadors from *Bantam* come to *England*.

March. *James* Duke of *York* returns to *England*.

1682. He goes back to *Scotland* by ſea, and is, in his voyage
May 5. thither, ſhip-wrecked, and very nigh being loſt.

He returns ſoon after to *England*, and hath a great influence over the counſels of the King his brother.

June. *Dudley North* and *Peter Rich*, both of the Court-party, are elected Sheriffs: And the two Sheriffs, *Thomas Pilkington* and *Samuel Shute*, are committed to the *Tower*, for continuing the poll, after it had been adjourned by the Lord-Mayor.

July. *Anthony-Aſhley Cooper* Earl of *Shaftesbury* eſcapes into *Holland*, and dies there, the 21ſt of *January* following.

Aug. 24. *John Maitland* Duke of *Lauderdale* dies.

Nov. 17. The Lord-Mayor and Sheriffs of *London* forbid the burning the figure of the Pope.

24. Alderman *Thomas Pilkington* having an action of *ſcandalum magnatum* brought againſt him by the Duke of *York*, is fined 100,000 *l.* to the Duke's uſe.

29. Prince *Rupert* dies.

Dec. 18. *Heneage Finch*, Earl of *Nottingham*, and Lord-Chancellor, dies; and is ſucceeded by Sir *Francis North*, Lord-Keeper.

1682-3. *Robert Spencer* Earl of *Sunderland* is reſtored to the office
Jan. 28. of Secretary of State.

Reg. 35. The King goes to *Newmarket*.

Mar. 3. A fire there obliges him to return to *London* ſooner than
22. he intended.

1683. Fourteen Aldermen and Citizens of *London* are tried for
May 8. a pretended riot, at the laſt election of Sheriffs, and condemned in great fines.

The Court comes to a reſolution of reſuming the Charters of the Corporations, and granting them others new-modelled. For that purpoſe, they begin with *London*, and a *Quo-Warranto* is brought by the King againſt the Charter of that City.

June 12. This affair being ſolemnly argued in the *King's-Bench*, the Court gave judgment, "That the franchiſes and li-"berties of the City of *London* be ſeized into the King's "hands."

18. The Lord-Mayor, Aldermen, &c. upon that, implore the King's mercy: But they are told, they muſt expect none,

note, unless they submitted to some regulations, which put *Ann. C*
the nomination of Officers, and the Government of the City into the King's power.

They submit to those hard terms, and obtain a new 21.
Charter.

The Protestant, or *Rye-House* plot, is discovered by *Josias* and *John Keeling*, two brothers.

The King puts out a proclamation for apprehending Colonel *John Ramsey*, *Richard Rumbald*, *Richard Knebworth*, *Edward Wade*, *Richard Goodenough*, Captain *Thomas Walcot*, *William Thompson*, *James Burton*, and *William Hone*, who were informed against.

A second proclamation comes out, for apprehending 28.
James Scot Duke of *Monmouth*, *Ford* Lord *Grey* of *Werk*, Sir *Thomas Armstrong*, and *Robert Ferguson* a Minister.

Arthur Capel Earl of *Essex*, *William* Lord *Russel*, and some others, are also taken up.

Vienna besieged by the Grand-Vizier *Kara Mustapha*. *July* 9.

Captain *Thomas Walcot* is brought to his trial, and con- 12.
demned for high-treason.

William Lord *Russel* is also tried at the *Old Bailey*, and 13.
brought in guilty of high-treason; as are likewise *William Hone*, and *John Rouse*.

Arthur Capel Earl of *Essex* is found dead in the *Tower*, with his throat cut: The King and the Duke of *York* are suspected of being the authors of that murder.

The University of *Oxford* publishes a notable decree 21.
about the power of Kings, *&c.*

Captain *Thomas Walcot*, *William Hone*, and *John Rouse*, 22.
are executed.

William Lord *Russel* is beheaded in *Lincoln's-Inn-Fields*. 23.

The Princess *Anne*, second daughter to *James* Duke of 28.
York, is married to Prince *George* of *Denmark*.

John III. King of *Poland*, and the Duke of *Lorrain*, *Sept.* 2.
raises the siege of *Vienna*.

Sir *George Jefferies* is made Chief-Justice of the *King's-* 28.
Bench.

King *Charles* orders the judgment given upon the *Quo* *Oct.* 6.
Warranto against the City of *London* to be entered; and takes a Lord-Mayor, and other Magistrates.

Colonel *Algernon Sidney* is tried, and brought in guilty *Nov.* 21.
of high-treason, for the late conspiracy.

James Scot, Duke of *Monmouth*, reconciles himself with the King his Father, who grants him a pardon.

But he requires him to write a letter, to justify the con- *Decemb.*

Ann. C. demnation of the Lord *Ruſſel* and Colonel *Sidney*: The Dukes writes it, but ſoon repenting thereof, and demanding it back, the King baniſhes him from his preſence at Court.

A violent froſt happens this year, which laſts from the beginning of *December* to the 5th of *February*.

7. Colonel *Algernon Sidney* is beheaded.

Tangier is demoliſhed this year by the King's order.

1683-4. *John Hampden*, Eſq; who was accuſed of being con-
R. g. 36. cerned in the late Proteſtant plot, is tried, and fined
Feb. 6. 40,000 *l.*

Laurence Braddon and *Hugh Speke*, are tried, and fined; the firſt 2000 *l.* and the latter 1000 *l.* for inquiring into the Earl of *Eſſex*'s murder, *April* 21.

12. *Thomas Oſborne*, Earl of *Danby*, and the four Popiſh Lords in the *Tower* (the Lord *Petre* being dead ſome time before) are admitted to bail.

Sir *Samuel Barnardiſton* is fined 10,000 *l.* for writing letters about the plot.——And *Samuel Johnſon*, M. A. 500 marks, for writing *Julian the Apoſtate*.

1684. *John Dutton Colt*, Eſq; having an action of *ſcandalum*
May 3. *magnatum* brought againſt him by the Duke of *York*, is fined 100,000 *l.* to the Duke's uſe.

May 18. *Titus Oates* is fined in the ſame ſum, for having called the Duke of *York* a traytor, &c.

He is indicted likewiſe for perjury.

June 20. *James Holloway*, and Sir *Thomas Armſtrong*, who had fled, and been outlawed, are brought over, and executed for the late plot.

King *Charles* gets the Charters of the principal Corporations in the Kingdom ſurrendered to him.

Oct. 1. He muſters his army, which conſiſted of 4000 men;
Decemb. And diſſolves the commiſſion granted by him in 1681, for the diſpoſal of eccleſiaſtical preferments.

The *Hamburgh* Company erects a ſtatue to King *Charles* II. in the middle of the *Royal Exchange*.

1684-5. His Majeſty publiſhes a declaration, in which he thanks
Reg. 37. the Corporations for ſurrendering their Charters to him.

Shortly after, he reſolves to alter his meaſures, and to break with his brother.

Feb. 6. King *Charles* II. dies, aged 54 years, 8 months, and 8 days; after having reigned (ſince the Reſtoration) 24 years, 8 month, and 9 days; and was buried, *February* 14, in *Weſtminſter-Abbey*.

The

The Character of CHARLES II.

It is not very strange that the Historians or others, should disagree in their character of *Charles* II, when it is considered, that he was the head and protector of one of the two parties, and the persecutor of the other. This must have necessarily produced a diversity of characters, according as they are given by Tories or Whigs. When we read successively the writers of the two parties, who have spoken of this Prince in general, or given his character, we are almost apt to think, they speak of two different Kings of the same name. The one by several omissions endeavour to cover all his faults, or if they are mentioned, 'tis very slightly, and always with some addition or insinuation tending to justify them. The others insist chiefly upon what may blacken his character, and shew, that he acted upon every ill motives, and upon principles directly contrary to the good of the Kingdom. If they speak of his good qualities, it is only to render him more faulty, and demonstrate that he transgressed not through ignorance, but with premeditation. Which ever way I take to draw the character of this Prince, (says *Rapin*) I cannot avoid the censure of one or the other party, if I speak as from myself, and I should not gain much in going upon the testimony of either party. However, as the reader, doubtless, expects to know something more of the character of this King than could be learnt from the history of his reign, I chuse to insert Dr. *Burnet's* account in the *History of his own Times.* I own this, of all the characters of *Charles* II. seems to me, in the whole, to be most like, and most agreeable to the history of his life. I could wish however, this illustrious Prelate had omitted, or at least softened some strokes, which appear to me a little overcharged, and seem to discover some passion in the author. However that be, he concludes the history of this Prince in the following manner: T. I. p. 611.

"Thus lived and died King *Charles* the second. He "was the greatest instance in History of the various revo- "lutions of which any one man seemed capable. He was "bred up the first twelve years of his life with the splen- "dour that became the heir of so great a Crown. After "that he passed through eighteen years in great inequali- "ties, unhappy in the war, in the loss of his father, and "of the Crown of *England*. *Scotland* did not only re-

"ceive him, though upon terms hard of digestion, but "made an attempt upon *England* for him, though a feeble "one. He lost the battle of *Worcester* with too much "indifference: and then he shewed more care of his per- "son than became one, who had so much at stake. He "wandered about *England* for ten weeks after that, hi- "ding from place to place. But under all the apprehen- "sions he had then upon him, he shewed a temper so "careless, and so much turned to levity, that he was "then diverting himself with little houshold sports, in as "unconcerned a manner as if he had made no loss, and "had been in no danger at all. He got at last out of "*England*. But he had been obliged to so many, who "had been faithful to him and careful of him, that he "seemed afterwards to resolve to make an equal return to "them all. And finding it not easy to reward them all "as they deserved, he forgot them all alike. Most "Princes seem to have this pretty deep in them; and to "think that they ought never to remember past services, "but that their acceptance of them is a full reward. He "of all in our age, exerted this piece of prerogative in "the amplest manner: for he never seemed to charge his "memory, or to trouble his thoughts with the sense "of any of the services that had been done him. While "he was abroad at *Paris*, *Colen*, or *Brussels*, he never seem- "ed to lay any thing to heart. He pursued all his di- "versions and irregular pleasures in a free career; "and seemed to be as serene under the loss of a Crown "as the greatest Philosopher could have been. Nor did he "willingly hearken to any of those projects, with which "he often complained that his Chancellor persecuted "him. That in which he seemed most concerned was, "to find money for supporting his expence. And it was "often said, that if *Cromwell* would have compounded the "matter, and have given him a good round pension, "that he might have been induced to resign his title to "him. During his exile he delivered himself so entirely "up to his pleasures, that he became incapable of appli- "cation. He spent little of his time in reading or study, "and yet less in thinking. And in the state his affairs "were then in, he accustomed himself to say to every "person, and upon all occasions, that which he thought "would please most: so that words or promises went very "easily from him. And he had so ill an opinion of man- "kind, that he thought the great art of living and go-

"verning

" verning was to manage all things and all persons with " a depth of craft and dissimulation. And in that, few " men in the world could put on the appearances of sincerity better than he could: Under which so much artifice was usually hid, that in conclusion he could deceive " none, for all were become mistrustful of him. He had " great vices, but scarce any virtues to correct them. He " had in him some vices that were less hurtful, which corrected his more hurtful ones. He was, during the active part of life, given up to sloth and lewdness to such a " degree, that he hated business, and could not bear the " engaging in any thing that gave him much trouble, or " put him under any constraint. And though he desired " to become absolute, and to overturn both our Religion " and our laws; yet he would neither run the risk, nor " give himself the trouble, which so great a design required. He had an appearance of gentleness in his outward " deportment: but he seemed to have no bowels nor tenderness in his nature: and in the end of his life he became cruel. He was apt to forgive all crimes even blood " itself: Yet he never forgave any thing that was done " against himself, after his first and general Act of Indemnity, which was to be reckoned as done rather upon " maxims of State, than inclinations of mercy. He delivered " himself up to a most enormous course of vice, without any " sort of restraint, even from the consideration of the nearest relations; the most studied extravagancies that way " seemed to the very last to be much delighted in, and " pursued by him. He had the art of making all people " grow fond of him at first, by a softness in his whole " way of conversation, as he was certainly the best bred " man of the age. But when it appeared how little could " be built on his promise, they were cured of the fondness " that he was apt to raise in them. When he saw young " men of quality, who had something more than ordinary " in them, he drew them about him, and set himself to " corrupt them both in Religion and morality; in which " he proved so unhappily successful, that he left *England* " much changed at his death, from what he had found it " at his Restoration. He loved to talk over all the stories of his life to every new man that came about him. " His stay in *Scotland*, and the share he had in the war " of *Paris*, in carying messages from the one side to the " other, were his common topicks. He went over these " in a very graceful manner: but so often and copiously

" that

"that all those who had been long accustomed to them "grew weary of them; And when he entered on those "stories they usually withdrew: So that he often began "them in a full audience, and before he had done, there "were not above four or five left about him; which drew "a severe jest from *William* Earl of *Rochester*. He said, "*He wondered to see a man have so good a memory, as to* "*repeat the same story without losing the least circumstance* "*and yet not remember that he had told it to the same per-* "*sons the very day before.* This made him fond of stran- "gers; for they hearkened to all his often-repeated stories, "and went away as in a rapture, at such an uncommon "condescension in a King.

"His person and temper, his vices as well as his for- "tune resemble the character that we have given us of "*Tiberius*, so much, that it were easy to draw a parallel "between them. *Tiberius*'s banishment, and his coming "afterwards to reign, makes the comparison in that re- "spect come pretty near. His hating of business, and "his love of pleasures, his raising of Favorites and trusting "them entirely, and his pulling them down and hating "them excessively; his art of covering deep designs, par- "ticularly of revenge, with an appearance of softness, "brings them so near a likeness, that I did not wonder "much to observe the resemblance of their face and person. "At *Rome* I saw one of the last statues made for *Tiberius* "after he had lost his teeth. But being the alteration "which that made, it was so like King *Charles* that *Prince* "*Borghese* and *Signior Dominico* to whom it belonged, did "agree with me in thinking that it looked like a statue "made for him.

"Few things ever went near his heart; the Duke of "*Glocester*'s death seemed to touch him much. But those "who knew him best thought it was, because he had lost "him, by whom only he could have balanced the surviv- "ing Brother, whom he hated, and yet embroiled all his "affairs to preserve the succession to him.

"His ill conduct in the first *Dutch* war, and those ter- "rible calamities of the Plague and Fire of *London*, with "that loss and reproach which he suffered by the insult at "*Chatham*, made all people conclude, these was a curse "upon his Government. His throwing the publick hatred "at that time upon Lord *Clarendon*, was both unjust and "ungrateful. And when his People had brought him "out of all his difficulties, upon his entering into the Tri-

"ple-

"ple alliance, his selling that to *France*, and his entring "on the second *Dutch* war with as little colour, as he had "for the first; his beginning it with the attempt on the "*Dutch Smyrna* fleet; the shutting up the *Exchequer*; "and his declaration for toleration, which was a step for "the introduction of Popery; makes such a chain of black "actions flowing from blacker designs, that it amazed "those who had known all this, to see with what impu-"dent strains of flattery addresses were penned during his "life, and yet more grossly after his death. His contri-"buting so much to the raising the greatness of *France*, "chiefly at sea, was such an error, that it could not flow "from want of thought or of true sense. *Rouvigny* told "me, he desired that all the methods the *French* took in "the increase and conduct of their naval force might be "sent him. And, he said, he seemed to study them with "concern and zeal. He shewed what errors they com-"mitted, and how they ought to be corrected; as if he "had been a Viceroy to *France*, rather than a King that "ought to have watched over, and prevented the progress "they made, as the greatest of all the mischiefs that could "happen to him or to his people. They that judged the "most favourable of this, thought it was done out of re-"venge to the *Dutch*, that, with the assistance of so great "a fleet as *France* could join to his own, he might be able "to destroy them. But others put a worse construction "on it; and thought, that seeing he could not quite master "or deceive his subjects by his own strength, and manage-"ment, he was willing to help forward the greatness of "the *French* at sea, that by their assistance he might more "certainly subdue his own people; according to what was "generally believed to have fallen from Lord *Clifford*, "*That if the King must be in a dependence, it was better "to pay it to a great and generous King, than to five hun-"dred of his own insolent Subjects.* No part of his cha-"racter looked wickeder as well as meaner, than that he, "all the while that he was professing to be of the Church "of *England*, expressing both zeal and affection to it, "was yet secretly reconciled to the Church of *Rome*. "Thus mocking God, and deceiving the world with so "gross a prevarication. And his not having the honesty "or courage to own it at the last: His not shedding any "sign of the least remorse for his ill led life, or any ten-"derness either for his subjects in general, or for the Queen "and his servants: And his recommending only his Mis-

"treſſes and their children to his brother's care, would "have been a ſtrange concluſion to any other life, but "was well enough ſuited to all the other parts of his.

"The two papers found in his ſtrong box concerning "Religion, and afterwards publiſhed by his brother, looked "like ſtudy and reaſoning. *Tenniſon* told me, he ſaw the "original, in *Pepy's* hand, to whom King *James* truſted "them for ſome time. They were interlined in ſeveral "places. And the interlinings ſeemed to be writ in a "hand different from that in which the papers were writ. "But he was not ſo well acquainted with the King's hand, "as to make any judgment in the matter, whether they "were writ by him or not. All that knew him when "they read them, did, without any ſort of doubting, con- "clude, that he never compoſed them; For he never read "the ſcriptures, nor laid things together, further than to "turn them to a jeſt, or for ſome lively expreſſion. Theſe "papers were probably writ either by Lord *Briſtol*, or by "Lord *Aubigny*, who knew the ſecret of his Religion, "and gave him thoſe papers, as abſtracts of ſome diſcourſes "they had with him on thoſe heads, to keep him fixed to "them. And it is very probable, that they, apprehend- "ing their danger, if any ſuch papers had been found a- "bout him writ in their hand, might prevail with him to "copy them out himſelf, though his lazineſs that way "made it certainly no eaſy thing to bring him to give "himſelf ſo much trouble. He had talked over a great "part of them to myſelf: So that as ſoon as I ſaw them, "I remembered his expreſſions, and perceived that he had "made himſelf maſter of the argument, as far as thoſe "papers could carry him. But the publiſhing them ſhewed "a want of judgment, or of regard to his memory in thoſe "who did it: For the greateſt kindneſs that could be ſhewn "to his memory, would have been, to let both his papers "and himſelf be forgotten."

After ſeeing in this character, all that can be ſaid to the diſadvantage of *Charles* II. the Reader doubtleſs will not be diſpleaſed to behold the picture of the ſame Prince, drawn a little differently by a very able hand, I mean [*John Sheffield*] Earl of *Mulgrave*, who was no enemy to the King, or the Royal Family. He has laboured this deſcription with all poſſible care. I omit a ſhort introduction concerning the Author, to come at once to the character of the King.

Buckingham's Works. T. II. p. 75.

"As to the King's Religion, it was more Deiſm than "Popery; which he owed more to the liveliness of his

"parts,

"parts, and carelessness of his temper, than either to reading, or much consideration; for his quickness of apprehension, at first view, could discern through the several cheats of pious pretences; and his natural lazyness confirmed him in an equal mistrust of them all, for fear he should be troubled with examining which Religion was best. If in his early travels, and late administration, he seemed a little biassed to one sort of Religion; the first is only to be imputed to a certain easiness of temper, and a complaisance for that company he then was forced to keep; and the last was no more than his being tired, (which he soon was in any difficulty,) with those bold oppositions in Parliament, which made him almost throw himself into the arms of a *Roman* Catholick party, so remarkable in *England* for their loyalty, who embraced him gladly, and lulled him asleep with those enchanting songs of absolute Sovereignty, which the best and wisest of Princes are often unable to resist. And though he engaged himself on that side more fully, at a time when it is in vain, and too late to dissemble, we ought less to wonder at it, than to consider that our very judgments are apt to grow in time as partial as our affections: And thus, by accident only, he became of their opinion in his weakness, who had so much endeavoured always to contribute to his power. He loved ease and quiet; to which his unnecessary wars are so far from being a contradiction, that they are rather a proof of it, since they were made chiefly to comply with those persons, whose dissatisfaction would have proved more uneasy to one of his humour, than all that distant noise of cannon, which he would often listen to with a great deal of tranquillity. Besides, the great and almost only pleasure of mind he appeared addicted to, was shipping and sea-affairs; which seemed to be so much his talent both for knowledge as well as inclination, that a war of that kind was rather an entertainment, than any disturbance to his thoughts. If he did not go himself at the head of so magnificent a fleet, it is only to be imputed to that eagerness of military glory in his brother; who, under the shew of a decent care for preserving the royal person from danger, engrossed all that sort of honour to himself, with as much jealousy of any other's interposing in it, as a King of another temper would have had of his, though without reason——It is certain, no Prince was ever more fitted by nature for his Country's interest, than he was in

all

" all his maritime inclinations; which might have proved " of ſufficient advantage to this nation, if he had been as " careful in depreſſing all ſuch improvements in *France*, " as of advancing and encouraging our own: But it ſeems " he wanted jealouſy in all his inclinations, which leads us " to conſider him in his pleaſures: Where he was rather " abandoned than luxurious; and like our female Liber- " tines, apter to be debauched for the ſatisfaction of others, " than to ſeek with choice, where moſt to pleaſe himſelf. " I am of opinion alſo, that in his latter time, there was as " much of lazineſs as of love, in all thoſe hours he paſſed " among his miſtreſſes; who, after all, ſerved only to fill " up his Seraglio, while a bewitching kind of pleaſure, " called *Raillery*, and talking without any conſtraint, was " the true Sultana Queen he delighted in.

" He was ſurely inclined to juſtice; for nothing elſe " would have retained him ſo faſt to the ſucceſſion of a " brother, againſt a ſon he was ſo fond of, and the hu- " mour of a party which he ſo much feared. I am wil- " ling alſo to impute to his juſtice, whatever ſeems in ſome " meaſure to contradict the general opinion of his cle- " mency; as his ſuffering always the rigour of the law " to proceed, not only againſt all Highwaymen, but alſo " ſeveral others, in whoſe caſes the Lawyers (according " to their wonted cuſtom) had uſed ſometimes a great " deal of hardſhip and ſeverity. His underſtanding was " quick and lively in little things, and ſometimes would " ſoar high enough in great ones, but unable to keep it " up with any long attention or application. Witty in " all ſorts of converſation; and telling a ſtory ſo well, that " not out of flattery, but for the pleaſure of hearing it, " we uſed to feign ignorance of what he had repeated to " us ten times before, as a good comedy will bear the be- " ing ſeen often. Of a wonderful mixture; loſing all his " time, and all of ſuch, ſtaking his whole heart on the fair " ſex, yet neither angry with rivals, nor in the leaſt nice " as to their being beloved; and while he ſacrificed all " things to his Miſtreſſes, he would uſe to grudge and be " uneaſy at their loſing a little of it again at play, though " never ſo neceſſary for their diverſion: Nor would he " venture five pounds at *Tennis* to thoſe ſervants, who " might obtain as many thouſands, either before he came " thither, or as ſoon as he left off. Not falſe to his word, " but full of diſſimulation, and very adroit at it, yet no " man eaſier to be impoſed on; for his great dexterity was

" in

" in cozening himself, by gaining a little one way, while " it cost him ten times as much another; and by caressing " those persons most, who had deluded him the oftenest; " and yet the quickest in the world at spying such a ridi- " cule in another. Familiar, easy, and good-natured; " but for great offences severe and inflexible: Also in one " week's absence, quite forgetting those servants, to whose " faces he could hardly deny any thing. In the midst of " all his remissness, so industrious and indefatigable on some " particular occasions, that no man would either toil longer, " or be able to manage it better.

" He was so liberal as to ruin his affairs by it; for " want in a King of *England*, turns things just upside " down, and exposes a Prince to his people's mercy. It " did yet worse in him, for it forced him also to depend " on his great neighbour of *France*; who played the bro- " ther with him sufficiently in all those times of extremity. " Yet this profuseness of his did not so much proceed from " his over-valuing those he favoured, as from his under- " valuing any sums of money which he did not see; " though he found his error in this, but I confess a little " of the latest. He had so natural an aversion to all for- " mality, that with as much wit as most Kings ever had, " and with as majestick a mein, yet he could not on pre- " meditation act the part of a King for a moment, either " at Parliament, or at Council, either in words or gesture; " which carried him into the other extreme, more incon- " venient of the two, of letting all distinction and cere- " mony fall to the ground, as useless and foppish. His " temper both of body and mind, was admirable, which " made him an easy generous lover, a civil obliging hus- " band, a friendly brother, an indulgent father, and a " good-natured master. If he had been as solicitous about " improving the faculties of his mind, as he was in the " management of his bodily health; though, alas! the " one proved unable to make his life long, the other had " not failed to have made it famous. He was an illustrious " exception to all the common rules of Physiognomy: For, " with a most *Saturnine* harsh sort of countenance, he " was both of a merry and merciful disposition; and in the " last thirty years of his life, as fortunate, as those of his " Father had been dismal and tumultuous.

" If his death has been by some suspected of being " untimely, it may be partly imputed to his extreme healthy " constitution, which made the world so much surprized

" at his dying before threescore, as if nothing but an ill " accident could have killed him. I would not say any " thing on so sad a subject, if I did not think silence itself " would in such a case signify too much; and therefore, " as an impartial writer, I am obliged to observe, that the " most knowing, and most discerning of his Physicians " [Doctor *Short*] did not only believe him poisoned, but " thought himself so too not long after, for having decla- " red his opinion a little too boldly. But here I must needs " take notice of an unusual piece of justice, which yet all " the world has almost unanimously agreed in; I mean, " in not suspecting his successor of the least connivance in " so horrid a villany; and perhaps there was never a more " remarkable instance of the wonderful power of truth and " innocence: For it is next to a miracle, that so unfor- " tunate a Prince, in the midst of all those disadvantages " he lies under, should be yet cleared of this, even by his " greatest enemies; notwithstanding all those circumstances " that used to give a suspicion, and that extreme malice " which has of late attended him in all his other actions."

After giving these different characters of King *Charles* II, drawn by such able hands, (continues *Rapin*) I think myself obliged to make a sort of parallel, in order to assist the reader in the discovery of the truth. Dr. *Burnet* Bishop of *Salisbury* was a *Scotchman*. He had been educated amongst the Episcopalians, but however, was always accused of preserving a tincture of Presbyterianism, the Religion of his Country, when free to pursue its inclination. He is likewise accused of having been entirely in the Whig-party. In short, he had no reason to be pleased with either *Charles* II, or *James* II, and therefore we must read with caution, whatever he says, not reconcileable with the known actions of *Charles* II, or expresly contradicted by others.

It is not difficult to discover, that *Burnet*'s picture of *Charles* II. is very much charged. The painter has strongly drawn all the lines which he thought might beget a likeness between the picture and the original, without any regard to the reputation of this Prince. It is even seen, that possibly he spoke with prejudice, and by this prejudice was led to credit too lightly what he had received upon hearsay to the King's disadvantage. For instance, what he affirms, that *Charles* after the battle of *Worcester*, showed a temper so careless, that he was then diverting himself with trifles in an unconcerned manner, as if he had sustained

no loſs, and been in no danger at all, appears to me a little aggravated. It is not even probable, that the Biſhop could be informed of the King's actions at that time, by eye-witneſſes. When he ſays, the King had great vices, but ſcarce any virtues to correct them, this plainly appears to be the language of paſſion and prejudice. When he ſays again, the King never forgave any thing that was done againſt himſelf, this muſt be aggravated. For if he was mercileſs to the Lord *Ruſſel*, Colonel *Sidney*, Sir *Thomas Armſtrong*, and ſome others, it cannot from thence be inferred, that he never forgave. Such expreſſions excepted, which diſcover ſome paſſion in the author, the reſt of *Charles* II's character is true in general. This I believe, becauſe I find it agreeable to the hiſtory of his reign, and becauſe the Earl of *Mulgrave* has in his picture drawn the ſame lines with Dr. *Burnet*, to expreſs his likeneſs. All the difference between theſe two authors, is, that in the Biſhop's picture, the principal lines are ſtrongly expreſſed, and much ſoftened in the Earl's.

The Earl of *Mulgrave*, afterwards Marquiſs of *Normandy*, and then Duke of *Buckinghamſhire*, was intirely in the Tory-party, and if common report may be credited, his Religion, like that of *Charles* II, was deiſm. In his deſcription of this Prince, he denies not the general ſuſpicion of his being poiſoned. *Burnet* ſays alſo the ſame thing. The Earl inſiſts that the Duke of *York* was not ſuſpected of the leaſt connivance at ſo horrid a villany. The ſame is likewiſe to be found in *Burnet*. If the laſt ſays, King *Charles* was a Papiſt, this is not denied by the Earl. He only imputes it to two cauſes, firſt, to a complaiſance for the company he was forced to keep in his exile; and ſecondly, to the oppoſition he met with in Parliament, which threw him into the arms of the Papiſts. If the firſt of theſe cauſes be true, the ſecond cannot be ſo, ſince the King was not twice a Papiſt. Beſides, the oppoſitions in Parliament were partly owing to a belief, that he deſigned to introduce Popery.

Burnet ſays, *Charles* was incapable of any application. The Earl ſays the ſame. The Biſhop ſays the King was for rendering himſelf abſolute. If the Earl ſays it not in expreſs terms, he ſufficiently intimates it, by ſaying, *That the* Roman Catholick *party lulled him aſleep with the enchanting ſongs of Sovereignty and Prerogative.* *Burnet* ſays, the King was apt to forgive all crimes, but never forgave any thing that was done againſt himſelf. The Earl praiſes

his clemency, and ſays, *he was eaſy and good-natured in triflet, but in great affairs ſevere and inflexible.* This may be the Biſhop's meaning expreſſed in other words.

The ſtories which the King loved to talk over, are in both characters. The only difference is, that *Burnet* ſays the company grew weary of them, and the Earl ſays, the hearers were pleaſed with the repetition. But the raillery of the Earl of *Rocheſter* turns the balance for the Biſhop.

Burnet ſays, *Charles* engaged in two wars againſt *Holland*, without any colour, and the Earl calls theſe wars unneceſſary.

Burnet ſays, he contributed to the raiſing of the greatneſs of *France* at ſea, and the Earl ſays, he was not ſufficiently careful to depreſs the maritime improvements of *France*, and that here he wanted jealouſy. Is not this much the ſame thing?

In ſhort, let theſe two pictures be compared with all poſſible exactneſs, and they will both be found very like; but that the two painters had different views, and purſued different methods. The one propoſed to expreſs ſtrongly the lines which might moſt contribute to a reſemblance with the original, without regarding the beauty of the picture in itſelf. The other, without omitting the ſame lines, which could not be done and the likeneſs preſerved, has taken all poſſible care to ſoften them, in order to hide, as much as lay in his power, the deformities of the original.

In a word, the one has given us an ugly, and the other a beautiful likeneſs. This doubtleſs, induced the Earl to ſuppreſs ſeveral ſtrokes of his pencil, which might have improved the reſemblance, but would have beeen prejudicial to the end he propoſed in his work.

King *Charles* II, left no iſſue by his Queen, *Donna Catharina*, daughter of *John* IV. King of *Portugal*. But by his ſeveral Miſtreſſes, he had the following children.

1. By Mrs. *Lucy Walters*, daughter of *Richard Walters*, Eſq; *James* Duke of *Monmouth*, born at *Rotterdam*, *April* 9, 1649. beheaded on *Tower-Hill*, *July* 15, 1685. He married in 1665, *Anne Scot*, daughter of *Francis*, Earl of *Buckleugh* in *Scotland*.

2. By Mrs. *Elizabeth Killigrew*, Viſcounteſs *Shannon*, daughter of Sir *William Killigrew*, *Charlot-Jemia-Henrietta-Maria-Fitz-roy*, who died in 1684. Her husbands were, *James Howard*, and Sir *William Paſton* Earl of *Yarmouth*.

3. By

3. By Mrs. *Catharine Peg*, daughter of *Thomas Peg* Eſq; *Charles Fitz-Charles* Earl of *Plymouth*, commonly called *Don Carlos*, born 1658, killed *October* 17, 1680, at *Tangier*. He married *Bridget*, daughter of Sir *Thomas Oſborne* Duke of *Leeds*, who married afterwards Dr. *Biſs* Biſhop of *Hereford*.

4. By Mrs. *Barbara Villiers*, heireſs of *William* Viſcount *Grandiſon* in *Ireland*, and wife of *Roger Palmer* Earl of *Caſtlemain*, created Lady *Nonſuch*, Counteſs of *Southampton*, and Ducheſs of *Cleveland*, who died in 1709; he had three ſons, and three daughters. 1. *Charles Fitz-Roy*, born 1662, created 1675, Duke of *Southampton*, and after his mother's death Duke of *Cleveland*. His wives were, *Mary* daughter of Sir *Henry Wood*, and *Alice* daughter of Sir *William Poulteney*. 2. *Henry Fitz-Roy* Duke of *Grafton*, born *September* 20, 1663, and killed *October* 9, 1690, at the ſiege of *Cork* in *Ireland*. His wife was *Iſabella* daughter of *Henry Bennet* Earl of *Arlington*, married after his death to Sir *Thomas Hanmer* Bart. 3. *George Fitz-Roy* Duke of *Northumberland*, born *December* 28, 1665, who died *July* 8, 1716, without children. 4. *Anne Fitz-Roy* born *February* 29, 1661, married in 1674, to *Thomas Lennard* Earl of *Suſſex*. 5. *Charlotte Fitz-Roy*, born *September* 5, 1664, married *February* 20, 1676-7, to Sir *Edward Henry Lee* Earl of *Lichfield*. 6. *Barbara* born *July* 16, 1672, who became a Nun at *Pontoiſe* in *France*.

5. By Mrs. *Eleanor Gwin*, 1. *Charles Beauclerk* Duke of *St. Albans*, born *May* 8, 1670, who married *Diana Vere*, eldeſt daughter and coheireſs of *Aubrey de Vere*, the 20th and laſt Earl of *Oxford*. 2. *James Beauclerk* born *December* 25, 1671. He died in 1680 in *France*.

6. By *Louiſe de Querouaille* Ducheſs of *Portſmouth*, *Charles Lenox* Duke of *Richmond* and *Lenox*, born *July* 29, 1672, who died *May* 27, 1723. His wife was *Anne*, eldeſt daughter of *Francis* Lord *Brudenel*.

7. By Mrs. *Mary Davis*, *Mary Tuder*, born *October* 16, 1673, married in *Auguſt* 1687, to *Francis* Lord *Ratcliff* Earl of *Derwentwater*.

An Account of the MONEY *coined in this Reign.*

By an Indenture in the 12th of *Charles* II. Gold and Silver monies were coined into the ſame pieces, and at the ſame rates, as in the 2d of *Charles* I. See above, p. 307.

By another Indenture in the twenty-ſecond of King

Charles II, Crown Gold, twenty-two carats fine, and two carats allay, was coined into 44 *l.* 10 *s.* by tale; namely, into pieces to go for Ten Shillings, Twenty Shillings, Forty Shillings, or Five Pounds a-piece; and a pound of silver of the old standard into three Pounds two Shillings by tale; namely, into Crowns, Half-Crowns, Shillings, Half-shillings, Groats, Half-groats, Half-sixpences, Half-groats, and Pence.

The money of King *Charles* II. was of three sorts: The hammered, which was the only current Coin, till 1663: The milled upon the side: And that with the graining or letters upon the edge———The first money that bore the name of this King, was coined at *Pontfract-Castle*; round which is inscribed CAROLVS. SECUNDUS. 1648. on

each side of the middle Tower is P C. reverse, a Crown, with C R. DUM. SPIRO. SPERO. A Crown hath CAROLVS II. D. G. MAG. B. F. ET. H. REX. In the field, HANC. DEVS. DEDIT. 1648. reverse, P C. Above the Castle, POST. MORTEM. PATRIS. PRO. FILIO.

FILIO. Upon the hammered money in general, he is repreſented with the Half-Face, Crown and Band, &c. CAROLVS. II. D. G. MAG. BRIT. FR. ET. HIB. REX. Reverſe, the arms in one ſhield, not crowned, with his Father's motto, CHRISTO. AUSPICE. REGNO.——— The Gold Coins have, on one ſide, the King's head laureat, with a youthful countenance. Reverſe, the arms in a ſingle ſhield, crowned between C. R. FLORENT CONCORDIA REGNA. Another has XX behind the head. On the money called *Cutters*, the legend goes quite round the head; which, it does not in a very neat cutter, called by ſome the un-milled Guinea, the King's head extending to the rim, without the initial figures behind the head, and the titles abbreviated to CAR. D. G. M. BR. FR. ET. HI. REX. Reverſe as the former 1662. The Five Pounds, Three Pounds, and Forty Shilling pieces, have the King's Head laureat, CAROLUS II. DEI. GRATIA. Reverſe, the arms of the four Kingdoms, ſingle in four ſeparate ſhields crowned, a ſcepter in each of the vacancies, with a Roſe, Fleur-de-lis, Thiſtle, and Harp at the points, and the C's interlinked in the center. MAG. BR. FRA. ET. HIB. REX. 1673. Upon the rim, DECUS. ET. TVTAMEN. ANNO. REGNI. VICESIMO. QUINTO. This King was the firſt that coined GUINEAS and Half-Guineas, which he did in his 22d year. The Guineas were ordered to go at twenty ſhillings, the Half-guineas at ten ſhillings. As they are in every body's hands, there is no need of giving a further deſcription of them. Of the hammered Silver-money, the Shilling is very fair, and has a Crown for the Mint-mark. Of theſe there are two ſorts, one with XII. behind the head, which the other wants; as alſo the inner circle (*Fig.* 1.) The Six-pences are like the Shillings, but have VI. inſtead of XII. The leſſer pieces from the Groat to the Penny, are marked with the initial figures, IIII. III. II. I. behind the head; except upon ſome of the Two-pences, which want the figures. This hammered money continued current till 1663, when the milled money came to be in uſe. Of this there is a very fair Crown, having a Roſe under the King's head laureat, from thence called the Roſe-Crown, CAROLVS II. DEI GRA. Reverſe, MAG. BR. FRA. ET. HIB. REX. 1662. The arms of the four Kingdoms in four ſhields, *France* and *England* quartered together in the firſt and fourth: Each ſhield is crowned; between them are C's interlinked, and *St. George*'s croſs radiant in the center; upon the rim, DECVS. ET. TUTAMEN (*Fig.* 2.) The

Ann. C.

6 *Mar.* *John Freſcheville*, Baron *Freſcheville*, of *Staualy*.

14 *Mar.* *Henry Bennet*, Baron *Arlington*.

1672. 22 *April.* —— Viſcount *Thetford*, and Earl of *Arlington*.

16 *Mar.* *William Craven*, Baron *Craven*, of *Hampſted*, Marſhal, Viſcount *Craven* of *Uffington*, and Earl of *Craven*.

17 *Mar.* *Charles Berkley* (Viſcount *Fitz-Harding* in *Ireland*) Baron *Berkeley* of *Langport*.

1624-5. 26 *Mar.* —— Earl of *Falmouth*.

18 *Mar.* *Robert Bruce* (Baron *Bruce* of *Wharton*) —— Baron *Bruce*, of *Skelton*; Viſcount *Bruce*, of *Ampthill*; and Earl of *Ailesbury*.

20 *Mar.* 1664. *Richard Boyle*, Earl of *Burlington*.

23 *May.* *Richard Arundel*, Baron *Arundel* of *Trerice*.
Henry Steuart, Duke of *Kendal*.

1664-5. 16 *Mar.* *William Cavendiſh* (Earl of *Newcaſtle*) —— Earl of *Ogle*, and Duke of *Newcaſtle*.

1666. 14 *Sept.* *Thomas Butler* (Earl of *Oſſory*, and Earl of *Brecknock*) —— Baron *Butler*, of *Moor-Park*, by ſumm.

1667. *Edgar Steuart*, Duke of *Cambridge*.

1667-8. 13 *Jan.* *George Saville*, Baron *Saville*, of *Eyland*, Viſcount *Halifax*.

1679. 16 *July.* —— Earl of *Halifax*.

1682. 17 *Aug.* —— Marquiſs of *Halifax*.

1669. 27 *Mar.* *Henry Howard*, Baron *Howard*, of *Caſtle-Riſing*.

1672. 19 *Oct.* —— Earl of *Norwich*.

1670. 3 *Aug.* *Barbara Villiers*, Baroneſs *Nonefuch*, Counteſs of *Southampton*, and Ducheſs of *Cleveland*. She was wife to *Roger Palmer*, Earl of *Caſtlemain*.

1672. 22 *April.* *Thomas Clifford*, Baron *Clifford* of *Chudleigh*.

16 *Aug.* *Henry Fitz-Roy*, Baron *Sudbury*, Viſcount *Ipſwich*, Earl of *Euſton*.

1675. 11 *Sept.* —— Duke of *Grafton*.

1672-3. 19 *Jan.* *Lewis de Duras*, Baron *Duras*, of *Holdenby*.

—— Viſcount

Ann. C.

——— Viſcount *Sondes*, and Earl of *Feverſham*. 1677. 16 *April.*

Richard Butler (Earl of *Arran* in *Ireland*) Baron *Butler* of *Weſton*. 1673. 7 *Aug.*

Thomas Oſborne, Baron *Oſborne*, of *Kiveton*, and Viſcount *Latimer*. 25 *Aug.*

——— Earl of *Danby*. 1674. 27 *June.*

Louiſe de Querouaille, Baroneſs *Peterſfield*, Counteſs of *Fareham*, and Ducheſs of *Portſmouth*. 19 *Aug.*

William Paſton, Baron *Paſton*, and Viſcount *Yarmouth*.

Heneage Finch, Baron *Finch*, of *Daventre*. 1673-4. 10 *Jan.*

——— Earl of *Nottingham*. 1681. 12 *May.*

Anne Bayning, Viſcounteſs *Bayning*, of *Foxley*. 17 *Mar.*

Suſan Hermine, Baroneſs *Bellaſiſe*, of *Oſgodby*. 25 *Mar.*

William Herbert, Baron *Powis* ——— Earl of *Powis*. 4 *April.*

Edward-Henry Lee, Baron *Lee*, of *Ditchley*, or *Spelsbury*, Viſcount *Quarendon*, and Earl of *Lichfield*. 16 *May.* 5 *June.*

John Maitland (Duke of *Lauderdale* in *Scotland*) Baron *Peterſham*, and Earl of *Guilford*. 25 *June.*

George Fitz-Roy, Baron *Pontefract*, Viſcount *Falmouth*, and Earl of *Northumberland*. 1 *Oct.*

——— Duke of *Northumberland*. 1683. 6 *April.*

Thomas Lennard, Earl of *Suſſex*. 5 *Oct.*

Francis Newport, Viſcount *Newport* of *Bradford*. 1674-5. 11 *Mar.*

Charles Sackville, ſon and heir to the Earl of *Dorſet*,——— Earl of *Middleſex*. 1675. 4 *April.*

——— Baron *Cranfield*. 7 *April.*

Charles Fitz-Charles, Baron *Dartmouth*, Viſcount *Totneſs*, and Earl of *Plymouth*. 29 *July.*

Charles Lenos, Baron *Setrington*, Earl of *March*, and Duke of *Richmond*. 9 *Auguſt.*

Charles Fitz-Roy, Baron *Newbury*, Earl of *Chicheſter*, and Duke of *Southampton*. 10 *Sept.*

George Sondes, Baron *Sondes*, of *Throughley*, Viſcount *Sondes* of *Lees-Court*, and Earl of *Feverſham*. Entailed on *Lewis de Duras*. 1676. 8 *April.*

Charles Beauclair, Baron *Hedington*, and Earl of *Burford*. 29 *Dec.*

——— Duke of *St. Albans*. 1683. 10 *Jan.*

Charles

Ann. C.

1677. *Charles Steuart*, Duke of *Cambridge*.

7 *Nov.* 1679. *John* Baron *Roberts*, —— Viſcount *Bodmin*, and Earl of *Radnor*.

23 *July.* *Charles* Baron *Gerard*, Viſcount *Brandon*, and Earl of *Macclesfield*.

31 *July.* *George Berkley*, Viſcount *Durſley*, and Earl of *Berkley*.

11 *Sept.* *Sarah* [*Monſon*] (relict of Sir *Vincent Corbet*, Baronet)

23 *Oct.* Viſcounteſs *Corbet* of *Lynchdale*.

Edward Viſcount *Conway* —— Earl of *Conway*.

3 *Dec.* 1680. *Elizabeth Bayning* (widow of *Francis Lennard*, Baron *Dacres* of the South) Counteſs of *Sheppey*.

6 *Sept.* 1680-81. *Edward Noel* (ſon, and heir apparent, to *Baptiſt* Viſcount *Campden*) Baron *Noel*, and Baron *Wriothesley*, of *Tichfield*.

3 *Feb.* 1682. —— Earl of *Gainsborough*.

1 *Dec.* 1681. *Laurence Hyde*, Baron *Hyde*, of *Wotton-Baſſet*, and Viſ-

23 *April.* count *Hyde*, of *Kenelworth*.

1682. —— Earl of *Rocheſter*.

29 *Nov.* 31 *May.* *Richard Lumley* (Viſcount *Lumley*, of *Waterford* in *Ireland*) —— Baron *Lumley*.

19 *Oct.* *George Carteret*, Baron *Carteret*, of *Hawnes*.

1682. *Charles Bennet*, Baron *Oſſulſton*.

24 *Nov.* 30 *Nov.* *James Bertie* (Baron *Norris* of *Rycot*, by deſcent and ſummons) —— Earl of *Abingdon*.

2 *Dec.* *Henry Somerſet*, Marquiſs of *Worceſter*——Duke of *Beaufort*.

William Legge, Baron of *Dartmouth*.

5 *Dec.* *Conyers Darcy*, Baron *Conyers*, &c. —— Earl of *Holdernesſ*.

——*Alington* (Baron *Alington* of *Killard* in *Ireland*) Baron *Alington*, of *Wymonley*.

11 *Dec.* *Thomas Thynne*, Baron *Thynne*, of *Warminſter*, and Viſcount *Weymouth*.

17 *Dec.* *Chriſtopher* Baron *Hatton* —— Viſcount *Hatton*, of *Gretton*.

1683. *Francis North*, Baron *Guilford*.

27 *Sept.*

1683-4. *Ralph Stawell*, Baron *Stawell*, of *Somerton*.

15 *Jan.*

Sidney

Ann. C. 1684. 8 Sept.

Sidney Godolphin, Baron *Godolphin*, of *Rialton*.

Knights of the Garter elected in the Reign of King CHARLES II.

Maurice, Count *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, and Duke of *Bavaria*, third ſon to the King of *Bohemia*.

James Butler, Marquiſs of *Ormond*, afterwards Earl of *Brecknock*, and Duke of *Ormond*, in *Ireland* and *England*.

Edward, Count *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, and Duke of *Bavaria*, fifth ſon to the King of *Bohemia*.

George Villiers, Duke of *Buckingham*.

William-Hamilton Douglas, Duke of *Hamilton*.

Thomas Wriotheſley, Earl of *Southampton*.

William Cavendiſh, Marquiſs of *Newcaſtle*, afterwards Duke of *Newcaſtle*.

James Graham, Marquiſs of *Montroſe*.

James Stanley, Earl of *Derby*.

George Digby, Earl of *Briſtol*.

Henry Steuart, Duke of *Glouceſter*, third ſon to King *Charles* I.

Henry-Charles de la Tremouille, Prince *de Tarente*.

William de Naſſau, Prince of *Orange*, afterwards King of *England*, of that name the Third.

Frederic-William, Prince Elector of the Empire, Marquiſs of *Brandenburgh*.

John-Gaſpar Ferdinand de Marchin, Count *de Graville*.

Sir *George Monk*, Knight. afterwards Duke of *Albemarle*.

Sir *Edward Mountague*, Knight, afterwards Earl of *Sandwich*.

William Seymour, Marquiſs of *Hertford*, afterwards Duke of *Somerſet*.

Aubrey de Vere, Earl of *Oxford*.

Charles Steuart, Duke of *Richmond* and *Lenox*.

Montague Bertie, Earl of *Lindſey*.

Edward Mountague, Earl of *Mancheſter*.

William Wentworth, Earl of *Strafford*.

Chriſtian, Prince of *Denmark*, afterwards King of *Denmark*.

James Scot, Duke of *Monmouth* and *Buccleugh*.

James Steuart, Duke of *Cambridge*, Son of *James*, Duke of *York*.

Charles IX, King of *Sweden*, *Goths*, and *Vandals*.

John

John George II, Duke of *Saxony*, *Juliers*, *Cleves*, and *Mentz*, Prince Elector of the Empire.

Chriſtopher Monk, Duke of *Albemarle*.

John Maitland, Duke of *Lauderdale*.

Henry Somerſet, Marquiſs of *Worceſter*, afterwards Duke of *Beaufort*.

Henry Germyn, Earl of *St. Albans*.

William Ruſſel, Earl of *Bedford*, afterwards Duke of *Bedford*.

Henry Bennet, Earl of *Arlington*.

Thomas Butler, Earl of *Oſſory*.

Charles Fitzroy, Earl of *Southampton*, afterwards Duke of *Southampton* and *Cleveland*.

John, Earl of *Mulgrave*, afterwards Duke of *Buckingham* and *Normanby*.

William Cavendiſh, Duke of *Newcaſtle*.

Thomas Osborne, Earl of *Danby*, afterwards Duke of *Leeds*.

Henry Fitzroy, Duke of *Grafton*.

William Cecil, Earl of *Salisbury*.

Charles Count *Palatine* of the *Rhine*.

Charles, Duke of *Richmond* and *Lenox*.

George, Prince of *Denmark*.

Charles Seymour, Duke of *Somerſet*.

George Fitzroy, Duke of *Northumberland*.

Baronets created by King CHARLES II.

457 Richard Brown of Deptford in Kent, Eſq; Sept. 1, 1649. extinct.

458 Henry de Vic, of the Iſle of Guernſey, Eſq; —8. ex.

459 Richard Foreſter of Stokeſley in Yorkſhire, Eſq; —18. ex.

460 Richard Fanſhaw, Eſq; Sept. 3, 1650. ex.

461 William Curtius, Eſq; April 2, 1652. ex.

462 William Scot of Kew-Green in Surrey, Auguſt 9, 1653.

463 Sir Arthur Slingſby near Canterbury in Kent, October 9, 1657. ex.

464 Thomas Orby of Lincolnſhire, Eſq; —9. ex.

465 Thomas Bond, Eſq; of Wales, —9. ex.

466 Arthur Marigny Carpentier, Eſq; a Frenchman at Bruſſels, Auguſt. ex.

467 Henry Browne of Kiddington in Oxfordſhire, Eſq; July 1, 1659.

468 Jeremy

468 Jeremy Whichcot of the Inner-Temple, Eſq; in London, April 2, 1660.
469 Sir Anthony de Merces (a Frenchman) ex.
470 Sir John Evelin of Godſton in Surrey, Kt. May 29. ex.
471 Sir Gualter de Raed of the United Netherlands, Holland, — 30. ex.
472 Sir Orlando Bridgeman of Great Lever in Lancaſhire, Kt. June 7.
473 Sir Geoffrey Palmer of Carleton in Northamptonſhire, Kt. — 7.
474 Sir Heneage Finch of Raunſton in Buckinghamſhire, Kt. ſince Earl of Nottingham, — 7. *Engliſh.*
475 Sir John Langham of Cotſbrook in Northamptonſhire, Kt. and Alderman of London, — 7.
476 Humphrey Winch of Haunes in Bedfordſhire, Eſq; — 9. ex.
477 Sir Robert Abdy of Albins in Eſſex, Kt. — 9.
478 Thomas Draper of Sunninghill-Park in Berkſhire, Eſq; — 12. ex.
479 Henry Wright of Dagenham in Eſſex, Eſq; — 12. ex.
480 Jonathan Keate of the Hoo in Hertfordſhire, Eſq; — 12. ex.
481 Sir Hugh Speke of Haſilbury in Wiltſhire, Kt.—12. ex.
482 Nicholas Gould of the City of London, Eſq; —13. ex.
483 Sir Thomas Adams, Kt. and Alderman of London, — 13.
484 Richard Atkins of Clapham in Surrey, Eſq; — 13.
485 Thomas Allen of the City of London, Eſq; —14. ex.
486 Henry North of Milden-Hall in Suffolk, Eſq; ex.
487 Sir William Wiſeman of Riven-Hall in Eſſex, Kt. — 15. ex.
488 Thomas Cullum of Haſtede in Suffolk, Eſq; — 8.
489 Baſil Dixwell of Broom-houſe in Kent, Eſq; — 19.
490 Thomas Darcy of St. Cleres-Hall in St Oliths in Eſſex, Eſq; — 20. ex.
491 George Grubham How of Cold Barwick in Wiltſhire, Eſq; —20
492 John Cutts of Childerley in Cambridgeſhire, Eſq; — 21. ex.
493 Solomon Swale of Swale-Hall in Yorkſhire, Eſq; June 21. 1660.
494 William Humble of the City of London, Eſq; — 21,
495 Henry Stapleton of Mytan in Yorkſhire, Eſq; — 22.
496 Gervaſe Elweys of Stoke near Clare in Suffolk, Eſq; — 22.

497 Ro-

497 Robert Cordell of Melford in Suffolk, Eſq; — 22. ex.
498 Sir John Robinſon, Kt. Lieutenant of the Tower of London, — 22.
499 Sir John Abdy of Moores in Eſſex, Kt. — 22. ex.
500 Sir Robert Hildiard of Patrington in Yorkſhire, Kt. — 25.
501 Jacob Aſtley of Hill-Morton in Warwickſhire, Eſq; — 25.
502 Sir William Bowyer of Denham in Buckinghamſhire, Kt. — 25.
503 Thomas Stanley of Alderſey in Cheſhire, Eſq; — 25.
504 John Shuckburgh of Shuckburgh in Warwickſhire, Eſq; — 26.
505 William Wray of Aſhby in Lincolnſhire, Eſq; — 27. ex.
506 Nicholas Stuart of Hartly-Mauduit in Hampſhire, Eſq; — 27.
507 George Warburton of Areley in Cheſhire, Eſq; — 27.
508 Sir Francis Holles of Winterburne St. Martin in Dorſetſhire, Kt. — 27. ex.
509 Oliver St. John of Woodford in Northamptonſhire, Eſq; Baron St. John of Bletſho. — 28. *E.*
510 Ralph De la Vall of Seyton, De la Vall in Northumberland, Eſq; — 29. ex.
511 Andrew Henley of Henley in Somerſetſhire, Eſq; — 30.
512 Thomas Ellis of Wyham in Lincolnſhire, Eſq; — 30.
513 John Covert of Slaugham in Suſſex, Eſq; July 2. ex.
514 Peter Lear of London, Gent. — 2. ex.
515 Maurice Berkley of Bruton in Somerſetſhire, Eſq; — 2. ex.
516 Henry Hudſon of Melton-Mowbray in Leiceſterſhire, Eſq; — 3. ex.
517 Thomas Herbert of Tinterne in Monmouthſhire, Eſq; — 3. ex.
518 Thomas Middleton of Chirk in Denbighſhire, Eſq; — 4. ex.
519 Verney Noell of Kirkby in Leiceſterſhire, Eſq; — 6.
520 George Buſwell of Clipſton in Northamptonſhire, Eſq; — 7. ex.
521 Robert Auſten of Bexley in Kent, Eſq; — 10.
522 Robert Hales of Beaksbourn in Kent, Eſq; — 12.
523 Sir William Boothby of Bradley-Aſh in Derbyſhire, Kt. — 13.
524 Wolſtan Dixey of Market-Boſworth in Leiceſterſhire, Eſq; — 14.
525 John Bright of Badſworth in Yorkſhire, Eſq; — 16. ex.

526 John Warner of Parham, Eſq; — 16. ex.
527 Sir Job Harby of Aldenham in Hertfordſhire, Kt. — 17. ex.
528 Samuel Morland of Southamſtede-Baneſter in Berkſhire, Eſq; — 18. ex.
529 Sir Thomas Hewyt of Piſhobury in Hertfordſhire, Kt. ſince Viſcount Hewyt, — 19. *Iriſh.* ex.
530 Edward Honywood of Lavington in Kent, Eſq; — 19.
531 Richard Browne of London, Alderman, — 22.
532 Henry Vernon of Hodnet in Shropſhire, Eſq; — 23. ex.
533 Sir John Aubrey of Llantrilhed in Glamorganſhire, Kt. — 23.
534 William Thomas of Folkington in Suſſex, Eſq; — 23. ex.
535 Thomas Sclater of Cambridge in Cambridgeſhire, Eſq; — 25. ex.
536 Henry Conway of Bolritham in Flintſhire, Eſq; — 25. ex.
537 Edward Green of Sonpford in Eſſex, Eſq; — 26. ex.
538 John Stapeley of Patcham in Suſſex, Eſq; — 28. ex.
539 Metcalf Robinſon of Newby in Yorkſhire, Eſq; — 30. ex.
540 Marmaduke Greſham of Limpsfield in Suſſex, Eſq; — 31.
541 William Dudley of Clapton in Northamptonſhire, Eſq; Auguſt 1.
542 Hugh Smithſon of Stanwick in Yorkſhire, Eſq; — 2,
543 Sir Roger Moſtyn of Moſtyn in Flintſhire, Kt. — 3.
544 William Willoughby of Wellaton in Nottinghamſhire, Eſq; — 4. ex.
545 Anthony Oldfield of Spalding in Lincolnſhire, Eſq; — 6. ex.
546 Peter Leiceſter of Tabley in Cheſhire, Eſq; — 10.
547 Sir William Wheeler of the City of Weſtminſter, Kt. — 11.
548 John Newton of Barſcote in Glouceſterſhire, Eſq; — 16.
549 Thomas Lee of Hartwell in Buckinghamſhire, Eſq; — 16.
550 Thomas Smith of Hatherton in Cheſhire, Eſq; — 16. ex.
551 Ralph Aſhton of Middleton in Lancaſhire, Eſq; — 17.
552 John Rous of Henham in Suffolk, Eſq; — 17.

553 Henry

553 Henry Maſſingbeard of Bratofts-Hall in Lincolnſhire, Eſq; — 22. ex.
554 John Hales of Coventry in Warwickſhire, Eſq; — 28.
555 Ralph Bovey of Hill-Fields in Warwickſhire, Eſq; — 30. ex.
556 John Knightley of Off-Church in Warwickſhire, Eſq; — 30. ex.
557 Sir John Drake of Aſh in Devonſhire, Kt. — 31. ex.
558 Oliver St. George of Carickermrick in Trim in Ireland, Eſq; September 5.
559 Sir John Bowyer of Kniperſley in Staffordſhire, Kt. — 11. ex.
560 Sir William Wild, Kt. Recorder of the City of London, — 13. ex.
561 Joſeph Aſh of Twittenham in Middleſex, Eſq; — 19.
562 John How of Compton in Glouceſterſhire, Eſq; Viſcount How, — 22. *I.*
563 John Swinburne of Capheaton in Northumberland, Eſq; — 26.
564 John Trott of Laverſtoke in Hampſhire, Eſq; October 12. ex.
565 Humphry Miller of Oxenheath in Kent, Eſq; — 13. ex.
566 Sir John Lewes of Ledſton in Yorkſhire, Kt. — 15. ex.
567 John Beale of Maidſton in Kent, Eſq; — 16. ex.
568 Sir Richard Franklin of Moore-Park in Hertfordſhire, Kt. — 16. ex.
569 William Ruſſel of Langhorne in Caermarthenſhire, Eſq; November 8. ex.
570 Thomas Boothby of Friday-Hill in Chingford in Eſſex, Eſq; — 9. ex.
571 William Backhouſe of London, Eſq; — 9. ex.
572 Sir John Cutler of London, Kt. — 12. ex.
573 Giles Mottet of Leige in ———— — 16. ex.
574 Henry Gifford of Burſtall in Leiceſterſhire, Eſq; — 21. ex.
575 Sir Thomas Foot of London, Kt. and Alderman, 21. ex.
576 Thomas Manwaring of Over-Peyer in Cheſhire, Eſq; — 22.
577 Thomas Bennet of Baberham in Cambridgeſhire, Eſq; — 22. ex.
578 John Wroth of Blenden-Hall in Kent, Eſq; — 29. ex.

579 George Wynne of Noſtell in Yorkſhire, Eſq; December 3.
580 Heneage Feathersſtone of Blakeſware in Hertfordſhire, Eſq; — 4.
581 Humphry Monoux of Wotton in Bedfordſhire, Eſq; — 4.
582 John Peyton of Doddington in the Iſle of Ely in Cambridgeſhire, Eſq; — 10. ex.
583 Edmond Anderſon of Broughton in Lincolnſhire, Eſq; — 11.
584 John Fagg of Wiſton in Suſſex, Eſq; — 11.
585 Matthew Herbert of Bromfield in Shropſhire, Eſq; — 18. ex.
586 Edward Ward of Bexley in Norfolk, Eſq; — 19.
587 John Keyt of Ebrington in Glouceſterſhire, Eſq; — 22.
588 William Killegrew of Arwynick in Cornwall, Eſq; — 22. ex.
589 John Buck of Humby-Grange in Lincolnſhire, Eſq; — 22.
590 William Frankland of Thirkelby in Yorkſhire, Eſq; — 24.
591 Richard Steddolph of Norbury in Surrey, Eſq; — 24. ex.
592 William Gardiner of the City of London, Eſq; — 24.
593 William Juxon of Albourn in Suſſex, Eſq; — 28.
594 John Legard of Ganton in Yorkſhire, Eſq; — 29.
595 George Marwood of Little Buſkby in Yorkſhire, Eſq; — 31.
596 John Jackſon of Hickleton in Yorkſhire, Eſq; — 31.
597 Sir Henry Pickering of Whaddon in Cambridgeſhire, Kt. January 2. ex.
598 Henry Bedingfield of Oxbrough in Norfolk, Eſq; — 2.
599 Walter Plomer of the Inner Temple, London, Eſq; — 4. ex.
600 Herbert Springet of Broyle in Suſſex, Eſq; — 8. ex.
601 William Powell, alias Hinſon, of Pengethley in Herefordſhire, Eſq; 23. ex.
602 Robert Newton of the City of London, Eſq; — 25. ex.
603 Nicholas Staughton of Staughton in Surrey, Eſq; — 29. ex.
604 William Rokeby of Skyers in Yorkſhire, Eſq; — 29. ex.
605 Walter Ernley of New-Sarum in Wiltſhire, Eſq; February 2, 1660.

606 John Huſband of Ipſley in Warwickſhire, Eſq; --- 2.
607 Thomas Morgan of Llangahock in Monmouthſhire, Eſq; --- 7.
608 Richard Lane of Tulſke in Roſcommon in Ireland, Eſq; Viſcount Laneſborough. --- 9. *I.* ex.
609 John Osborne of Chickland in Buckinghamſhire, Eſq; --- 11.
610 George Wakeman of Beckford in Glouceſterſhire, Eſq; The Patent never ſealed. --- 15.
611 Benjamin Wright of Cranham-Hall in Eſſex, Eſq; --- 15.
612 John Colleton of the City of London, Eſq; ---- 18.
613 Sir James Modyford of London, Kt. --- 18. ex.
614 Thomas Beaumont of Stoughton-Grange in Leiceſterſhire, Eſq; --- 21.
615 Edward Smith of Eſhe in the Biſhopric of Durham, Eſq; — 23.
616 John Napier, alias Sandy, in Bedfordſhire, Eſq; March 4. ex.
617 Thomas Gifford, Eſq; of Caſtle-Sordan in Meath, in Ireland. — 4. ex.
618 Thomas Clifton of Clifton in Lancaſhire, Eſq; --- 4. ex.
619 William Wilſon of Eaſtborne in Suſſex, Eſq; — 4.
620 Compton Reade of Burton in Berkſhire, Eſq; --- 4.
621 Sir Brian Broughton of Broughton in Staffordſhire, Kt. --- 10.
622 Robert Slingsby of Newcelle in Hertfordſhire, Eſq; --- 16. ex.
623 John Crofts of Stow in Suffolk, Eſq; — 16. ex.
624 Ralph Verney of Middle-Claydon in Bucks, Eſq; Viſcount Fermanaugh. —16. *I.*
625 Robert Dicer of Uphall in Hertfordſhire, Eſq; March 18. ex.
626 John Bromfield of Southwark in Surrey, Eſq; --- 20.
627 Thomas Rich of Sunning in Berkſhire, Eſq; 20.
628 Edward Smith of Edmonthorp in Leiceſter, Eſq; ---20.
629 Walter Long of Whaddon in Wiltſhire, Eſq; March 26. 1661. ex.
630 John Fettiplace of Childrey in Berkſhire, Eſq; --- 30.
631 Walter Hendley of Cuckfield in Suſſex, Eſq; April 8. ex.
632 William Parſons of Langley in Buckinghamſhire, Eſq; 9.
633 John Cambell of Woodford in Eſſex, Eſq; --- 9. ex.
634 William Morrice of Werrington in Devonſhire, Eſq; --- 20.

635 Sir

635 Sir Charles Gawdey of Crowſhall in Suffolk, Kt. --- 20. ex.
636 William Godolphin of Godolphin in Cornwall, Eſq; --- 29. ex.
637 William Caley of Brumpton in Yorkſhire, Eſq; --- 29.
638 Thomas Curlon of Water-Perry in Oxfordſhire, Eſq; --- 30.
639 Edmund Fowel of Fowel in Devonſhire, Eſq; May 1. ex.
640 John Cropley of Clerkenwell in Middleſex, Eſq; --- 7. ex.
641 William Smith of Redcliff in Buckinghamſhire, Eſq; --- 10.
642 George Cooke of Wheatley in Yorkſhire, Eſq; --- 10.
643 Charles Lloyd of Garth in Montgomeryſhire, Eſq; --- 10.
644 Nathaniel Powel of Ewhurſt in Eſſex, Eſq; --- 10.
645 Denney Aſhburnham of Bromhall in Suſſex, Eſq; --- 15.
646 Hugh Smith of Long-Aſhton in Somerſetſhire, Eſq; --- 16.
647 Robert Jenkinſon of Walcott in Oxfordſhire, Eſq; --- 18.
648 William Glynn of Biſſiſter in Oxfordſhire, Eſq; --- 20.
649 John Charnock of Holcot in Bedfordſhire, Eſq; --- 21.
650 Robert Brook of Nacton in Suffolk, Eſq; --- 21. ex.
651 Thomas Nevill of Holt in Leiceſterſhire, Eſq; --- 25. ex.
652 Henry Andrews of Lathbury in Buckinghamſhire, Eſq; --- 27. ex.
653 Anthony Craven of Sperſholt in Berkſhire, Eſq; June 4. ex.
654 John Clavering of Axwell in Durham, Eſq; --- 5.
655 Thomas Derham of Weſt-Derham in Norfolk, Eſq; --- 8.
656 William Stanley of Hooton in Cheſhire, Eſq; --- 17.
657 Abraham Cullen of Eaſt-Shene in Surrey, Eſq; --- 17.
658 James Ruſhout of Miluſt-maylards in Eſſex, Eſq; --- 17.
659 Godfrey Copley of Spretborough in Yorkſhire, Eſq; --- 17. ex.
660 Griffith Williams of Penthryn in Caernarvonſhire, Eſq; --- 17.
661 Henry Winchcumbe of Buckebury in Bedfordſhire, Eſq; --- 18. ex.

662 Clement Clarke of Lande-Abbey in Leiceſterſhire, Eſq; — 18.
663 Thomas Vyner of the City of London, Eſq; — 18. ex.
664 John Sylyard of Delaware in Kent, Eſq; — 18. ex.
665 Chriſtopher Guiſe of Elmore in Glouceſterſhire, Eſq; July 10.
666 Reginald Forſter of Eaſt-Greenwich in Kent, Eſq; —11. ex.
667 Philip Parker of Arwarton in Suffolk, Eſq; — 16. ex.
668 Sir Edward Duke of Benhall in Suffolk, Eſq; — 16.
669 Charles Huſſey of Caythorp in Lincolnſhire, Eſq; — 21. ex.
670 Edward Barkham of Waynfleet in Lincolnſhire, Eſq; — 21. ex.
671 Thomas Norton of Coventry in Warwickſhire, Eſq; — 23. ex.
672 John Dormer of the Grange in Buckinghamſhire, Eſq; — 23. ex.
673 Thomas Carew of Haccombe in Devonſhire, Eſq; Auguſt 2.
674 Mark Milbank of Halnaby in Yorkſhire, Eſq; — 7.
675 Richard Rothwell of Ewerby and Stapleford in Lincolnſhire, Eſq; — 16. ex.
676 John Banks of London, Eſq; — 22. ex.
677 John Ingoldsby of Letherborough in Buckinghamſhire, Eſq; — 30. ex.
678 Francis Bickley of Attleborough in Norfolk, Eſq; — September 3.
679 Robert Jaſon of Broad Somerford in Wiltſhire, Eſq; — 5.
680 Sir John Young of Culliton in Devonſhire, Kt. — 26.
681 John Frederic Van Freiſendorf of Herdick, Lord of Kymp. October 4. ex.
682 William Roberts of Willeſden in Middleſex, Eſq; — November 8. ex.
683 William Luckin of Waltham in Eſſex, Eſq; — 15. ex.
684 Thomas Smith of Hill-Hall in Eſſex, Eſq; — 28.
685 Edwin Sadler of Temple-Daneſley in Hertfordſhire, Eſq; December 3. ex.
686 Sir William Wyndham of Orchard in Somerſetſhire, Kt. — 9.
687 George Southcote of Bliborough in Lincolnſhire, Eſq; January 24. ex.

688 George

688 George Trevillian of Nettlecombe in Somerſetſhire, Eſq; —24.
689 Francis Duncombe of Tangley in Surrey, Eſq; Feb. 4. ex.
690 Nicholas Bacon of Gillingham in Norfolk, Eſq; —7. ex.
691 Richard Cocks of Dumbleton in Glouceſterſhire, Eſq; —7.
692 John Coriton of Newton in Cornwall, Eſq; --- 27.
693 John Lloyd of Woking in Surrey, Eſq; --- 28. ex.
694 Thomas Proby of Elton-Hall in Huntingdonſhire, Eſq; March 7. ex.
695 Miles Stapleton of Carleton in Yorkſhire, Eſq; --- 20. ex.
696 Sir Richard Braham of New-Windſor in Berkſhire, Kt. April 16, 1662. ex.
697 Sir John Wittewrong of Stantonbury in Buckinghamſhire, Kt. May 2.
698 Philip Matthews of Great-Gobins near Rumford in Eſſex, Eſq; June 13. ex.
699 Robert Bernard of Huntingdon in Huntingdonſhire, Serjeant at law, July 1.
700 Roger Lort of Stock-Poole in Pembrokeſhire, Eſq; --- 15. ex.
701 Edward Gage of Hengrave in Suffolk, Eſq; --- 15.
702 Thomas Hooke of Franchford in Surrey, Eſq; --- 22. ex.
703 John Savile of Copley in Yorkſhire, Eſq; --- 24. ex.
704 Chriſtopher Wandesford of Kirklington in Yorkſhire, Viſcount Caſtlecomer, Auguſt 5. *I.*
705 Richard Aſtley of Patohull in Staffordſhire, Eſq; --- 13.
706 Sir Jacob Gerrard of Langford in Norfolk, Kt. --- 16.
707 Edward Fuſt of Hill in Glouceſterſhire, Eſq; --- 21.
708 Robert Long of Weſtminſter in Middleſex, Eſq; September 1.
709 Sir Robert Can of Compton-Greenfield in Glouceſterſhire, Eſq; --- 13.
710 William Middleton of Belſey-Caſtle in Northumberland, Eſq; October 24.
711 Richard Graham of Norton-Coniers in Yorkſhire, Eſq; November 17.
712 Thomas Tancred of Boroughbridge in Yorkſhire, Eſq; --- 17.

713 Cuthbert Heron of Chipchaſe in Northumberland, Eſq; Nov. 20, 1662.
714 Sir Francis Wenman of Caſwell in Oxfordſhire, Kt. Viſcount Tuam, --- 29. *I.*
715 Henry Purefoy of Wadley in Berkſhire, Eſq; Dec. 4. ex.
716 Thomas Cob of Adderbury in Oxfordſhire, Eſq; --- 9.
717 Henry Brook of Norton in Cheſhire, Eſq; --- 12.
718 Peter Pindar of Edinſhaw in Cheſhire, Eſq; --- 22. ex.
719 Sir Nicholas Slaning of Moriſton in Devonſhire, Knight of the Bath, January 19. ex.
720 Sir George Reeve of Thwayte in Suffolk, Kt. --- 21. ex.
721 Thomas Brograve of Harnmels in Hertfordſhire, Eſq; March 18. ex.
722 Sir Thomas Barnardiſton of Ketton in Suffolk, Kt. April 7, 1663.
723 Sir Samuel Barnardiſton of Brightwell-Hall in Suffolk, Kt. May 11. ex.
724 Sir John Dawes of Putney in Middleſex, Kt. June 1.
725 Sir John Holeman of Banbury in Oxfordſhire, Kt. --- 4. ex.
726 William Cooke of Bromehall in Norfolk, Eſq; --- 29. ex.
727 John Bellot of Moreton in Cheſhire, Eſq; --- 30. ex.
728 Sir George Downing of Eaſt-Hatley in Cambridgeſhire, Kt. July 1.
729 William Gaudey of Weſt-Herting in Norfolk, Eſq; --- 13. ex.
730 Sir Charles Pym of Brymmore in Somerſetſhire, Kt. --- 14. ex.
731 Sir William d'Oyley of Shotteſham in Norfolk, Kt. --- 29.
732 Sir John Marſham of Cuckſton, in Kent, Auguſt 12.
733 Robert Burnham of Boughton-Monchealey in Kent, Eſq; --- 15. ex.
734 Francis Leeke of Newark in Nottinghamſhire, Eſq; December 15. ex.
735 John St. Barbe of Broadlands in Hampſhire, Eſq; --- 30. ex.
736 Thomas Cambell of Clay-Hall in Eſſex, Eſq; Feb. 12. ex.
737 James Pennyman of Ormesby, in Cleveland in Yorkſhire, Eſq; --- 22.

738 Thomas

738 Thomas Moddiford of Lincoln's-Inn in Middleſex, Eſq; March 1. ex.
739 George Selby of Whitehouſe in Durham, Eſq; --- 3. ex.
740 Sir Edmond Forteſcue of Tallowpit in Devonſhire, Kt. Mar. 31, 1664. ex.
741 Samuel Tuke of Creſſing-Temple in Eſſex, Eſq; --- 31. ex.
742 John Tempeſt of Tong in Yorkſhire, Eſq; May 25.
743 Littleton Osbaldeſton of Chadlington in Oxfordſhire, Eſq; June 25.
744 Giles Tooker of Moddington in Wiltſhire, Eſq; July 1. ex.
745 Stephen Anderton of Eyworth in Bedfordſhire, Eſq; --- 23.
746 Thomas Bateman of How-Hall in Norfolk, Eſq; Auguſt 31. ex.
747 Thomas Lorrayne of Kirk-Hall in Northumberland, Eſq; September 26.
748 Thomas Wentworth of Bretton in Yorkſhire, Eſq; --- 27.
749 Sir Theophilus Biddulph of Weſtcombe in Kent, Kt. November 2.
750 William Green of Micham in Surrey, Eſq; --- 2. ex.
751 William Cookes of Norgrave in Worceſterſhire, Eſq; December 24. ex.
752 Sir John Wolſtenholm of London. Kt. Jan. 10. ex.
753 Sir John Jacob of Bromley in Middleſex, Kt. --- 11.
754 John Yeomans of the City of Briſtol, Eſq; January 12. ex.
755 John Pye of How in Derbyſhire, Eſq; --- 13. ex.
756 Thomas Taylor of the Park-Houſe in Maidſtone in Kent, Eſq; --- 18. ex.
757 William Leman of Northall, in Hertfordſhire, Eſq; March 3.
758 Sir Robert Smith of Upton in Eſſex, Kt. March 30, 1665.
759 Sir Nicholas Criſp of Hammerſmith in Middleſex, Kt. April 14.
760 Sir John Shaw of London. Kt. --- 15.
761 John Brown of Caverſham in Oxfordſhire, Eſq; May 10.
762 George Rawden of Moria, in the County of Downe in Ireland, Eſq; June 2.

763 Robert Jocelyn of Hyde-Hall in Hertfordſhire, Eſq; — 8.

764 Robert Duckenfield of Duckenfield-Hall in Cheſhire, Eſq; — 16.

765 John Lawſon of Broughton in Yorkſhire, Eſq; July 6.

766 Philip Tyrrell of Hanſlap and Caſtlethorp in Buckinghamſhire, Eſq; — 20.

767 Francis Burdet of Burdet in Yorkſhire, Eſq; — 25.

768 George Moore of Maids-Morton in Buckinghamſhire, Eſq; — 26. ex.

769 Abel Barker of Hambleton in Rutlandſhire, Eſq; September 9. ex.

770 Sir William Oglander of Nunwell in the Iſle of Wight, Kt. December 12.

771 William Temple of Sheene in Surrey, Eſq; January 31. ex.

772 William Swan of Southfleet in Kent, Eſq; Mar. 1. ex.

773 Anthony Shirley of Preſton in Suſſex, Eſq; — 6. ex.

774 Maurice Diggs of Chilhem-Caſtle in Kent, Eſq; — 6. ex.

775 Peter Glean of Hardwick in Norfolk, Eſq; — 6.

776 John Nelthorpe of Grays-Inn in Middleſex, Eſq; May 10, 1666.

777 Sir Robert Vyner of London, Kt. — 10. ex.

778 Sir Thomas Twiſden of Bradburn in Kent, Kt. June 13.

779 Sir Anthony Aucher of Biſhops-bourne in Kent, Kt. July 4. ex.

780 John D'Oyly of Chiſelhampton in Oxfordſhire, Eſq; — 7.

781 Edward Hoby of Bifham in Berkſhire, Eſq; — 12.

782 Thomas Put of Combe in Devonſhire, Eſq; — 12. ex.

783 John Tyrrell of Springfield in Eſſex, Eſq; Oct. 22.

784 Gilbert Gerard of Friſkerton in Lincolnſhire, Eſq; November 17. ex.

785 Sir Robert Yeomans of Red-lands in Glouceſterſhire, Kt. December 31.

786 Carr Scrope of Cotkerington in Lincolnſhire, Eſq; January 16. ex.

787 Peter Forteſcue of Woon in Devonſhire, Eſq; — 29. ex.

788 Sir Richard Bettenſon of Wimbleton in Surrey, Kt. February 7.

789 Algernon

789 Algernon Peyton of Doddington in the Iſle of Ely, Eſq; March 21.
790 Roger Martin of Long-Melford in Suffolk, Eſq; — 28, 1667.
791 Richard Haſtings of Redlench in Somerſetſhire, Eſq; May 7. ex.
792 William Hanham of Winburn in Dorſetſhire, Eſq; — 20.
793 Francis Topp of Tormarton in Glouceſterſhire, Eſq; July 25, 1668. ex.
794 William Langhorn of the Inner-Temple, London, Eſq; Auguſt 28. 1670. ex.
795 Edward Moſtyn of Talacre in Flintſhire, Eſq; April 28, 1670.
796 Sir George Stonehouſe, Kt. May 5. ex.
797 Philip Carteret of St. Owen in Jerſey, Eſq; June 4. ex.
798 Fulwar Skipwith of Newbold-Hall in Warwickſhire, Eſq; October 25.
799 John Sabin of Eyne in Bedfordſhire, Eſq; March 22. ex.
800 William Chaitor of Croft-Hall in Yorkſhire, Eſq; June 28, 1671. ex.
801 Herbert Croft of Croft-Caſtle in Hereford, Eſq; November 18.
802 John St. Aubyn of Clowence in Cornwall, Eſq; March 11.
803 Robert Eden of Weſt-Stauckland in Durham, Eſq; Nov. 13, 1672.
804 John Werden of Cheſter, Eſq; — 28.
805 Thomas Allen of Blundeſton in Suffolk, Eſq; — 28. ex.
806 Francis Warr of Heſtercombe in Somerſetſhire, Eſq; June 2, 1673. ex.
807 Orlando Bridgman of Ridley in Cheſhire, Eſq; Oct. 12.
808 Francis Wyndham of Trent in Somerſetſhire, Eſq; November 18.
809 Arthur Harris of Stoveford in Devonſhire, Eſq; December 1. ex.
810 William Blacket of Newcaſtle in Northumberland, Eſq; — 12.
811 John Thompſon of Haverſham in Buckinghamſhire, Eſq; Baron, Lord Haverſham, — 12. E. ex.
812 Halſwell Tynte of Halſwell in Somerſetſhire, Eſq; January 7.

813 Cornelius

813 Cornelius Martin Tromp, Vice-Admiral of Holland and Weſt-Frieſland, March 25, 1674. ex.
814 Robert Parker of Ratton in Suſſex, Eſq; May 22.
815 John Sherard of Lobthorpe in Lincolnſhire, Eſq;—25.
816 Arthur Onſlow of Weſt-Clandon in Surrey, Eſq; now Lord Onſlow, — 25.
817 Walter Clarges of St. Martin's in the Fields, in Middleſex, Eſq; October 30.
818 Thomas Williams of Eltham in Kent, Eſq; November 2, 167 . ex.
819 Robert Filmer of Eaſt-Sutton in Kent, Eſq; December 24.
820 Sir Edward Nevill of Grove in Nottinghamſhire, Kt. February 24. ex.
821 Richard Tulpe of Amſterdam, Eſq; April 23, 1675. ex.
822 Edward More of Morehall in Lancaſhire, Eſq; November 22.
823 Thomas Samwell of Upton in Northamptonſhire, Eſq; December 12.
824 Charles Rich of the City of London, Eſq; Jan. 24.
825 Benjamin Maddox of Wormley in Hertfordſhire, Eſq; March 11. ex.
826 William Barker of Bokinghall in Eſſex, Eſq;—29, 1676.
827 John Brookes of York City, Eſq; June 13.
828 William Pennington of Moncaſter in Cumberland, — 21.
829 Richard Head of Rocheſter in Kent, Eſq; Aug. 19.
830 Bennet Hoſkins of Harwood in Hereford ſhire, Eſq; December 19.
831 Richard Standiſh of Duxbury in Lancaſhire, Eſq; February 8.
832 Alexander Robertſon, alias Collier of Holland, Eſq; ſince Earl of Portmore, — 26. *Scots.*
833 Thomas Dyke of Horſham in Suſſex, Eſq; Mar. 3.
834 Sir Robert Cotton of Cumbermere in Cheſhire, Kt. —29, 1677.
835 Francis Willoughby of Wollaton in Nottinghamſhire, Eſq; Lord Middleton, April 7. *E.*
836 Ignatius Vitus, alias White of Limerick in Ireland, June 29. ex.
837 John Barlow of Sleberge in Pembrokeſhire, Eſq; July 13.
838 Richard Newdigate, Serjeant at Law, — 24.

839 Richard Cuſt of Stamford in Lincolnſhire, Eſq; September 29.
840 Francis Anderton of Laſtock in Lancaſhire, Eſq; October 8.
841 James Simeon of Chilworth in Oxfordſhire, Eſq; — 18.
842 James Poole of Poole in Worrell in Cheſhire, Eſq; [with remainder to William his brother] — 25.
843 George Wharton of Kirkby-Kendal in Weſtmoreland, Eſq; December 19.
844 Sir Hugh Ackland of Cullum-John in Devonſhire, Kt. January 21.
845 Sir Francis Edwards of Shrewſbury in Shropſhire, Kt. April 22, 1678.
846 Sir Henry Oxenden of Dean in Kent, Kt. May 8.
847 James Bowyer of Leightborne in Suſſex, Eſq; — 18.
848 Ralph Dutton of Sherborn in Glouceſterſhire, Eſq; June 20.
849 Walter Curle of Suberton in Huntingdonſhire, Eſq; — 22. ex.
850 William Dyer of Tottenham in Middleſex, Eſq; July 6.
851 Joſias Child of Wanſtead in Eſſex, Eſq; ſince Lord Tilny, — 18. *I.*
852 Sir Thomas Skipwith of Methingham in Lincolnſhire, Kt. — 27.
853 Walter Hawkſworth of Hawkſworth in Yorkſhire, Eſq; December 6.
854 Jeremiah Snow of Saliſbury in Hertfordſhire, Eſq; January 25. ex.
855 William Kenrick of Whitley in Berkſhire, Eſq; March 29, 1679. ex.
856 Sir Samuel Marrow of Berkſwell in Warwickſhire, Kt. July 16. ex.
857 Sir Roger Bradſhaw of Haigh in Lancaſhire, Kt. November 17.
858 William Stapleton, Eſq; Governor of the Leeward-Iſlands in America, December 20.
859 Thomas-Pope Blount of Tittenhanger in Hertfordſhire, Eſq; January 6.
860 Sir George Walker of Buſhey-Hall in Hertfordſhire, Kt. — 18. ex.
861 Sir Gellibrand Sas van Boſch of Holland, Kt. Oct. 22, 1680. ex.
862 John Roberts of Bow in Eſſex, Eſq; February 2. ex.

863 Roger

863 Roger Beckwith of Aldborough in Yorkſhire, Eſq; April 15, 1681.
864 Thomas Parkings of Bunney in Nottinghamſhire, Eſq; May 18.
865 Thomas Bunbury of Bunbury and Stanney in Cheſhire, Eſq; June 29.
866 Hugh Parker of the City of London, Eſq; July 1.
867 Henry Seymour, Eſq; --- 4. ex.
868 Sir George Jefferies of Bulſtrode, Kt. Nov. 7. ex.
869 Hugh Middleton of Hackney in Middleſex, Eſq; Dec. 6.
870 Joſeph Alſton the Elder, of Chelſea in Middleſex, Eſq; January 20.
871 Thomas Robinſon of Kentwell-Hall in Suffolk, Eſq; — 26.
872 William Maynard of Walthamſtow in Eſſex, Eſq; Feb. 1.
873 Sir Robert Napier of Punknol in Dorſetſhire, Kt. — 25.
874 Robert Davers of Rowham in Norfolk, Eſq; May 12, 1682.
875 Cane James of Criſhall in Eſſex, Eſq; June 28.
876 Cornelius Gans of the Netherlands. — 29.
877 Timothy Thornhill of Barbadoes, and of Kent. December 24. ex.
878 Sir Edward Evelyn of Long-Ditton in Surrey, Kt. February 17. ex.
879 Thomas Lear of Lindridge in Devonſhire, Eſq; Aug. 2. 1683.
880 John Wytham of Goldsborough in Yorkſhire, Eſq; December 13.
881 James Richards of Bramley-Houſe in Suffolk, Eſq; February 22.
882 George Chute of Hauxfull-Place in Kent, Eſq; September 16, 1684. ex.
883 Sir Robert Daſhwood of Northwood in Oxfordſhire, Kt. — 16.
884 Sir George Sheers of Slyfield-Houſe in Surrey, Kt. October 16. ex.
885 Richard Sands of Northborne in Kent, Eſq; December 15. ex.
886 Sir William Blacket of Newcaſtle upon Tyne in Northumberland, Kt. January 23.
887 Sir John Child of Surat in the Eaſt-Indies, Feb. 5,
888 Sir William Soame of Thurlow in Suffolk, Kt. February 5.

BOOK

Face the Title Vol XV.

Kneller p. Vertue Sculp.

BOOK XXIV.

The Reign of King JAMES II, *from his Acceſſion to the Throne, to the Eſtabliſhment of King* WILLIAM *and Queen* MARY; *Containing the ſpace of four years and ſeven days.*

27. JAMES II.

JAMES Duke of *York* is proclaimed King, by the name of *James* II. His deſign and endeavours from the firſt, were to eſtabliſh Popery and arbitrary Power in theſe Kingdoms. *Ann. C. Reg.* 1.

He aſſembles his Privy-Council, to whom he makes a ſpeech full of fair promiſes.

A proclamation is iſſued out for continuing all perſons in office in their employments, and for obeying all orders and directions given by the late King. *Feb.* 7.

King *James* goes publicly to Maſs. 9.

He orders by a proclamation, that the cuſtoms and other duties, which had been granted to the King his brother only for life, ſhould continue to be collected. 16.

He publiſhes, and cauſes it to be atteſted, by Father *Huddleſton*, that the late King his brother died a Papiſt.

Laurence Hyde Earl of *Rocheſter*, is made Lord High-Treaſurer; *Henry Hyde* Earl of *Clarendon*, Lord Privy-Seal; *George Savil* Marquiſs of *Halliſax*, Preſident of the Council; *Henry Bennet* Earl of *Arlington*, Lord-Chamberlain; *James Butler* Duke of *Ormond*, Lord-Steward; *Francis* Lord Viſcount *Newport*, Treaſurer of the Houſehold; *William* Lord *Maynard*, Comptroller; *Henry Savil*, Vice-Chamberlain; *Sidney* Lord *Godolphin*, Lord-Chamberlain to the Queen, *&c.*

Remarkable addreſſes are preſented to the King by the Barriſters and Students of the *Middle-Temple*, by the Inhabitants of *Suffolk*, and by the *Quakers*, &c.

James Butler Duke of *Ormond*, is recalled from being Lord-Lieutenant of *Ireland*, and two Lords Juſtices are appointed to govern that Kingdom. 1685. *April.*

The King forms a new Privy-Council in *Ireland*, and fills it moſtly with Catholics.

Ann. C. That Council impriſons abundance of Proteſtants accuſed of having held intelligence with the Duke of *Monmouth*.

23. The King and Queen are crowned.

The Crown happened to be too little for the King's head, and the King's Arms painted in a glaſs window in one of the Churches of *London*, fall down of their own accord, and are broken to pieces; the reſt remaining ſtanding and unhurt.

The Parliament of *Scotland* meets at *Edinburgh*, and paſſes ſome acts about Religion, the laws of the Kingdom, and the Exciſe, *&c.*

James Douglaſs Duke of *Queensbury*, was the King's High-Commiſſioner in this Parliament of *Scotland*.

Archibald Campbel Earl of *Argyle*, perſuades *James Scot* Duke of *Monmouth* to invade *England*.

May 5. The Earl ſails from *Holland*, and appears before the Iſle of *Orkney*, where being ill received, he ſails from thence round to the Weſt *High-Lands*, and lands near *Dunſtafnage*, *May* 20.

He publiſhes two Declarations.

The Parliament of *Scotland* paſſes an act for obliging all the Subjects of that Kingdom to take the oath of Allegiance a-new.

8. *Titus Oates* is tried for perjury.

16. He is condemned to a large fine; to be ſtripped of his Canonical habits; to be twice whipped within three days; to ſtand in the pillory five times every year as long as he lived; and to be kept cloſe priſoner during the reſt of his life.

The whipping part of the ſentence is executed upon him with the utmoſt ſeverity.

19. The Parliament meets; and the Commons chuſe Sir *John Trevor* for their Speaker.

22. The King makes a ſpeech to both Houſes, in which he promiſes to preſerve the Government both in Church and State, as by Law eſtabliſhed, and to preſerve the liberties of the Nation; after which he ſpeaks of his revenue, and of the Earl of *Argyle*'s deſcent in *Scotland*.

Both Houſes preſent addreſſes of thanks to the King for his ſpeech, and the Commons grant him during life all the revenue enjoyed by the late King at his death.

24. *James Scot* Duke of *Monmouth* ſails out of the *Texel*.

Thomas Osborne Earl of *Danby*, and the four Popiſh Lords that had been bailed out of the *Tower*, are diſcharged.

The

The Houſe of Lords paſſes a bill for reverſing the attainder of *William Howard* Lord Viſcount *Stafford*, in 1680, but ſome Lords proteſt againſt it. *Ann. C.*

The Parliament of *Scotland* grants the King a yearly revenue of 260,000*l.* paſſes an act againſt the Covenant in 1638; and two other acts in favour of the Royal authority.

The Parliament of *England* votes that they would aſſiſt the King with their lives and fortunes againſt the Earl of *Argyle*, and his adherents.

The Committee of Religion draw up ſome votes againſt the Presbyterians, which are rejected by the Houſe of Commons. 27.

Sir *John Trevor* the Speaker makes a ſpeech to the King, in preſenting to him the revenue-bill; and the King makes a ſpeech to both Houſes, after having paſſed the revenue-bill, wherein he diſcovers his deſigns. *May* 30.

Thomas Dangerfield, who diſcovered the meal-tub-plot, is tried for his Narrative; condemned to a 500*l.* fine, and to be whipped two days together. After his firſt day's whipping, *Robert Francis* thruſts a cane into one of his eyes, of which he dies, and for which *Francis* is hanged.

Richard Baxter is alſo tried for his Notes on the New Teſtament, and fined 500 marks.

The Earl of *Argyle* gathers about 3,000 men together, and incamps in the Iſle of *Bute*: But being purſued he paſſes into the County of *Argyle*, and from thence into *Dumbartonſhire*.

The King's forces take the caſtle of *Ellengreg*, which the Earl had fortified, and had left therein his cannon, arms, and ammunition.

Thereupon he is forced to fly, and to hide himſelf in the water; but is diſcovered by a country fellow, and carried to *Edinburgh*, where he is beheaded *June* 30. *June* 17.

In the mean time, *James Scot* Duke of *Monmouth* lands at *Lyme* in *Dorſetſhire*, with about fourſcore perſons: And publiſhes a Declaration or Manifeſto againſt the King. 11.

He gathers together an army of about 2000 men; 14.

And marches to *Axminſter* in *Devenſhire*. 15.

An act of attainder is paſſed againſt him. 16.

He arrives at *Taunton* in *Somerſetſhire*, where his army increaſes conſiderably. 18.

He ſuffers himſelf to be proclaimed King at *Taunton*, by the name of *James* II, and publiſhes three proclamations againſt 20.

Ann. C. againſt the King, the Parliament, and *Chriſtopher Monk* Duke of *Albemarle*.

21. He advances to *Bridgewater*, where he is proclaimed King.

Next he marches towards *Briſtol*, but retreats back towards *Bridgewater*, upon news of the approach of the King's army, and beats one of the King's quarters at *Philip's-Norton*.

At *Frome* he hears of the Earl of *Argyle*'s defeat, which throws him into great conſternation.

William III. Prince of *Orange*, offers to come in perſon and head King *James*'s army: But his offer is rejected by the King: And *Lewis Duras* Earl of *Feverſham* is made General of the King's forces.

He encamps at *Sedgemore* near *Bridgewater*.

27. Several acts are paſſed particularly one for granting the King a ſupply of 400,000 *l.* for his preſent extraordinary occaſions.

July 2. The Parliament is adjourned to the 14th of *Auguſt*.

6. *James* Duke of *Monmouth*, attacks the King's army, and being defeated is forced to fly on foot.

8. He hides himſelf in a ditch, where he is found, and carried to *London*; and on the 13th, he and the Lord *Grey* are committed to the *Tower*.

He writes a letter to the King, and obtains leave to ſpeak to him; but the King refuſes to grant him his life.

15. Dr. *Thomas Tenniſon*, and Dr. *George Hooper*, get him to declare in writing, that the late King told him he was never married to his mother.

James Scot Duke of *Monmouth* is beheaded.

The King diſarms the Proteſtants in *Ireland*; and fills the army in that Kingdom with Popiſh officers and ſoldiers.

Colonel *Richard Talbot* is employed to new-model that army.

26. *Thomas Grey* Earl of *Stamford*, *Charles Gerard* Lord *Brandon*, and *Henry Booth* Lord *Delamere*, are committed to the *Tower* for treaſon.

28. *Henry Bennet* Earl of *Arlington* dies.

Auguſt. The Lord Chief-Juſtice *George Jefferies* is ſent by the King into the Weſt of *England*, with a ſpecial commiſſion of *Oyer* and *Terminer*, to try the perſons concerned in the late Rebellion with the Duke of *Monmouth*; and is attended with a conſiderable body of troops commanded by Colonel

lonel *Kirk*: They execute their commiſſion with a barba- *Ann. C.*
rous cruelty.

Alicia Liſle is executed at *Wincheſter*, for harbouring *Sept.* 2.
John Hicks, one of the late Duke of *Monmouth*'s adherents.

Francis North Baron of *Guilford*, and Lord-Keeper, dies. 5.
He is ſucceeded by Sir *George Jefferies* Lord-Chancellor.

Sir *Leoline Jenkins* dies.

Henry Corniſh Eſq; is tried, and brought in guilty of *Oct.* 19.
High-treaſon, for the Proteſtant-plot in King *Charles* IId's Reign.

The ſame day *William Ring*, *John Fernley*, and *Elizabeth Gaunt*, are alſo tried and condemned, for concealing and relieving ſome of the late Duke of *Monmouth*'s confederates.

Henry Corniſh is executed in *Cheapſide*, and *Elizabeth* 23.
Gaunt burnt at *Tyburn*.

John Sheffield Earl of *Mulgrave*, is made Lord-Chamberlain.

The King undertakes to render himſelf abſolute, and to eſtabliſh the *Romiſh* Religion in *England*.

The Parliament meets again; and the King makes a *Nov.* 9.
ſpeech to both Houſes, to juſtify the augmenting of his ſtanding forces, and his admitting Popiſh officers in the army.

The Lords thank the King for his ſpeech; but the Com- 12.
mons adjourn the debate, and take the ſpeech into conſideration.

They vote the King 700,000 *l.*

But they preſent an addreſs to him againſt the admitting Popiſh officers in the army.

To which addreſs the King returns an angry anſwer.

The Commons offer a bill to indemnify the Roman-Catholic officers in the army from the penalties they had already incurred; and another bill to qualify ſuch a number of thoſe officers as the King ſhould give a liſt of.

Henry Booth Lord *de la Mere*, and *Thomas Grey* Earl of 9.
Stamford, priſoners in the *Tower*, preſent petitions to the 11.
Houſe of Lords.

The King prorogues the Parliament to the 10th of *Feb-* 20.
ruary.

Charles Gerard Lord *Brandon*, is tried for treaſon, and 26.
condemned, but pardoned afterwards.

Robert Spencer Earl of *Sunderland*, is made Preſident of *Dec.* 4.
the Council and Prime Miniſter.

Charles Bateman, Chirurgeon, is tried and condemned 9.
for High-treaſon, and executed at *Tyburn*, the 18th.

Ann. C. Colonel *Richard Talbot* is made Earl of *Tyrconnel*, and Lieutenant-General of the army in *Ireland*.

Henry Hyde Earl of *Clarendon* is conſtituted Lord-Lieutenant of *Ireland*, and goes thither.

30. *John Hampden* is tried for High-treaſon. He pleads guilty, and is condemned, but afterwards obtains a pardon.

The learned Sir *John Maſham* died this year.

Jan. 14. 1686. *Henry Booth*, Lord *Delamere*, is tried for high-treaſon, and acquitted.

April 3. *Thomas*, Earl of *Stamford*, is pardoned.

Reg. 2. The Parliament of *Scotland* meets; and the King recommends to them his Catholic ſubjects, in order to bring about the repeal of the penal laws and teſt.

A bill is brought into that Parliament in favour of the Papiſts in *Scotland*, but does not paſs; whereupon, the Parliament of *Scotland* is prorogued.

Richard Talbot, Earl of *Tyrconnel*, continues to fill the army in *Ireland* with Catholics.

His violent proceedings compel ſeveral *Engliſh* Proteſtants to leave *Ireland*, and the *Engliſh* Merchants to withdraw their effects from thence.

April. The King, being reſolved to aſſert and eſtabliſh his pretended prerogative of diſpenſing with the penal Laws and Teſt, cloſets the Judges about it, and removes ſuch of them as would not aſſert this diſpenſing power; namely, Sir *Thomas Jones* and Sir *Job Charlton* of the *Common-Pleas*, and *William Mountague*, Eſq; and Sir *Edward Nevil* Barons of the *Exchequer*.

The Judges put into their rooms, and the reſt too compliant, decide, That the King has the power of diſpenſing with the penal laws and teſt.

May 14. *Miles Prance*, having an information of perjury brought againſt him, for his depoſitions about Sir *Edmundbury Godfrey*'s murder, pleads guilty, and obtains, upon that account, a mitigation of his fine.

The *Roman* Catholics make public and open profeſſion of their Religion all over the Kingdom.

Four Popiſh Biſhops are conſecrated in the King's Chapel, and ſent to their reſpective Dioceſes, under the title of Apoſtolical Vicars.

Great numbers of Prieſts and Monks flock into *England*.

All places and preferments are given to Papiſts, or to thoſe who were thought popiſhly inclined.

Mar. 5. The King puts out an order (dated *March* 5. this year) prohibiting the inferior Clergy from preaching upon controverted

verted points in Divinity; but ſome, particularly Dr. *John Sharp*, Rector of *St. Giles*'s, *London*, do not regard this order. *Ann. C. June.*

The Earl of *Powis*, and the Lords *Bellaſis*, *Dover*, and *Arundel* of *Wardour*, all Papiſts, are admitted into the Privy-Council. *July* 17.

Thomas Cartwright, who countenanced the King's proceedings, is appointed Biſhop of *Cheſter*, and *Samuel Parker* of *Oxford*.

A commiſſion for eccleſiaſtical affairs having (in *April* this year) been erected by the King, into which ſeveral Papiſts were admitted, *Henry Compton*, Biſhop of *London*, is cited before the Commiſſioners, for not ſuſpending Dr. *John Sharp*, as the King had ordered. *Aug.* 4, & 9.

The Biſhop appears ſeveral times before the Commiſſioners, and, notwithſtanding his plea, is ſuſpended. *Aug.* 9, 15, 24,

Mr. *Samuel Johnſon* writes an addreſs to the *Engliſh* Proteſtants in King *James*'s army, wherein he exhorts them, not to be aiding and aſſiſting in deſtroying the Proteſtant Religion, and overturning the Government. 31. *Sept.* 6.

He is degraded for it, ſet three times in the pillory, whipped, and condemned to a 500 marks fine. *Nov.* 16. 20, *&c.*

King *James* labours to gain Proſelytes to Popery.

Robert Spencer, Earl of *Sunderland*, turns Papiſt:

But *Laurence* and *Henry Hyde*, Earls of *Rocheſter* and *Clarendon*, refuſing to embrace Popery, are both turned out of their places.

Roger Palmer, Earl of *Caſtlemain*, is ſent Ambaſſador to Pope *Innocent* XI, who gives that Ambaſſador but a cold reception.

The King removes Proteſtants out of all their employment, and beſtows them upon *Roman* Catholics.

The Parliament which was to meet the 15th of *February*, is prorogued till *April* 28. 1686-7. *Jan.* 7.

Richard Talbot, Earl of *Tyrconnel*, is appointed Lord-Lieutenant of *Ireland*. *Reg.* 3.

The King ſends into *Scotland* a declaration for liberty of conſcience; which the Council of that Kingdom cauſes to be publiſhed.

One of the ſame nature is publiſhed in *England*, by the King's order; for which many of the Diſſenters return him thanks in fulſome addreſſes. 1687. *April* 4.

However, the bulk of the Proteſtants do not fall into the ſnares laid for them by the King, in order to ſet them

Ann. C. at variance, but, on the contrary, unite together for their common intereſt.

Nathaniel Crew, Biſhop of *Durham*, *Thomas Barlow*, of *Lincoln*, *Thomas Cartwright*, of *Cheſter*, *Thomas Wood*, of *Lichfield* and *Coventry*, *Thomas Watſon*, of *St. Davids*, and *Samuel Parker*, of *Oxford*, countenance the King's arbitrary and illegal proceedings, and prevail upon ſome of

Feb. 9, their Clergy to ſend up addreſſes of thanks.

24. The King ſends two mandates to the Univerſity of *Cambridge*, to admit *Alban Francis*, a *Benedictine* Monk, Maſter of Arts, without taking the oaths; but the Univerſity refuſes to comply, becauſe it was contrary to their ſtatutes.

However, Dr. *Peachell*, Vice-Chancellor of that Univerſity, is deprived of his office and preferments, and ſuſpended, *May* 7.

The King tries to get *Anthony Farmer* choſen Preſident of *Magdalen* College in *Oxford*.

April 15, The Fellows of that College elect Dr. *John Hough*,

16. notwithſtanding the King's mandate in behalf of *Farmer*.

June 6. They are cited to appear before the Eccleſiaſtical Com-

22. miſſioners. Dr. *Hough* is turned out from being Preſident, and the Vice-Preſident, with another of the Fellows, are

From ſuſpended. The King inſiſts no longer on his mandate to

June, *to* *Farmer*, and grants a ſecond in behalf of *Samuel Parker*,

the latter Biſhop of *Oxford*. The Fellows refuſe likewiſe to com-

end of No- ply with this mandate. The King appoints Commiſſioners

vember. to viſit the Colleges, of which moſt of the Fellows are expelled, and ill uſed, and *Roman* Catholics are put in their places.

April. The King continues to promote the Popiſh Religion, by endeavouring to gain Proſelytes, and by conferring all offices on Papiſts.

16. *George Villiers*, Duke of *Buckingham*, dies.

The Parliament, that was to meet the 28th of *April*, is prorogued to the 22d of *November*.

June 11. A flattering addreſs is preſented to the King from ſeveral Members of the *Middle-Temple*, about the Toleration, and his Prerogatives.

July 2. The Parliament is diſſolved.

3. *Ferdinand Dadda*, the Pope's Nuncio, makes his public entry.

The King orders *Quo Warranto*'s to be brought againſt ſeveral Corporations.

He

He uſes his utmoſt endeavours to get a new Parliament at his devotion, and cloſets people for that purpoſe. *Ann. C.*

In order to influence the elections of Parliament-men, he takes a progreſs into ſeveral parts of the Kingdom. *Auguſt. Septemb.*

He ſounds the inclinations of the Prince and Princeſs of *Orange*, about repealing the teſt and penal laws againſt Papiſts: Some letters paſs between *James Steuart* and Penſionary *Fagel* upon that ſubject. *October. Novemb.*

Father *Edward Petre* the King's Confeſſor, and a Jeſuit, is ſworn of the King's Privy-Council. 11.

King *James* acts with great beneficence and generoſity towards the *French* Proteſtant Refugees.

The ingenious Sir *William Petty* died this year.

The King iſſues out a proclamation, to give notice of the Queen's being with child, and orders a Thankſgiving for it; but many people queſtioned, whether it was not a cheat. However, many congratulatory addreſſes are preſented to him upon that occaſion. 1687-8. *Jan.* 2.

The Jeſuits give out, That the Queen would certainly be brought to bed of a ſon, and that her conception was miraculous.

King *James* ſends to demand the ſix *Engliſh* and *Scotch* regiments that were in the ſervice of the *Dutch*; but the *States* excuſe themſelves from ſending them. 17.

The King reſtrains the printing of books in defence of the Reformed Religion. *Reg.* 4. *Feb.* 10.

He gives out commiſſions for raiſing new troops, and for augmenting his fleet.

The King having over and over demanded in vain the ſix regiments that were in the ſervice of the *Dutch*, iſſues out a proclamation, commanding the return of all his ſubjects that were in the ſervice of the *States-General*: About forty of them comply with that order.

He puts out another proclamation forbidding his ſubjects to liſt themſelves in the ſervice of any foreign Prince. *Mar.* 2.

There comes out a new declaration for liberty of conſcience; which the King orders the Biſhops to cauſe to be read in all Churches. 1688. *Apr.* 27. *May* 4.

Some of the Biſhops meet, and debate about the King's order; and ſeven of them preſent a petition to the King, deſiring to be excuſed from ſending it about to the Clergy. *May* 18.

His Majeſty, being highly offended at that petition, cauſes the ſeven Biſhops to be ſummoned before the Council.

They make their appearance, and are ſent to the *Tower*. *June* 8.

The Queen is reported to be brought to bed of a Prince, 10.

Ann. C. but great ſuſpicions ariſe about that matter, and it was ſo managed as to give but too much room for ſuſpicions.

Some believe, that the Queen was not with child, and that there was a pretended heir of the Crown put upon the Nation; others imagine, that ſhe was really with child, but that having miſcarried, ſhe ſuppoſed a child, who happening to die, as well as a ſecond, ſhe took a third, and made it paſs for her own; others pretend that ſhe was actually with child, and that the child was her own.

The King ſends for troops from *Ireland*, and places abundance of *Iriſh* and Popiſh officers in the *Engliſh* regiments.

The City of *Carliſle* ſends up a flattering addreſs to his Majeſty.

15. The ſeven Biſhops appear at the Court of *King's-Bench*, and, where offering their plea, they obtain a delay of 14 days, and are admitted to bail.

June 29, 30. They appear the ſecond time, and, after a long trial, are acquitted.

Great rejoicings are made upon that occaſion at *London*, in the army, and all over the Kingdom.

The Earl of *Lichfield*'s regiment refuſes to contribute to the abrogating of the penal laws and teſt, and almoſt all the officers and ſoldiers lay down their arms.

The King caſhiers many Proteſtant officers and ſoldiers, and puts *Iriſh* Papiſts in their room; but, not without meeting with oppoſition from this quarter, as well as from his fleet, where he cauſed maſs to be ſaid.

Nathaniel Crew, Biſhop of *Durham*, *Thomas Cartwright*, of *Cheſter*, and *Thomas Sprat*, of *Rocheſter*, cauſe the declaration for liberty of conſcience to be read in their Dioceſes.

Nine Miniſters in *Cheſter* Dioceſe ſend an addreſs to the King upon that occaſion.

July 12. & *Sept.* 15. The Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion ſends orders to all Chancellors, *&c.* to enquire in what Churches the declaration was read, and in which not; but they are not much minded.

Thomas Sprat, Biſhop of *Rocheſter*, withdraws from the Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſion, and gives his reaſons for it in a letter to his Collegues.

Moſt perſons depart from the abſurd doctrine of Paſſive Obedience and Non-reſiſtance; and, both Churchmen and Presbyterians, Tories and Whigs, join, in order to oppoſe

poſe the King's deſigns, and form a ſtrict union for their common ſecurity. *Ann. C.*

The leading men of both parties take the reſolution of inviting over *William* III, Prince of *Orange*.

Several of the *Engliſh* Nobility and Gentry repair to him, and apply to the *States-General*, who return them a favourable anſwer.

The Prince of *Orange* prepares for his expedition into *England*, with a good body of troops.

King *James* gives no heed to the informations that were ſent him from *France*, of the Prince's preparations.

However, he orders the Marquiſs of *Albyville*, his Ambaſſador, to demand of the *States*, what they meant by their warlike preparations; but they return no ſatisfactory anſwer. *Aug.* 23.

He declares in Council, that he intended to call a Parliament. 24.

France offers him a fleet, and an army of 30,000 men; but the Earl of *Sunderland* prevents that offer from being accepted. 25.

King *James* enters into a private league with that Court, and uſes ſome means to put himſelf in a poſture of defence.

He diſowns the memorial preſented, on the 9th of *September*, to the *States*, by Count *d'Avaux*, in which they were threatened with an invaſion from *France*.

Moreover, his Majeſty publiſhes a proclamation, in which he promiſes to endeavour a legal eſtabliſhment of an univerſal liberty of conſcience, inviolably to preſerve the Church of *England*, and to be willing the *Roman* Catholics ſhould remain incapable to be Members of the Houſe of Commons. *Sept.* 21.

He rejects a propoſal made to him by Monſieur *Barillon*, to deſire *Lewis* XIV. to carry the war into *Holland*.

Lewis Duras, Earl of *Feverſham*, is appointed General of King *James*'s army.

The Prince of *Orange* having diſcovered his deſigns, King *James* is in a great conſternation, and conſults the Biſhops, to know what courſe he ſhould take. They give him excellent advice.

He iſſues out a proclamation, to give notice of the approaching invaſion. 28.

The Prince of *Orange* publiſhes a declaration, or manifeſto. *Oct.* 1.

The *States-General* publiſh a reſolution, containing the

Ann. C. reaſons that had obliged them to aſſiſt the Prince of *Orange* with ſhips, men, and ammunition.

2. The King takes off the ſuſpenſion of *Henry Compton*, Biſhop of *London*, appoints a new Lord-Mayor, and promiſes to reſtore the Charter of that City.

He publiſhes a general pardon, with ſome exceptions.

Orders his Ambaſſador at the *Hague* to aſſure the *States*, that there was no treaty of league between *England* and *France*.

3. The Biſhops preſent to the King the reſult of their conferences, upon the points wherein his Majeſty had deſired their advice.

In purſuance of them, the King gives orders,

5. For diſſolving the commiſſion for cauſes eccleſiaſtical.

6. For reſtoring the Charter, *&c.* of *London*, which was accordingly done, this day.

10. For inquiring into the abuſes committed in the late regulations of the Corporations.

12. For reinſtating the Preſident and Fellows of *Magdalen* College.

17. He publiſhes a proclamation, for reſtoring Corporations to their antient charters, liberties, *&c.*

And orders all the Popiſh Chapels to be ſhut up.

But his unſteady proceedings, with regard to *Magdalen* College, give riſe to freſh ſuſpicions.

He augments the number of his forces, and takes ſome precautions againſt the threatened invaſion.

15. The pretended Prince of *Wales* is baptized, and named *James-Francis-Edward*.

A pamphlet is publiſhed in *Holland* about the birth of that Prince, entitled, *A Memorial of the* Engliſh *Proteſtants*, preſented to their Highneſſes the Prince and Princeſs of *Orange*.

19. The Prince of *Orange* puts to ſea with his fleet: It is diſperſed by a tempeſt.

22. King *James*, upon occaſion of the aforeſaid memorial, aſſembles an extraordinary Council to prove the birth of the Prince of *Wales*: Several witneſſes are examined about that matter, and their depoſitions enrolled in *Chancery*.

28. *Robert Spencer*, Earl of *Sunderland*, is removed from his places of Preſident of the Council, and Secretary of State, and *Richard Grahme*, Lord Viſcount *Preſton*, is made Secretary in his room.

Upon a falſe rumour of the great damages ſuſtained by the *Dutch* fleet, King *James* revokes ſome of his late acts of grace.

The

The Prince of *Orange* alledging in his declaration, That he was invited by divers of the Lords, both Spiritual and Temporal, the King calls upon the Biſhops to expreſs, under their hands, an abhorrence of the invaſion; but they excuſe themſelves. *Ann. C.*

The King publiſhes that declaration, with animadverſions.

The Prince of *Orange* writes to King *James*'s army, and Admiral *Arthur Herbert* to the fleet, to diſſuade them from adhering to King *James*.

The fleet was ill-affected to the King, and would not have fought heartily againſt the Prince of *Orange*.

King *James* grants particular pardons to ſeveral perſons.

William, Prince of *Orange*, puts to ſea again. *Nov.* 1.

He ſtops between *Dover* and *Calais*, and holds there a Council of war. 3.

He arrives at *Torbay*, where he lands his forces, being about 15,000 men. 5.

From thence he marches towards *Exeter*. 6.

King *James* orders his army to rendezvous on *Salisbury-Plane*.

He diſcovers ſome reſolution, upon the news of the Prince of *Orange*'s landing, and publicly declares, That he would look upon all thoſe as his enemies, who ſhould adviſe him to treat with that Prince.

The Prince arrives at *Exeter*, and ſtays there nine days, before any perſon of note comes in to him. 9.

On the 10th day, conſiderable numbers of the Gentry of the adjacent parts wait upon him, and draw up an Aſſociation, which is ſigned in ſeveral places of the Kingdom, by multitudes of people. 19.

The Prince of *Orange* marches towards *Salisbury*.

Great numbers deſert in the King's army.

Edward Hyde, Lord Viſcount *Cornbury*, goes over to the Prince of *Orange*, and carries with him ſome regiments.

Several Lords appear in arms in divers places, and declare for the Prince.

A petition is preſented to the King by ſeveral Lords, both Spiritual and Temporal, in *London*, to deſire him to call a free Parliament. 17.

He is afraid of being delivered up to the Prince of *Orange*, if he ſhould put himſelf at the head of his army.

At length, he is adviſed to go to the army at *Salisbury*; which he doth, leaving in *London* a Council conſiſting moſtly of Papiſts. 17.

King

Ann. C. King *James* arrives at *Salisbury*: The day after his coming thither, he is taken with a bleeding at the nose, which
19. returns upon him the next day.
20. Most of the chief officers of his army declare to him,
21. that they could not in conscience fight against the Prince of *Orange*.

Henry Fitz-Roy, Duke of *Grafton*, Colonel *Berkley*, and other considerable officers desert him.

Particularly, *John*, Lord *Churchill* (afterwards Duke of *Marlborough*) and one of the King's Favourites, forsakes him, and writes a letter to him to excuse his defection.

George, Prince of *Denmark*, leaves him also, and goes over to the Prince.

The Prince of *Orange* comes to *Sherborn* in *Dorsetshire*.

He makes a public entry into *Salisbury*.

John Granville, Earl of *Bath*, secures *Plymouth* for the Prince of *Orange*; and the *Dutch* fleet is conveyed into that safe port.

Charles Talbot, Earl of *Shrewsbury*, and Sir *John Guise*, seize *Bristol* for the Prince.

Thomas Osborne, Earl of *Danby*, makes himself master of *York*; and Colonel *Copley* surprizes *Hull*.

Henry Booth, Lord *Delamere*, doth also good service in the North.

William Cavendish, Earl of *Devonshire*, with several other Lords and Gentlemen, assembled at *Derby*, declare for a free Parliament.

The City and County of *York*, the Town of *Berwick*, and the Nobility, and other inhabitants of *Nottinghamshire*, follow their example.

Other declarations are published in favour of the Prince.

Five Commissioners from *Scotland* come to him to demand a free Parliament in that Kingdom.

22. The King publishes a proclamation, promising a free pardon to all his subjects, who had taken up arms, and joined with the Prince of *Orange*, provided they quitted him within 20 days.

25. *Anne*, Princess of *Denmark*, leaves the King, her Father, and goes to Prince *George*, her Husband: She writes a letter to the Queen, to justify her conduct.

26. King *James* returns to *London*; and finding himself forsaken by all, assembles the few Protestant Lords, Spiritual and Temporal, that were then in *London*, to assist him with their advice.

28. In pursuance of it, he orders the Lord-Chancellor, to

iſſue out writs for ſummoning a Parliament to meet the 15th of *January* next. *Ann. C.*

Two days after, he puts out a proclamation for the ſpeedy calling of a Parliament.

In the mean time, a declaration is publiſhed under the name of the Prince of *Orange*, but without his knowledge, relating to the Papiſts, which puts them into a great conſternation. 28.

The King ſends the Marquiſs of *Halifax*, the Earl of *Nottingham*, and the Lord *Godolphin*, to the Prince then at *Ambresbury*, to treat with him. *Dec.* 2.

The Prince comes to *Salisbury*: On the 7th to *Hungerford*, and, the next day, to *Lidcot*. 4.

The King finds the Prince's propoſals very reaſonable and moderate, and calls a Council of the Lords that were in town, to deliberate about them; but puts off the paſſing his final judgment upon them till the next day. 10.

In the mean while the counſels of his Popiſh friends and of the Queen prevail upon him; and the Queen being reſolved to withdraw out of the Kingdom, he promiſes to follow her into *France*.

Queen *Maria* of *Modena* departs from *London*, and withdraws into *France*, to *Verſailles*. 10.

The King departs alſo from *Whitehall* in diſguiſe, in order to fly out of the Kingdom, having firſt ordered the broad Seal to be thrown into the *Thames*. 11.

The Lords in and about *London*, and the Magiſtrates of that City, ſignify to the Prince their intentions of aſſiſting him, with their utmoſt endeavours, in obtaining ſuch a Parliament, wherein our laws, liberties, and properties may be ſecured, *&c.*

The Common-Council of *London* invites the Prince of *Orange* to come into the City.

The *London* mob pulls down the Maſs-houſes.

George Jeffreys, Lord Chancellor, and Baron of *Wem*, is apprehended as he was preparing to go out of the Kingdom; and being roughly handled by the populace is carried to the *Tower*, where he dies, ſhortly after.

Lewis Duras, Earl of *Feverſham*, diſbands the army by the King's order; of which there were then but 4000 men together, at *Uxbridge*.

Some outrages committed by the *Iriſh* diſbanded ſoldiers, cauſe in *London* a panic fright, which ſpreads all over the Kingdom. 12.

The Prince of *Orange*, and the Peers and Privy-Coun- 13.

cil

Ann. C. cil, order the King's disbanded forces to repair to their ſeveral regiments, for fear they ſhould commit any diſorder.

King *James* having embarked on board a ſmack, and been forced to put into *Eaſt-Swale* in the Iſle of *Sheppy*, is there ſeized by ſome ſailors, and carried to *Feverſham*; whither ſome Lords are ſent to intreat his return to *Whitehall*.

15. The Prince comes from *Henley* to *Windſor*, and ſends Mr. *Zuyleſtein* to deſire the King to ſtay at *Rocheſter*; but *Zuyleſtein* going one way, and the King another;

16. The latter returns to *London*, where he is received with great acclamations; and iſſues out an order to forbid the plundering of Papiſts houſes.

The Earl of *Feverſham* being ſent by the King to invite the Prince of *Orange* to *St. James's*, is committed to *Windſor* Caſtle.

17. The Prince of *Orange's* guards take poſſeſſion of *St. James's* and *Whitehall*.

He ſends to deſire the King to remove to *Ham*, a houſe belonging to the Ducheſs of *Lauderdale*.

The King obtains the permiſſion to retire to *Rocheſter*, and accordingly goes in the night to *Graveſend*.

18. The Prince of *Orange* arrives at St. *James's*; and, two days after, a Committee of the Common-Council of *London* congratulate him, upon that occaſion.

The *London* mob rifles the houſes of the Papiſts, and the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador's, *&c.*

21. The Prince of *Orange* aſſembles the Lords Spiritual and Temporal in *London*, to conſider of the beſt methods for calling a free Parliament.

Theſe Lords return him thanks for his coming over.

All the Biſhops (except that of *London*) refuſe to ſign the Aſſociation.

23. King *James* II. embarks at *Dover*, and goes over into *France*.

He leaves a paper behind him, upon a table at *Rocheſter*.

INTERREGNUM.

1688. *Dec.* 25. THE Lords take upon themſelves the Adminiſtration of the Government.

They deſire the Prince of *Orange* to take upon him the adminiſtration of public affairs both civil and military, and the diſpoſal of the public revenue, and to take care of *Ire-*

land, till the meeting of the Convention. They desire him, moreover, to call a Convention. *Ann. C.*

The Papists are ordered to depart ten miles from *London*.

William III, Prince of *Orange*, summons the Members that had served in any of the Parliaments of King *Charles* II, with the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and fifty of the Common-Council of *London*, and asks their advice. 26.

They concur with the Lords, in desiring him to take upon him the administration of affairs, and to call a Convention for the 22d of *January*.

The Prince sends orders to Mr. *Barillon* the *French* Ambassador to depart the Kingdom in 24 hours.

William Prince of *Orange* receives the Sacrament according to the form appointed by the Church of *England*. 30.

He publishes a declaration authorizing all Persons in office to act in their respective places, till the meeting of the Convention. 31.

His Highness pays a visit to *Catharine* Queen-Dowager, and orders her Chamberlain *Lewis Duras* Earl of *Feversham* to be set at liberty.

The Lord Chancellor of *Scotland*, *James* Earl of *Perth*, resigns the Great-Seal, and retires from *Edinburgh*. 1688-9. *January*.

The *Scottish* Bishops and Episcopal Clergy are forced to fly, and the Presbyterians get the upper-hand in *Scotland*.

The Prince of *Orange* assembles all the *Scotch* Nobility and Gentry that were in *London*, and asks their advice. 7.

They desire him to take upon him the administration of the Government of *Scotland*, and to call a general meeting of the *States* for the 14th of *March*. 9.

A declaration is published by him, against quartering soldiers on private Houses.

The Prince writes a letter to *Richard Talbot*, Earl of *Tyrconnel*, Lord-Lieutenant of *Ireland*, to summon him to submit to the present administration in *England*.

His Highness borrows 200,000 *l.* of the City of *London*, and discharges the arrears due to the *English* forces. 10.

After which, he makes a reform in the army, and fills it with Protestants, having turned out both Popish officers and soldiers.

William Sancroft, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and seven or eight Bishops, pay their compliments to the Prince, and subscribe the Association.

About ninety Dissenting Ministers wait also upon the Prince, who gives them a favourable answer.

The

Ann. Ch. The elections for a Convention are carried on with the utmoſt liberty.

22. The Convention meets; and the Prince writes a letter to them. They appoint a day to take into conſideration the ſtate of the Nation.

Both Houſes acknowledge in an addreſs, That the preſervation of the Kingdom was, next under God, owing to his Highneſs; they approve of his adminiſtration, and deſire him to continue it.

They appoint a day of Thankſgiving, on *January* 13, in *London* and *Weſtminſter*, and ten miles round, and *February* 14, throughout the whole Kingdom; and the Lords order, that there ſhould be a particular Prayer drawn up for the Prince of *Orange*.

King *James* ſends letters to the Privy-Council, and to the Convention, who take no notice of them.

28. After having conſidered the ſtate of the Nation, they reſolve, That King *James* II. having endeavoured to ſubvert the conſtitution of this Kingdom, by breaking the original contract between King and People, and by the advice of Jeſuits and other wicked perſons, having violated the fundamental laws, and having withdrawn himſelf out of this Kingdom, hath abdicated the Government, and that the Throne is thereby vacant.

The next day, they vote, That it hath been found by experience, to be inconſiſtent with this Proteſtant Kingdom, to be governed by a Popiſh Prince.

29. The Houſe of Lords takes into conſideration the vote of the Houſe of Commons; and ſome of them propoſe a Regency, but that is rejected.

30. The Lords examine this queſtion, Whether or no there is an original contract between King and People? It is carried in the affirmative.

31. They reject the word Abdicated, and agree upon that of Deſerted.

Next, they examine the word Vacant, and put this queſtion, Whether, King *James* having broken the original contract between him and his people, and deſerted the Government, the Throne was thereby vacant? Which is carried in the negative. But forty Lords proteſt againſt it.

Feb. 1. The Propoſal of placing the Prince and Princeſs of *Orange* upon the Throne is rejected by the Lords.

The Prince ſtops a petition from being preſented to the Lords, in which they were deſired to ſettle the Prince of *Orange* and his Royal Conſort the Princeſs, in the Throne.

The

The Lords communicate to the Commons two amendments they had made to their vote. *Ann. C.* 2.

The Commons disagree to those amendments; whereupon, a conference passes between the two Houses about that matter; but the Commons still persist in disagreeing with those amendments. 4.

A second free conference is held between them, which ends in the Lords concurring with the Commons vote, That King *James* had abdicated the Government, and that the Throne was thereby vacant. 7.

Debates pass between the two Houses about the manner of filling the vacant Throne.

Thomas Osborne, Earl of *Danby*, sends a messenger to the Princess of *Orange*, to propose to her, Whether she would accept of the Crown alone? But she rejects that offer.

Both houses vote severally, that the Prince and Princess of *Orange* should be King and Queen of *England*, but that the sole and full regal power should be in the Prince only, in the name of both.

Two oaths are appointed instead of those of Allegiance and Supremacy.

Mary Princess of *Orange* arrives at *London*. 12.

Both Houses of the Convention makes a solemn offer of the Crown to the Prince and Princess, after the reading of a declaration. 13.

William III. Prince of *Orange* accepts the Crown for himself, and for his Consort the Princess *Mary*.

They are proclaimed King and Queen, by the name of *William* and *Mary*.

King *James* II. had several children, by his first wife, *Anne*, eldest daughter of *Edward Hyde*, Earl of *Clarendon*; namely, four sons, and four daughters: But none of them arrived to any maturity, except *Mary* and *Anne*, afterwards Queens of *England*. By his second wife, *Maria of Este*, daughter of *Alphonso* of *Este*, Duke of *Modena*, he had two sons, and four daughters.

His natural issue was as follows:

1. By Mrs. *Arabella Churchill*, sister of *John* Duke of *Marlborough*, afterwards married to Colonel *Godfrey*, he had (1.) *James Fitz-James*, Grandee of *Spain*, Mareschal of *France*, Knight of the *Golden Fleece*, commonly called Duke of *Berwick*: Outlawed in 1695. (2.) *Henry Fitz-James*, commonly called the *Grand-Prior*, born 1673: Outlawed

Outlawed in 1695. Lieutenant-General and Admiral of the *French* Gallies. He died in *France*, *December* 7, 1702. (3.) *Henrietta*, born 1670, who married *Henry* Lord *Waldgrave*, 1683. Father of *James* the preſent Lord *Waldgrave*, born in 1684.

2. By Mrs. *Catharine Sedley*, daughter of Sir *Charles Sedley*, Baronet, created Baroneſs of *Darlington*, and Counteſs of *Dorcheſter*, afterwards married to Sir *David Collier*, the late Earl of *Portmore*, he had *Catharine Darnly*, late Ducheſs of *Buckingham*, born 1681, She married (1.) *James Anneſly*, Earl of *Angleſey*, in *October* 1699. By whom ſhe had *Catharine Anneſley*, *January* 7, 1701, who married *William Phips*, Eſq; ſon of Sir *Conſtantine Phips*. (2.) *John Sheffield*, Duke of *Buckinghamſhire* and *Normanby*, *March* 1, 1705. By whom ſhe had *Edmund*, the late Duke of *Buckinghamſhire*, born *January* 11, 1716.

The Character *of King* JAMES II.

Burnet. *James* II. was a Prince that ſeemed made for greater things, than will be found in the courſe of his life, more particularly of his Reign: He was eſteemed in the former parts of his life, a man of great courage, as he was quite through it a man of great application to buſineſs: He had no vivacity of thought, invention, or expreſſion: But he had a good judgment, where his religion and his education gave him not a biaſs, which it did very often: He was bred with ſtrange notions of the obedience due to Princes, and came to take up as ſtrange ones, of the ſubmiſſion due to Prieſts: He was naturally a man of truth, fidelity, and juſtice: But his Religion was ſo infuſed in him, and he was ſo managed in it by his Prieſts, that the principles, which nature had laid in him, had little power over him, when the concerns of his Church ſtood in the way: He was a gentle maſter, and was very eaſy to all who came near him: Yet he was not ſo apt to pardon, as one ought to be, that is the Vicegerent of that God, who is ſlow to anger, and ready to forgive: He had no perſonal vices but of one ſort: He was ſtill wandering from one amour to another, yet he had a real ſenſe of ſin, and was aſhamed of it: But Prieſts know how to engage Princes more intirely into their intereſts, by making them compound for their ſins, by a great zeal for Holy Church, as they call it. In a word, if it had not been for his Popery, he would have been, if not a great, yet a good Prince. *Burnet* ſays, that, by what he once

The Monument *of* K. JAMES II. *Erected in ye* Chappel *of the* Scotch College *at Paris in the Year* 1703.

once knew of him, and by what he saw him afterwards carried to, he grew more confirmed in the very bad opinion, which he was always apt to have, of the intrigues of the Popish Clergy, and of the Confessors of Kings. King *James* was undone by them, and was their Martyr, so that they ought to bear the chief load of all the errors of his inglorious reign, and of its fatal catastrophe. As he was dying, he said nothing concerning the legitimacy of his son, on which some made severe remarks; while others thought, that, having spoke so often of it before, he might not reflect on the fitness of saying any thing concerning it in his last extremity. He recommended to him firmness in his Religion, and justice in his Government, if ever he should come to reign. He said, that, by his practice, he recommended Christian forgiveness to him, for he heartily forgave both the Prince of *Orange*, and the Emperor. The naming of the Emperor, it was believed, had been suggested to him by the *French*, in order to render the Emperor odious to all those of his Religion.

A Description of the Monument of King JAMES II.

This Monument was erected in the chapel of the Scotch College at Paris, in the year 1703. The principal parts of it are an obelisk, in the front of which is an urn crowned with an Imperial Crown, and supported by two Angels. Under it upon the Base are the Royal Arms of England with trophies on each side. Near the top is that Prince's head in Basso Relievo within a circular verge, adorned with palms, and crowned with an Imperial Crown. The materials are white and veined marble.

An account of the MONEY *coined in this Reign.*

By an Indenture in the first of *James* II, a pound weight of Gold, twenty-two carats fine, and two carats allay, was coined into 44 *l.* 10 *s.* by tale, namely, into Ten Shillings, Twenty Shillings, Forty Shillings, and Five Pounds, pieces; and a pound weight of Siver of the old Standard into 62 Shillings by tale, namely, into Crowns, Half-Crowns, Shillings, Six-pences, Groats, Two-pences, and Pence; which standard both for Gold and Silver hath continued ever since.

The Gold Coins have on one ſide the King's Head laureat, IACOBVS II. DEI. GRATIA. Reverſe MAG. BR. FRA. ET. HIB. REX. the arms ſingle in ſeparate ſhields crowned, with the ſcepters, but nothing in the center. Some have an elephant under the King's head, being of *African* Gold. (*Fig.*) The Five-pound-piece is like the Guinea, but has DECVS, &c. upon the rim. ——— Of the Silver Monies, the Crown has the King's head laureat; the arms on the reverſe in four ſeparate ſhields crowned; the

inſcription as on the Gold Coins; and upon the rim DECVS. ET. TVTAMEN, *&c.* the Half-Crown is the ſame, and the Shilling and Six-pence the like, except the inſcription upon the rim. The leſſer pieces, from the Groat to the Penny, have as many initial letters of his name crowned, as they contain Pence, but the ſame inſcription as the Crown-piece. The Tin-farthing and Half-penny have the King's Head, IACOBUS. SECVNDVS. Reverſe *Britannia*, BRITANNIA, upon the rim 1685. NVMMORVM FAMVLVS.

The NOBILITY, created by King JAMES II, was as follows:

Ann. C.

1685. *Henry Jermyn*, Baron of *Dover*.

13 *May.*

14. *John Churchill* (Baron of *Aymouth* in *Scotland*) Baron *Churchill* of *Sandridge*.

15. *George Jeffreys*, Baron of *Wem*.

1685-6. *Catharine Sidley*, Baroneſs of *Darlington*, and Counteſs

20 *Jan.* of *Dorcheſter*.

James Waldegrave, Baron of *Cheuton*.

1686-7. *James Fitz-James*, Baron *Boſworth*, Earl of *Tinmouth*,

19 *Mar.* and Duke of *Berwick*.

William

Ann. 6.

William Herbert, Earl of *Powis*, —— Viſcount *Montgomery*, and Marquiſs of *Powis*. 24.

Francis Ratcliffe, Baron of *Tindale*, Viſcount *Ratcliffe* and *Langley*, and Earl of *Derwentwater*. 1687-8. 7 *Mar.*

Mary Stafford (widow of *William Howard*, Baron and Viſcount *Stafford*) Baroneſs and Counteſs of *Stafford*. 5 *Octob.*

Henry-Stafford Howard, her ſon, Earl of *Stafford*.

Edward Griffin, Baron *Griffin*, of *Braybrook*. 30 *Nov.*

Knights of the Garter elected in the Reign of King JAMES II.

Henry Howard, Duke of *Norfolk*.
Henry Mordaunt, Earl of *Peterborough*.
Laureuce Hyde, Earl of *Rocheſter*.
Louis de Duras, Earl of *Feverſham*.
Robert Spencer, Earl of *Sunderland*.

Baronets created by King JAMES II.

889 Sir John Sudbury of Eldon in Durham, Kt. June 25, 1685. ex.

890 Paul Jenkinſon of Walton in Derbyſhire, Eſq; December 17. ex.

891 George Davies, Conſul and Agent at Naples, January 11.. ex.

892 Nicholas Sherborne of Stonyhurſt in Lancaſhire, Eſq; February 4.

893 Robert Guldeford of Hempſted-Place in Kent, Eſq; — 4.

894 Charles Bloyo of Grundſburgh in Suffolk, Eſq; April 15, 1686.

895 Sir William Compton of Harpley in Glouceſterſhire, Kt. May 6.

896 Sir Robert Charleton of Ludford in Herefordſhire, Kt. — 12.

897 Cornelius Speelman of the United Provinces, September 9. ex.

898 Sir William Humble of Kenſington, Kt. March 17. ex.

899 John Duck of Haſwell on the Hill in Durham, Eſq; --- 19. ex.

900 James-Chapman Fuller of the Inner-Temple, Eſq; Auguſt 1, 1687. ex.

901 William Pinſent of Erthfort in Wiltſhire, Eſq; September 13.

902 William Stych of Newbury in Eſſex, Eſq; October 8. ex.
903 Wilfred Lawſon of Iſell in Cumberland, Eſq; Mar. 31, 1688.
904 Sir William Williams of Gray's-Inn, Kt. July 6.
905 Sir Henry Aſhurſt of Waterſtoke in Oxfordſhire, Kt. — 21.
906 Sir Thomas Fitch of Eltham in Kent, Kt. Sept. 7.
907 John Morden of Blackheath, Eſq; — 20, ex.
908 John Narborough of Knolton in Kent, Eſq; November 5. ex.

A LIST

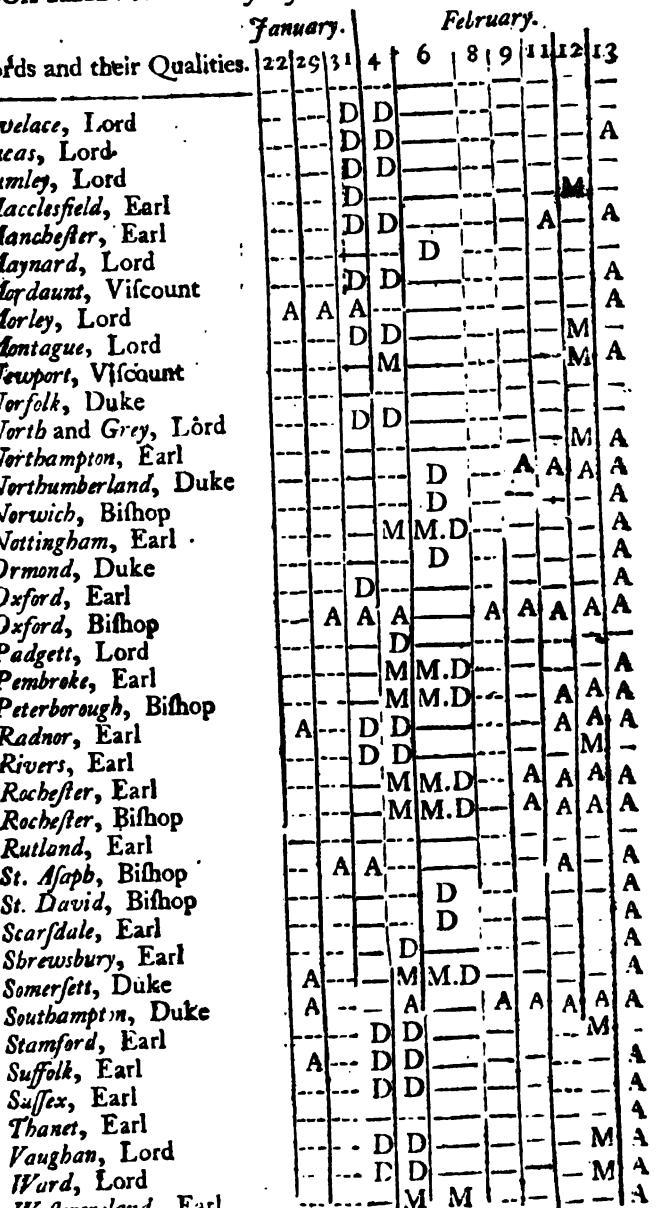
A LIST of the Peers daily present in the Convention, from *January* 22, to *February* 13, 1688-9.

N. B. This Mark—denotes Present and Assents, D. Dissents, M. Managers, A. Absent.

Lords and their Qualities.	*January.* 22	29	31	4	*February.* 6	8	9	11	12	13
Abington, Earl	—	—	—	—	D	A	—	—	—	—
Aylesbury, Earl	—	—	—	M	M. D	—	—	—	—	A
Anglesey, Earl	A	A	A	—	A	A	A	A	A	A
Arundel, of *Tr.* Lord	—	—	A	—	D	—	A	A	A	A
Astley, Lord	—	A	A	A	—	—	A	—	—	A
Bath, Earl	A	A	A	—	—	—	—	—	—	A
Bath, and *Wells*, Bishop	—	—	—	—	D	—	—	—	—	A
Beaufort, Duke	—	—	A	A	D	A	A	A	A	A
Bedford, Earl	—	—	D	D	—	—	—	—	—	A
Berkley, Earl	—	—	D	D	D	—	A	—	—	A
Berkley, of *Str.* Lord	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	A
Bridgewater, Earl	—	—	D	D	—	—	—	—	M	—
Bristol, Earl	—	—	—	D	—	—	A	—	—	—
Bristol, Bishop	—	—	—	—	D	—	—	—	—	—
Brook, Lord	A	—	—	—	D	—	A	—	—	—
Bullingbrook, Earl	A	—	D	D	—	—	A	—	—	A
Burlington, Earl	—	—	—	—	A	A	A	—	—	A
Byron, Lord	A	—	D	D	—	—	—	—	—	—
Carlisle, Earl	A	—	A	—	—	A	A	A	—	A
Carnarvon, Earl	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—
Carteret, Lord	—	—	D	D	—	—	—	A	A	A
Chamberlain (L. G.) Earl	—	—	—	—	—	A	—	—	—	A
Chandois, Lord	—	—	—	—	D	—	A	—	—	A
Chesterfield, Earl	—	—	—	M	M	—	—	—	—	A
Chichester, Bishop	—	—	—	—	D	—	A	A	—	A
Churchill, Lord	—	A	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	A
Clare, Earl	A	—	—	D	—	—	A	—	—	A
Clarendon, Earl	—	—	—	M	M. D	—	—	—	A	A

Colepeper,

Lords and their Qualities.	January. 22	29	31	February. 4	6	8	9	11	12	13
Colpeper, Lord	A	A	D	D						
Cornwallis, Lord			D	D						A
Coventry, Lord	A							A		A
Craven, Earl					D					
Crew, Lord			A							A
Danby, Earl										
Dartmouth, Lord					D		A			A
De-la-mere, Lord			D	D					M	A
De-la-warr, Lord					D					A
Derby, Earl			D	D						A
Devon, Earl			D	D						
Derſet, Earl				D						A
Durham, Biſhop	A	A	A	A					A	
Ely, Biſhop				M	M.D					A
Eure, Lord			D	D						A
Exeter, Earl				M	D		A		A	A
Franconberg, Viſcount										A
Ferrers, Lord			M	M		A	A	A	A	A
Feverſham, Earl					D		A	A	A	
Gloceſter, Biſhop					D					A
Godolphin, Lord										
Graſton, Duke	A				D			A		A
Grey, de Ru. Lord			D	D						
Grey, de W. Lord				D						A
Griffin, Lord					D					A
Halliſax, Marquiſs			D	D						
Hatton, Viſcount		A			A		A			A
Herbert, of *Ch.* Lord			D	D						
Howard, of *Eſcr.* Lord	A									A
Huntington, Earl			A							
Jermin, Lord			A		D		A			A
Kent, Earl										
Kingſton, Earl			D	D					M	
Landaff, Biſhop					D					A
Lee, Lord	A				D					A
Luxington, Lord	A	A	A							A
Lincoln, Earl	A	A	A	A		A	A	A	A	A
Lincoln, Biſhop				M	D					A
Litchfield, Earl					D		A		A	A
London, Biſhop									M	A


January.
February.
Lords and their Qualities.
22 29 31 4 6 8 9 11 12 13
Lovelace, Lord
Lucas, Lord
Lumley, Lord
Macclesfield, Earl
Manchester, Earl
Maynard, Lord
Mordaunt, Viscount
Morley, Lord
Montague, Lord
Newport, Viscount
Norfolk, Duke
North and Grey, Lord
Northampton, Earl
Northumberland, Duke
Norwich, Bishop
Nottingham, Earl
Ormond, Duke
Oxford, Earl
Oxford, Bishop
Padgett, Lord
Pembroke, Earl
Peterborough, Bishop
Radnor, Earl
Rivers, Earl
Rochester, Earl
Rochester, Bishop
Rutland, Earl
St. Asaph, Bishop
St. David, Bishop
Scarsdale, Earl
Shrewsbury, Earl
Somerset, Duke
Southampton, Duke
Stamford, Earl
Suffolk, Earl
Sussex, Earl
Thanet, Earl
Vaughan, Lord
Ward, Lord
Westmoreland, Earl

Weymouth,

Lords and their Qualities.	January. 22	29	31	February. 4	6	8	9	11	12	13
Weymouth, Viſcount					A					
Wharton, Lord										
Winchelſea, Earl			D	D						A
Winchester, Marquiſs			D	D						A
Winchester, Biſhop				M	M.D					
Yarmouth, Earl							A	A	A	A
York, Arch-Biſhop				M	M.D					A

N. B. All theſe Diſſents mentioned in this table were concerning the Vacancy of the Throne. For no Lords entered their diſſents to the vote on *February* 6, for declaring the Prince and Princeſs King and Queen.

End of VOL. II.

NOV 6 19